



GENIUS DOCTOR: BLACK BELLY MISS

BOOK 06

North Night

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Genius Doctor: Black Belly Miss

(絕世神醫：腹黑大小姐)

by

North Night

(夜北)

Synopsis

She was a peerless genius in the 24th Century – all she needed was a silver needle and she could practically bring anyone back from the dead.

After an explosion, she crossed over into a strange world; everyone calls her “Miss.” The previous “Miss” before had no contractual spirit, was weak and incompetent, and even the fiancé comes over with a new love and bullies her?

Now that she has taken over, who dares to act so presumptuously around her? With needles in hand, the world is for her to own! Wherever she goes, miracles follow! However, she saved a pest. What was she thinking when she saved that man. His stunning demeanor and impeccable face is a huge contrast to his cruel actions. He tries all ways to win her over.

This is an interesting cross over story with some magic, romance and a black bellied miss as the main character.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Misty Cloud Translations @ [Misty Cloud Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001: “Who Swallows Who (3)”

What everyone found hard to believe was that the Guardian Grade Spirit Beast was actually transformed by that little one before their eyes now!

At that moment, everyone finally understood. That weak and frail looking Spirit Beast that seemed like it would not even be able to even withstand a single hit was in reality not a low grade Spirit Beast that they had all thought it to be, but was actually a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast that had hidden its powers and its true grade! !

Who would have thought, that the Guardian Grade Spirit Beast that was only heard of in legends, would appear before everyone’s eyes in such a form?

They all finally understood why all the numerous low grade Spirit Beasts had upon hearing just one single bleat from Lord Meh Meh, immediately been reduced to terrified and quivering heaps in fear. Before the magnificent power of a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, what could those low grade Spirit Beasts do? Even the strongest among them, the Six Armed Black Ape, was nothing at all in the face of such grandeur!

Standing at the pinnacle of the food chain, the Guardian Grade Spirit Beast was able to take down one and all below the Guardian Grade in a second!

And that would include even the Devious Wyvern that had a foot just wedged into the Guardian Grade!

Lin Feng was still stunned as he looked at Lord Meh Meh walking out from among the rubble, its tiny hooves tapping upon the stones. His eyes were still filled with pure and utter disbelief. How could he have ever thought, that Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast would in reality be a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast?

In the entire Thousand Beast City, no one had ever been able to

tame a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast without any external influences, and even people with Beast Tamer Bracelets did not possess such an ability to do that. Throughout the entire Thousand Beast City, the one lone item that could make a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast submit, would only be the divine item, the Spirit Taming Bone Flute!

As the Spirit Beast that dominated over all others, the might and intelligence of a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast made them unwilling to submit themselves to anyone. A very very long time ago, in the midst of a chaotic battle, a Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City had once commandeered a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, but that had been with the help of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute and using the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to forcibly distort the consciousness of a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast was by itself a highly dangerous act as the slightest misstep or carelessness would allow the Spirit Beast to turn back upon the user!

Lin Feng had never ever heard of anyone that was able to make a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast submit to him, with just one's own abilities.....

This time, Lin Feng had truly suffered a double whammy this time round. He had not only been unable to see Jun Xie cry and sob pitifully, he had even gotten his father's most prized Devious Wyvern killed, and Lin Feng was suddenly caught up in a panicked fluster.

He stared in horror at Lord Meh Meh, watching Lord Meh Meh's every single step as it walked towards Jun Xie. Every single step it took, felt like those hooves had stepped through his heart, piercing deep into it!

"Cheat! You've cheated!" In his mind numbing terror, Lin Feng suddenly stood up, his finger pointed right at Jun Xie as he shouted loudly: "The Spirit Beast Arena only allows low grade Spirit Beast to contest! You scoundrel! You actually got your Guardian Grade Spirit Beast to pose as a low grade Spirit Beast to

come her to contest! That is a flagrant breach of the rules in the Spirit Beast Arena! You have to abide by the rules! You need to hand over your Spirit Beast!”

Lin Feng’s face was completely pale as he shouted loudly with his weak pretense of false bravado.

Lin Feng’s desperate shouts caused the entire silent crowd in the arena to feel rather strange.

Jun Wu Xie raised up her head slightly, looking Lin Feng who had in his excitement, dropped his heavy cloak, to reveal his identity before everyone.

[It had come to this afterall.]

“Guards! He has broken the rules! That is cheating! Take his Spirit Beast away from him!” Lin Feng was hopping mad, the loss of the Devious Wyvern was not something he was able to shoulder and when his father found out, even if his life was to be spared he would still be skinned alive!

Moreover, the Devious Wyvern was meant for that person and if that person got to know that he had gotten the Devious Wyvern killed in a fit of anger.....

Lin Feng did not dare to continue on with that thought!

Chapter 1002: “Who Swallows Who (4)”

The Devious Wyvern was no more and Lin Feng was suddenly panicking, trying to think of a way out for him in that situation. And in his anxiety, he actually even considered trying to snatch Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast away from him!

Although the Devious Wyvern was highly precious, but a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast would be enough to make up for it!

Lin Feng was howling incessantly, but no one in the Spirit Beast Arena dared to agree with Lin Feng at that moment. Although they recognized Lin Feng for who he was, but they still had not completely lost their mind as they were fully aware of the fact that Jun Xie still had a full fledged Guardian Grade Spirit Beast in his hands!

When the Spirit Beast had merely made an appearance in its true form earlier, it had already crushed the lives out of a group of people and they were not prepared to have that happen to them just yet.

Jun Wu Xie’s looked on coldly as Lin Feng howled loudly. Even when Lin Feng had screamed himself hoarse, not a single person in the Spirit Beast Arena dared to reply to his pitiful cries.

“You done with your screaming?” Jun Wu Xie asked expressionlessly.

Lin Feng’s already pale facial complexion had in turn flushed to a red shade as he stared at Jun Xie, panting heavily and he seeming to be wishing that he could literally stare two holes through the youth’s body.

“To think that the Young Master of the Icy Frost Clan would be so childish that you need an outsider like me to tell you the rules of the Spirit Beast Arena?” Jun Wu Xie said in a cold tone.

Lin Feng was shocked, as he turned his fearful gaze to look all

around him. All the people whom his gaze fell upon, lowered their heads quickly, not daring to look him in the eye.

The rules of the Spirit Beast Arena, had always applied towards the human owners more than the Spirit Beasts. As long as the participating contestant did not possess a Beast Tamer Bracelet, it did not matter what grade the Spirit Beast was, and the people of the Spirit Beast Arena would not interfere in that aspect. Even when Jun Xie's Spirit Beast was a full fledged Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, he would not have broken any rules in the Spirit Beast Arena.

“If you are to say that I have broken the rules, then when you secretly brought the Devious Wyvern in here, what would that then count as? Do you really need me to remind you of the Devious Wyvern's Spirit Beast grade?” Jun Wu Xie sneered, looking scornfully at Lin Feng. She really had absolutely no interest in tangling with such a spoiled brat but as he had offered his face up to her asking to be slapped, how could she rudely reject his most “kind offer”?

Lin Feng was driven to speechlessness by Jun Xie's words as he fell back in a stagger, taking a couple of steps back. He really would not have thought that Jun Xie would know about the Devious Wyvern.

“Instead of trying to argue with me about it here, the Young Master of the Icy Frost Clan should instead be thinking how you are going to answer to your father about this.” Jun Wu Xie bent down to pick Lord Meh Meh up and carry it in her arms. The fact that Lord Meh Meh would swallow the Devious Wyvern had been beyond her expectations but anyway, as the deed had already been done, even if Lord Meh Meh spat it back out, the Devious Wyvern would not come back to life.

Moreover.....

She had no intentions of returning the carcass of the Devious

Wyvern back to Lin Feng.

“You..... You lost.... You still lost!” Lin Feng could not find any other plausible retort but was unwilling to let Jun Xie have the last word before he left, or wouldn’t that mean that he would have nothing left? And that he had lost everything he had staked everything on in the process?

Jun Wu Xie lifted her eyes and looked at Lin Feng.

“Your Spirit Beast stepped out of the battle arena platform! Its foot had stepped out of bounds, which meant that it lost! The Devious Wyvern had won!” Lin Feng screamed maniacally, grasping desperately as he teetered at the edge of his own sanity.

“Oh? That’s alright. I can mount a new challenge tomorrow.” Jun Wu Xie shot back easily.

It would just be a matter of another two days. She could afford to wait.

Anyway, she had no intentions of leaving the Thousand Beast City for awhile.

Jun Wu Xie’s composed calm had instead clearly shown Lin Feng’s panic to everyone there with the stark contrast between the two of them.

No matter how what kind of an unreasonable tantrum Lin Feng was throwing or how hard he pestered in desperation, Jun Xie was completely unaffected from beginning to end.

That unconcerned reaction, was just like a indirect slap, that brushed past Lin Feng’s face. Although it did not hurt, but the humiliation was completely real!

That’s right, with a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast in hand, who would be worried about having to start over in the Spirit Beast Arena?

The Spirit Beast she held in her hand, was proof enough that she

would not fail!

Chapter 1003: “The Devious Wyvern’s Spirit Stone (1)”

Jun Wu Xie brought Lord Meh Meh with her in her arms, as she left the Spirit Beast Arena under the scrutiny of the multitude of gazes fixed upon her from the entire crowd.

The people in the Spirit Beast Arena still had not recovered even after Jun Wu Xie left the place. Everything that they saw today, had completely smashed the way they had viewed the world and it was through the appearance of a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast that everything they believed in was completely changed, in this world they thought they knew!

It was under the same Heavens, that a person could possibly exist, one who knew more about Spirit Beast Taming more than the very people of the Thousand Beast City?

Without needing any external influence, and the person was able to make a Spirit Beast act according to his orders. Just how terrifyingly was that?

Lin Feng sat upon the ground, looking highly disconcerted, as fear and terror gripped his heart.

Jun Wu Xie had just walked out from the Spirit Beast Arena for a little while when she saw Qing Yu come running up in a hurry.

When Qing Yu spotted Jun Xie, he immediately went up to the youth.

“Didn’t we agree on it already? That you won’t be coming today? Are..... are you alright?” Qing Yu scrutinised Jun Xie from head to toe. When he saw that there were no signs of any injury on Jun Xie and that Lord Meh Meh carried in his arms only had some traces of blood smudged upon its hind hoof but otherwise looked completely fine, Qing Yu was finally able to heave a big sigh of relief.

“As long as you’re alright, as long as you’re alright. Lord Meh Meh seems to be fine as well, and that little bit of injury on its hoof will heal up quickly in a couple of days.” Qing Yu had thought that the blood on Lord Meh Meh’s hoof was its own, not knowing that the blood had been from the spectators that it had accidentally crushed to death when its foot had landed on them.

Jun Wu Xie did not bother to explain it and merely took out a handkerchief to patiently wipe off the bloodstain from Lord Meh Meh’s hoof.

After having swallowed the Devious Wyvern, Lord Meh Meh was feeling so exceptionally satisfied that it had not even bugged Jun Wu Xie for lotus leaves. It merely snuggled up happily within Jun Wu Xie’s arms with its eyes closed like two crescents of bliss, enjoying its Feedstress’ loving embrace.

“Let’s go back first.” Qing Yu saw that Jun Xie wasn’t willing to speak much and was afraid that the youth was sad.

“Don’t dwell on it too much. The Devious Wyvern is not an ordinary Spirit Beast afterall and it is normal that you would lose.” Qing Yu said, kindly trying his best to comfort Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie instead told him: “I will be returning there tomorrow.”

“Huh?” Qing Yu was stunned. Why was this boy so downright stubborn?

The befuddled Qing Yu brought Jun Xie back to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall and Jun Xie immediately brought Lord Meh Meh back to her room, drawing water to help Lord Meh Meh clean off the blood from its hoof.

But she had just put Lord Meh Meh upon the bed while she went to pour out some hot water when the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit that had been left behind to be put under the little black cat’s supervision quickly leapt up onto the bed. It stared at the highly

contented and fully satisfied looking Lord Meh Meh lying upon the bed comfortably and the scheming rabbit was immediately filled with resentment.

It turned to peek at Jun Wu Xie and saw that she had turned away to pour out water. Its big eyes immediately spun around and it suddenly leapt up high in the air, landing right onto the highly rounded tummy of Lord Meh Meh's!

“Meh!!!!”

A shrill and ear piercing wail rang out.

The brows on Jun Wu Xie's face immediately furrowed together tightly when she heard that sound. She turned herself around and saw that Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit caught up in another scuffle with each other. And when they noticed Jun Wu Xie staring hard at them, they immediately broke it off and quickly parted. Lord Meh Meh had then stuck out one of its hooves and tried to surreptitiously kick an unidentified item off the bed, which fell with a clatter to the floor.

“The scheming rabbit had caused the dumb sheep to vomit that out.” Having witnessed the entire process from the side, the little black cat had snitched on the two without feeling the slightest bit of guilt.

When Lord Meh Meh heard that, it immediately turned around and buried its head under the blanket, with its little rear end still exposed, the tiny tail trembling in fear, shaking in the air.

“.....” Jun Wu Xie could find no words at that moment.

Chapter 1004: “The Devious Wyvern’s Spirit Stone (2)”

Every time Drunk Lotus appeared, he would always be mercilessly chasing after the little black cat and every time Little Lotus showed up, he would then be harried and pursued by Lord Meh Meh, jumping all over the place. And now, things had gone up another notch. The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit and Lord Meh Meh always fought against each other, every single opportunity they got.....

Jun Wu Xie could feel a massive headache coming on. [Can’t those two dumb beasts give it a rest for once?]

The piece of “vomit” that Lord Meh Meh had “secretly” kicked off the bed with its hoof fell with a loud and clear clatter upon the floor, spinning in a small circle for a while before coming to a stop on the ground.

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed up when she saw that the piece of “vomit” was actually a spirit stone as big as a pigeon’s egg!

It was a jade green spirit stone and it was all covered with Lord Meh Meh’s saliva as it lay shining on the ground, smooth and lustrous, reflecting the sunlight coming in through the window.

Jun Wu Xie bent to pick up the wet and sticky spirit stone with a handkerchief wrapped over her fingers and brought it closer to have a good look at it.

Within that piece of jadeite green stone, not a single flaw could be seen.

“This is the Devious Wyvern’s spirit stone?” Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed as she looked at the stone. Since it came out from Lord Meh Meh’s mouth, it must have come from the Devious Wyvern that Lord Meh Meh had swallowed up. And as the spirit stone could not be digested, and under the impact from the Sacrificial

Blood Rabbit's high leap, this indigestible spirit stone had been vomited out through Lord Meh Meh's mouth!

The Devious Wyvern was considered to be the strongest among the high grade Spirit Beasts and moreover, this particular Devious Wyvern had already completed all three cycles of its molting, hence, it was basically already a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. But as its Guardian Grade Spirit Beast powers had not yet fully evolved, it had been defenceless against Lord Meh Meh's matured powers.

And the Devious Wyvern's spirit stone in her hand, was of a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast quality.

This was the first time that Jun Wu Xie was seeing a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast quality spirit stone. Although it wasn't really all that big in size, she could clearly feel the pure power emanating from the stone.

Jun Wu Xie's spirit ring had still not been reforged and if she was to reforge her spirit ring one day, embedding this Guardian Grade spirit stone onto it would definitely be the most lavish and elaborate thing she could equip it with!

With that thought in mind, Jun Wu Xie wiped the Devious Wyvern's spirit stone carefully before she placed the stone in her palm for her to inspect it meticulously.

However, she had just placed that spirit stone onto her own palm when the overpowering urge she had felt back at the Spirit Beast Arena suddenly struck her from within once again!

That overwhelming desire suddenly swelled exponentially within her mind!

[What was really happening here?]

Jun Wu Xie shook her head vehemently as she fought to suppress that strong desire within her. The feeling was extremely foreign to her and she had never experienced such loss of control over her own emotions.

The little black cat detected Jun Wu Xie's strange actions and it quickly leapt over to Jun Wu Xie's side, wanting to see what was wrong with Jun Wu Xie.

But at the same moment that the little black cat leapt over, in the hand that Jun Wu Xie was using to hold the spirit stone, a burst of golden light suddenly shone brilliantly!

The light was not glaring, and Jun Wu Xie could suddenly feel a strange power suppressing that indescribable strong urge of desire within her!

Little golden tendrils, looking as if they possessed their own consciousness, slowly began wrapping themselves over the spirit stone bit by bit, gradually nudging it to move towards the centre of Jun Wu Xie's palm!

The sudden strange and inexplicable stinging pain when a foreign object forcibly passes through your flesh caused Jun Wu Xie to immediately break out in cold sweat. She wanted to fling the spirit stone off her hand but the golden tendrils of light gripped the stone tenaciously, slowly and gradually pulling it under the flesh of her palm!

Chapter 1005: “The Devious Wyvern’s Spirit Stone (3)”

A precise slit was forcibly torn in Jun Wu Xie’s palm by the golden light tendrils and blood oozed out from the wound. The golden tendrils then dragged the spirit stone right inside Jun Wu Xie’s palm and it got stained red as it got wrapped up within the flesh.

“Damn! What is happening here! ?” The little black cat was highly flustered, as he saw the colour on Jun Wu Xie’s face getting worse by the second. It leapt up and wanted to tear the golden tendrils off Jun Wu Xie’s hand but it had just lightly touched those tendrils lightly when it saw Jun Wu Xie cringe up further in unbearable pain.

Seeing that, the little black cat did not dare to act rashly anymore, but just got itself dizzy with panic.

Just as Jun Wu Xie thought that the golden tendrils were about to drag the spirit stone completely in her palm, the light from the golden tendrils suddenly exploded in a brilliant burst!

A comfortable and cooling sensation quickly spread through Jun Wu Xie’s entire body!

The feeling of the foreign object under her flesh was gradually disappearing.....

The golden tendrils wrapped around the spirit stone dissipated as they disappeared around the wound, the golden light assimilating into Jun Wu Xie’s blood and bones.....

The wound was still a clearly visible gory bloody slit and blood still ran down along the lines on her palms before dripping onto the floor. Jun Wu Xie looked at her own hand with a puzzled expression on her face. Everything that had just happened was entirely too strange and stranger things were about to play out

before Jun Wu Xie's eyes.

The wound on her palm began to gradually close up at a very slow speed. The split in her palm was no longer bleeding and she could clearly feel the flesh regrowing and healing, the amazing feeling spreading over her whole hand.

The speed of the healing was not really very fast, but it was however, still at a speed that was faster than anyone could heal.

“What is really going on here?” As intelligent as Jun Wu Xie was, she still had no idea what was going on with her own body. What were those golden tendrils? Why had they suddenly appeared in her palm and why did it want to drag the Devious Wyvern's spirit stone into her body?

Even with all the numerous inconceivable things that she had experienced before, Jun Wu Xie still had no explanation for the things that were happening here.

The little black cat saw that Jun Wu Xie was standing there in a daze and it immediately jumped up onto Jun Wu Xie's shoulder, to carefully study Jun Wu Xie's wound.

“What happened just now?” The little black cat asked, its tone rather anxious.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head and was going to analyse the entire situation carefully. Just as she was preparing to sit down, a tyrannical and dominating force forcibly pulled her consciousness into an engulfing darkness!

It was quiet all around her. Jun Wu Xie stood within the silent darkness. It felt like her surroundings did not even exist, and even her own body felt a little ephemeral.

This place, was not too unfamiliar to Jun Wu Xie. The first time that she had devoured a ring spirit, she had come here to this dark spiritual dimension, and instead of saying that she was elsewhere, it might as well be said that she was within her own self.

“Kid!” A deep voice suddenly sounded from within the darkness.

Jun Wu Xie raised her head slightly, as she looked towards the source of the sound.

Within the darkness, two faintly glowing lights that glimmered faintly appeared, and the lights were at that moment coming straight towards her!

However, when those two lights came out through the darkness, it was discovered that it had not been any source of light, but was instead two sharp and deeply penetrating eyes!

A large head poked out from within the darkness, and a soft faint glow shone about half a metre around Jun Wu Xie., which at the same time illuminated that head nearby! The head looked serpentine and was covered entirely with black scales, and the rest of its body below its head was still shrouded within the darkness.

Chapter 1006: “The Soaring Serpent (1)”

As for the beast that appeared, it was no stranger to Jun Wu Xie as well. The first time she had come to this dark world, had been because of this same beast!

The Soaring Serpent!

The ring spirit that Jun Wu Yao had given to her!

Jun Wu Xie looked calmly at the enormous Soaring Serpent. She had thought that when she achieved her first breakthrough of her spirit powers, the Soaring Serpent had already disappeared, absorbed into her spirit, never thinking for a moment that the spirit beast's soul still had not completely scattered!

“You had not expected that we would meet again, did you?” The Soaring Serpent's sharp and penetrating eyes stared piercingly at Jun Wu Xie. Even in its spiritual form, the warm air the beast threw out through its nostrils could seemingly still be felt.

“You have not completely disappeared yet?” Jun Wu Xie asked, an eyebrow lifting up.

“Of course I have not disappeared. You are just a tiny little lass, you do not have what it takes to eliminate me, the Great Soaring Serpent! If not for that man helping you on the outside, you really think you would be able to absorb me? What a joke!” The Soaring Serpent snorted derisively in contempt.

“Does not matter whether I am able to eliminate you but you have been absorbed by me. Do you want to have a taste of that again? If what my senses are telling are not wrong, your spirit seems to have gotten quite a bit weaker than before?” Jun Wu Xie asked, her eyes narrowing up. The Soaring Serpent had been violent and arrogant before and had not even wanted to speak a single word to her then. But with the Soaring Serpent's appearance today, it had miraculously not attacked her in the first instance.

That had made Jun Wu Xie start to guess, that the Soaring Serpent no longer possessed the power it once had, or why would it suddenly come talk to its enemy so peacefully like this?

The Soaring Serpent's eyes glinted and its head suddenly rushed towards Jun Wu Xie. Just when it had gotten very close to Jun Wu Xie, it suddenly opened up its jaws and gave out a deafening roar from its mouth, the sharp pointed fangs directed right at Jun Wu Xie's head!

Jun Wu Xie stood there unmoving, planted in her spot, not a single trace of fear or terror showing upon her incomparably beautiful face.

The Soaring Serpent's eyes flashed, as it slowly shifted its body, to put some distance between Jun Wu Xie and itself.

"Kid, your powers might not be much to speak of, but your guts are something else. I, the Great Soaring Serpent having joined with you, isn't too ashamed of that fact." The Soaring Serpent said coldly.

"You mean absorbed." Jun Wu Xie reminded the beast.

Rage immediately flashed within the Soaring Serpent's eyes but it was quickly quelled down by the beast.

"That's right. Absorbed. But in that process, a little accident occurred and haven't you realized that the fact you can still see me now completely goes against all reason?" The Soaring Serpent asked through narrowed eyes as it melded itself back into the darkness. Only its pair of sharp and penetrating eyes glowed as two bright spots within the darkness, looking like the monsters hidden within nightmares, sending chills up people's spines.

When the Soaring Serpent did not get a reply from Jun Wu Xie, it went on to say by itself: "According to the absorption process, after my spirit is suppressed by you, it should be slowly absorbed into your own spirit bit by bit, until my spirit ceases to exist

completely. But now, my spirit still has not been reduced, but is instead continuously recovering. I really have that person who gave you that precious treasure to thank for this.”

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed up.

The fact that the Soaring Serpent had not disappeared had greatly surprised her. When the Soaring Serpent was given to her, Jun Wu Yao had said that after the Soaring Serpent’s spirit had been absorbed, its soul would be completely eliminated. And as her spirit powers continued to rise and grow, the Soaring Serpent wasn’t the only ring spirit she had absorbed. After being absorbed by her, all those other ring spirits had disappeared completely without leaving a single trace behind.

Chapter 1007: “The Soaring Serpent (2)”

The Soaring Serpent was the first ring spirit she had absorbed and reasonably, its soul should have completely disappeared by now.

“What are you really trying to say?” Jun Wu Xie had in her conversation with the Soaring Serpent, portrayed herself to be highly calm, but in her heart, she had been constantly trying to pick out any hidden clues from the Soaring Serpent’s words, to find out the reason for this unexpected occurrence.

The Soaring Serpent had said, the reason its spirit had not completely disappeared, had been because of the precious treasure Jun Wu Yao had given to her.....

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed, as in her mind, she was trying her hardest to determine just what that treasure mentioned was.

Suddenly!

She thought of one thing!

Back at the time when she had not hesitated to sacrifice her own spirit in the Cloudy Peaks to kill the man from the Twelve Palaces, she had then been dragged away from the place in the end. Although she had still barely managed to stay alive then, her spirit had suffered an unprecedented amount of damage. At that time, Jun Wu Yao had given her a little golden seed, and it had assimilated itself into her body.

Jun Wu Yao had said then.....

The seed would be able to repair her damaged spirit!

Jun Wu Xie finally understood. The golden seed must have been something that allowed damaged spirits to heal and as the Soaring Serpent was the first ring spirit she had absorbed, and it was also the most important one that laid the foundation, based on what she knew of Jun Wu Yao, the Soaring Serpent would definitely be a

powerful entity!

In the entire period after the Soaring Serpent had been suppressed and absorbed into her body, it must have been that its spirit was being slowly assimilated into her body just like all the other ring spirits. But as the Soaring Serpent was a highly powerful ring spirit, the period of time it could hold out for was on an entirely different level as the other ring spirits!

When Jun Wu Yao implanted that seed into her, it must have been that the Soaring Serpent still had not been fully absorbed, and when the golden seed was healing her, it had healed the Soaring Serpent's spirit at the same time!

That could not be good news for her.

Although the Soaring Serpent was trying very hard not to show it, Jun Wu Xie could still detect an intense hatred, nursed deep within the Soaring Serpent's gaze.

In regards to the fact that it had been imprisoned and devoured by her, the Soaring Serpent at that moment, must have wished for nothing more than to have her killed. It was holding back its rage and hatred at that moment because it simply had no other choice.

"Kid, although we had battled once before, but my spirit is now melded together with yours. No matter how much I hate you now, I cannot strike at you, as you are afterall, still the main resident spirit of this shell of a body. If I am to kill you now, your body will start to disintegrate and my spirit will still not be able to return to where I came from." The Soaring Serpent said through its tightly clenched jaws, looking straight at Jun Wu Xie. Just as Jun Wu Xie had guessed, the Soaring Serpent still nursed a strong hatred against her.

But having managed to still be alive after so much difficulty, the Soaring Serpent was not about to act rashly.

Jun Wu Xie stared at the Soaring Serpent. She did not doubt the

Soaring Serpent's words.

The concept of melding of souls was something she was already familiar with as the little black cat was also part of her conjoined soul. Regardless whether it was the little black cat or the Soaring Serpent, they were already assimilated into Jun Wu Xie's spirit and once Jun Wu Xie died, the other two souls would not be able to survive. And by the same reason, as long as she lived, the other two souls would continue to live together with her!

"Why have you made me come here?" Jun Wu Xie asked, staring at the Soaring Serpent. The Soaring Serpent hated her, but had no choice but to submit to her. It was a complicated situation and it was really balanced rather delicately.

"I need to discuss something with you." The Soaring Serpent replied.

"Oh?"

"My soul is still severely weakened and with just that seed alone, it is not enough for me to recover completely. I will need some other things. If you can help me find them, I am willing to subject myself to be used by you. You should know very well by now, after our souls are joined, I can no longer do anything that will harm you." The Soaring Serpent said softly.

Chapter 1008: “The Soaring Serpent (3)”

“The Devious Wyvern! ! I sensed the presence of a Devious Wyvern earlier! I need the power of the Devious Wyvern!” The Soaring Serpent’s eyes flared open widely.

Jun Wu Xie’s gaze suddenly turned icy cold. She finally understood why she had suddenly experienced such a powerful urge that had almost gone beyond her control at the time when she had seen the Devious Wyvern. That feeling not originated from herself, but had actually been from the Soaring Serpent’s consciousness!

The Soaring Serpent sought to have the Devious Wyvern and when it sensed the Devious Wyvern’s presence, the Soaring Serpent’s desperate yearning had overflowed and spilled out to affect Jun Wu Xie’s emotions.

This was one of the major drawbacks of the melding of spirits!

“The Devious Wyvern is already dead.” Jun Wu Xie did not like the fact that her emotions had been influenced by something other than her own will. The Soaring Serpent was immensely powerful but it was different from the little black cat. The Soaring Serpent harboured strong hatred against her and it still had not found a way to break out yet. But if an opportunity arose in the future, the Soaring Serpent would definitely not hesitate in the slightest to immediately go back on its word!

Jun Wu Xie found that she did not like the idea of having such an unstable element residing within her body.

“Dead? Impossible! I just sensed its presence moments ago!” The Soaring Serpent exclaimed.

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed. It seemed that the Soaring Serpent was only able to sense what was outside her body but not physically see what was happening. That made the situation a

whole lot easier to handle.

It did not matter what the Soaring Serpent wanted the Devious Wyvern for, as Jun Wu Xie would never allow it to have it its way. Although being able to gain the Soaring Serpent's help wasn't be too bad an option, Jun Wu Xie would definitely not allow a ring spirit that held such strong hatred for her to become stronger.

At least before she could be clear about the Soaring Serpent's current situation, she was not about to allow that to happen.

But the Soaring Serpent's words had also helped clear up many of the doubts she had.

The previously inexplicable urge was now explained, and the golden tendrils that had appeared within her palm was perceived to have been derived from the golden seed. The Soaring Serpent had an intensely strong yearning for the Devious Wyvern's spirit stone, and that yearning had not been within Jun Wu Xie's control. Just as that longing was about to reach its peak, the golden seed had suddenly manifested and assimilated the Devious Wyvern's spirit stone into her body.

Compared to the Soaring Serpent, Jun Wu Xie was more inclined to believe that the golden seed did not seek to harm her.

No matter the reason why the golden seed had wanted to do that, Jun Wu Xie was quite certain that it had been trying to help her.

"It was swallowed up by my Spirit Beast and is now dead." Jun Wu Xie said expressionlessly, trying to dupe the Soaring Serpent.

The Soaring Serpent looked like it wasn't willing to give up just like that and it attempted to seek for the Devious Wyvern's presence once more, but did not manage to detect any sign of it. It had precisely gotten itself in such a flustered state of panic earlier because the Devious Wyvern's presence had suddenly disappeared, which had made it forcibly drag Jun Wu Xie into this spiritual dimension even before its spirit had been completely restored,

which exposed the fact that its soul still existed within Jun Wu Xie's body to her.

“Why must it happen this way.....” The Soaring Serpent's voice was filled with endless regret.

Jun Wu Xie was however still as calm as ever.

The Soaring Serpent remained morosely silent and depressed for a long while before it suddenly came very close to Jun Wu Xie again, its eyes fully widened up as it stared at Jun Wu Xie in her face.

“You help me to find the Devious Wyvern and I will submit myself to your orders. If I become stronger, you will gain unsurpassable power as well. This is a deal that both you and I will stand to gain.”

“Alright.” Jun Wu Xie agreed readily.

The Soaring Serpent stared at Jun Wu Xie for a while before it pulled back and put some distance between them.

“I'll wait for it.” The eyes of the Soaring Serpent got further and further away from Jun Wu Xie and finally disappeared within the darkness.

Chapter 1009: “Missing Someone is a Form of Sickness (1)”

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes looked down, and a cold laugh grew in her heart.

Both she and the Soaring Serpent did not trust each other.

When Jun Wu Xie awoke, the little black cat was standing anxiously beside her. Even Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit had come over to crowd around her as well. The eyes of those three adorable little beasts were filled with worry and anxiety and when they saw Jun Wu Xie stirring, the eyes of the three little guys immediately filled up with joy.

“What happened to you? Why did you just faint all of a sudden?” The little black cat asked, as it pawed at Jun Wu Xie’s hand. Jun Wu Xie had suddenly fallen into a dead faint which had almost frightened it to its death.

“I’m alright.” Jun Wu Xie said, as she shook her head. She raised up her wounded hand and found that the severe wound had almost completely healed, which surprised her quite a bit, with the speed the healing was taking place.

She quickly recalled that Qing Yu had mentioned to her that quick healing was a special ability of the Devious Wyvern’s and when the golden seed infused with the Devious Wyvern’s spirit stone into her body, she seemed to have gained that exceptional ability which rather piqued Jun Wu Xie’s curiosity.

She had handled quite a huge number of spirit stones with her hands before, but the golden seed had not reacted the same way with any of those spirit stones. Why had it chosen to absorb the Devious Wyvern’s spirit stone which was the very one that the Soaring Serpent sought so desperately?

Jun Wu Xie stood up and took out the spirit stones she had in her

Cosmos Sack, testing them by placing all of them one by one upon her palm. But there was no reaction at all, nothing like what had occurred earlier. No matter which spirit stone she used, the golden seed did not react in the slightest.

“Devious Wyvern.” Jun Wu Xie muttered the name subconsciously. She was not familiar with that Spirit Beast and all she knew about it was only through the things Qing Yu had told her previously.

But judging from the current situation, it was obvious that there was definitely something more than meets the eye with the Devious Wyvern. The Soaring Serpent had not hesitated to expose its hidden existence in order to get it and even the mysterious golden seed had reacted to it.... Moreover, the person from the Twelve Palaces who dominated over the Thousand Beast City had asked to have the Devious Wyvern found. The unusual reactions of all these three entities seemed to be trying to tell Jun Wu Xie something.

But just what was it exactly, was still a mystery to Jun Wu Xie.

At that moment, thoughts of Jun Wu Yao came into Jun Wu Xie’s mind.

If he was here, he might be able to help her clear up all these doubts.

Somehow or rather, Jun Wu Xie seemed to feel, that there was nothing in this world that Jun Wu Yao did not know about. Any problem when placed before him, seemed like it would be so easily resolved.

Jun Wu Yao himself was shrouded in mystery. Just who was he exactly, and why had he been imprisoned in that cave?

Jun Wu Xie had not thought much about all this in the past as she had not cared. But she didn’t know why she was suddenly interested to know more about Jun Wu Yao, his past, and

everything else about him.....

Jun Wu Xie had never felt like this before. Whenever she thought of Jun Wu Yao, she seemed to lose that strict control over her emotions and actions, but even so, she would still think of him.

Although it made her feel somewhat helpless, but she did not really hate that feeling.

It's just that.....

She seemed to be missing him.

Jun Wu Xie looked up slightly, to stare at the horizon outside the window. [Not knowing..... where he is now, and what he is doing?]

[He was just like the wind that people knew well, always there but unseen, you couldn't catch it nor grasp it, always soundless when coming in, and leaving no trace when he left.]

“Big Brother Wu Yao.....” Jun Wu Xie murmured softly with a faint sigh. However, when she realized what she had just said, and that there was a strange feeling in her heart, she resolved not to think about it anymore, and went on to bandage up her wound.

Chapter 1010: “Missing Someone is a Form of Sickness (2)”

Ye Sha who was standing guard outside, had immediately upon hearing that soft sigh, released a tiny Ink Snake almost subconsciously.

He secretly rubbed his hand over his face outside the window soundlessly.

“Lord Jue, you should really get back here fast.”

.....

Surrounded by clear and pristine bodies of water, in an old and ancient Buddhist Temple, fresh red blood had tainted the place’s peaceful solace and quiet tranquility.

Inside the ancient Buddhist temple, dead corpses littered over the entire temple floor. Bright red blood covered the floor of the temple, and the smell of death pervaded every corner of that place of peace and tranquility.

In the middle of the sea of blood, a tall slender figure stood. Below the man’s feet, the floor was piled high with a mountain of dead bodies, seemingly just like a volcano spewing hot bright lava, as rivulets of blood ran down the arms and legs of the dead bodies, gathering into a garish red river of blood below.

“Lord Jue!” Ye Mei came running out from inside a room in the ancient temple, with a brocaded box clasped tightly in his hands.

“Found it?” Standing atop the mountainous pile of dead bodies, was the long missed Jun Wu Yao! Upon that flawlessly and devilishly handsome face, was an unquenchable bloodthirsty smile. The pair of violet eyes which seemed to have been immersed in blood were shining with elation after the bloody slaughter. With a light tap of his foot, Jun Wu Yao rose in the air and glided gracefully off the pile of corpses.

“Yes, milord!” Ye Mei nodded.

A faint smile came onto Jun Wu Yao’s face as he looked around at the tranquil ancient Buddhist temple, his eyes filled with disdain and contempt.

“Even a thousand year ancient Buddhist temple had fallen under the hands of those people. They have really tainted the sanctity of this highly sacred grounds of Buddha.” Jun Wu Yao raised a hand up slightly and the countless number of bodies that filled the ancient Buddhist temple were suddenly shrouded by a blood mist. The blood mist then spread out and all the corpses fallen upon the ground began to shake and shudder strangely in intervals. All the blood in those bodies and those spilled upon the ground was suddenly being drawn together by the blood mist, every single drop quickly gathering together!

The faintly coloured blood mist was soon infused with the red blood, freshly drawn out, turning the mist a thick and intense shade, looking as if a whole sea of blood had been lifted up in midair!

All the blood had disappeared off the floor without a single trace of it left in just barely a blink, and the countless corpses had been sucked completely dry as they lay unmoving, that filled up the temple grounds.

Jun Wu Yao then closed the palm he had lifted slightly!

The blood red mist instantly shrunk into a ball! Until it became a red droplet about the size of a thumbnail, which then slowly flew into Jun Wu Yao’s hand.

Jun Wu Yao toyed with the tiny droplet of blood, his violet eyes narrowing slightly. He lifted his chin slightly and glanced at the pile of dry corpses on the ground out of the corner of his eye. He flicked his sleeve lightly and a clear breeze blew, sweeping through the entire ancient temple. Every inch that the light breeze touched, the dry corpses upon the ground instantly turned into dust,

disappearing with the wind.

“Tch, if Little Xie gets to know about it, she will surely be disgusted.” Jun Wu Yao toyed with the droplet of blood between his fingers a moment more before a smile curled up the ends of his lips. He suddenly popped the droplet of blood into his mouth and swallowed it!

After Jun Wu Yao swallowed the blood droplet which was actually the gathered blood of the countless number of people in there, a strange glint flashed within his violet eyes.

“Ashes to ashes, dust to dust.” Jun Wu Yao suddenly sailed up into the air and he swung his upraised hand slightly. The thousand year Buddhist temple suddenly collapsed in an instant!

Ye Mei stood outside the ruins of the ancient Buddhist temple and kept the brocade box away safely. Immediately after that, he spotted a familiar Ink Snake slithering out from the forest beside him and he bent over to pick the Ink Snake up and placed it upon his palm. He pushed a finger against the Ink Snake’s abdomen lightly and the Ink Snake immediately spat a waxed ball out of its mouth!

Ye Mei crushed the waxed ball and pulled out the note within. Not daring to lay a single glance upon it, he immediately said to Jun Wu Yao who was still suspended in midair: “Lord Jue, Ye Sha sent news.”

Jun Wu Yao immediately descended and landed right before Ye Mei, quickly taking the note from Ye Mei hand’s without a word.

News from Ye Sha, could only be about her.

Chapter 1011: “Missing Someone is a Form of Sickness (3)”

Jun Wu Yao read every single word on the note carefully and a smile curled up upon his lips. This smile was completely different from the sinister and devilish smile from the one he showed before, but was one that seemingly arced up so gently, a smile that made that flawlessly handsome face look more intoxicatingly beautiful.

“Does it have something to do with the Young Miss?” Ye Mei inquired, when he saw the smile on his Lord Jue’s face, immediately guessing what the subject in the contents was. Under all the Heavens, the only person who was able to make his Lord Jue smile so “normally”, could only be the Young Miss alone.

“The little one, seems to be thinking of me.” Jun Wu Yao said with a smile, his voice seemingly soaring with elation.

“Lord Jue has been away the longest this time and it is very normal that the Young Miss would miss Lord Jue. We have already located one of these things, so do we go back first and hand it over to the Young Miss?” Ye Mei asked, looking at Jun Wu Yao.

Jun Wu Yao rubbed the note lightly between his fingers and the note turned to dust and scattered into the wind.

“Don’t tell her about these things for now. But..... it is time we go back and take a look though. The little one can really move, it has only been such a short period of time and she has already run all the way to the Thousand Beast City.”

“Lord Jue! Aren’t there people from the Twelve Palaces at the Thousand Beast City? If you go there now.....” Ye Mei could not help but be worried. He wasn’t afraid of the Twelve Palaces, but it was just not a good time for Lord Jue to reveal himself before the Twelve Palaces now. If news that Lord Jue was still alive was

leaked out, he was afraid.....

“It won’t matter.” Jun Wu Yao waved his hand nonchalantly.

“If I kill them all, there won’t be anyone to say anything.” Jun Wu Yao said as a cruel smile shone upon his face.

In this world, only dead people would not talk.

.....

In the Icy Frost Clan Hall, Lin Feng was pacing around in his room restlessly, his face a mask of anxiousness and fear.

“Young Chief.....” A servant greeted as he walked in from outside.

Lin Feng immediately rushed up and asked anxiously. “Did you manage to see my father?”

The servant shook his head.

The Clan Chief is currently busy. I went to see him, but he was not there.”

“Damn it!” Lin Feng slammed his fist onto the table. The Devious Wyvern was gone. How was he going to answer for it to his father?

Even if his father forgave him as he was his own son and was lenient with him, but the Devious Wyvern was already meant to be gifted to that person. The Devious Wyvern was now dead, how was he going to face up to it?

“Go out and watch the gates! Once my father comes back, inform me immediately!” Lin Feng said in a fluster.

The servant immediately left the room.

Lin Feng threw himself into his chair highly agitated, his hands tugging at his hair.

Even when he was the son of the Icy Frost Clan’s Clan Chief, if that person got to know that he was the one who got the Devious Wyvern that she wished to have killed, not even his father would

be able to protect him.

Upon the thought of how cruel and brutal that person was, Lin Feng immediately felt chills run up his spine, and his heart suddenly filled up endless regret.

If he had known that Jun Xie's Spirit Beast was of the Guardian Grade, he would have rather chosen to suffer that grievance quietly, than hand over the Devious Wyvern.

As Lin Feng was waiting anxiously inside, the Icy Frost Clan's Clan Chief, Lin Que, finally came in from outside. The moment he stepped in, the servant had immediately gone to inform Lin Feng and Lin Feng had rushed over in an instant.

Lin Que had just stepped into the backyard when he saw his son coming towards him with wide strides, and suddenly falling to his knees with a loud thud before him.

"My son? What is this?" Lin Que asked, looking at his son in puzzlement.

Lin Feng's face was mournful and his voice was highly panicked as he said: "I beg father to save your son!"

Chapter 1012: “Treacherous Deceit (1)”

Lin Que was shocked by Lin Feng’s actions and he immediately asked: “What’s wrong? Whatever it is, get up first and tell me about it.”

Lin Feng remained kneeling stubbornly and said: “Father, the Devious Wyvern..... the Devious Wyvern..... is gone.....”

“What! ?” Lin Que’s eyes flared wide open, looking at Lin Feng in disbelief.

“What do you mean the Devious Wyvern is gone? What actually happened?”

Lin Feng mournfully told Lin Que everything that had happened and Lin Que’s face turned from white to green.

“You useless piece of good for nothing!”

With a sharp crack, Lin Que slapped Lin Feng hard across his face. The amount of strength used, immediately left a five fingered palm mark burning brightly upon Lin Feng’s face.

Lin Feng did not dare to cry out in pain and could only hold his face as he remained kneeling in his spot.

“Who gave you the guts? How dare you bring the Devious Wyvern to the Spirit Beast Arena? Don’t you know who was the one who wanted the Devious Wyvern? Have you entirely lost your mind!? Do you realize, for that Devious Wyvern, how much effort I had put in, how many men I have lost for it? And you dare to lose the Devious Wyvern in a dumb fit of rage! ? I have told that person everything about the Devious Wyvern and I have been told that it will be that person’s birthday in half a month’s time. I have already promised to deliver the Devious Wyvern at that time and you, this blasphemous thing, would have to choose this exact moment to stir up such a mess! Aren’t you just slapping your own father across his face! ?” Lin Que roared, absolutely seething with

rage this time.

If it had been any other thing, it would have been fine if it was gone. He could very well just go find another one to replace it.

But the Devious Wyvern had taken him close to almost ten years and he had gone through much difficulties before he had managed to find it. In order to capture it and bring it back here, he had even had to sacrifice several of his most elite men and countless numbers of common underlings. He had initially thought that he would be able to use the Devious Wyvern to gain the favour of that person and in the end, the very moment he informed that person about it, he had come back to find the Devious Wyvern gone!

How was he expected to resolve this situation! ?

Lin Que's uncontrollable rage was making Lin Feng feel highly uneasy. He was Lin Que's only son and Lin Que seldom scolded him. When he had stirred up more atrocious incidents in the past, Lin Que had always quietly helped him resolve all those issues. But this time, the situation was completely different from any in the past.

"Father! Farther! You have to save me." Lin Feng pleaded as he wailed at Lin Que's foot, hugging Lin Que's thigh in terror.

"I won't dare do it again. Never again. I beg for father to save me just this once."

Lin Que stared at his good for nothing son and really wished he could just slap the moron to death. But he could not bear to lay such a heavy hand upon him and could only let out a heavy sigh in resignation.

"Haiz! What wrong have I done."

"You said that the Devious Wyvern was killed by a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast? And that Spirit Beast belonged to the youth that Xiong Ba recently brought into the Thousand Beast City?" Things have come to such a stage and he could not push his son out

to shoulder the blame for the crime, so, he would have to come up with another plan.

Lin Feng nodded his head in agreement.

“Are you very certain that the youth’s Spirit Beast is of the Guardian Grade?” Lin Que asked.

Lin Feng replied in a hurry: “Very sure! I was not the only person who saw it! Everyone at the Spirit Beast Arena today saw it too! That Spirit Beast, is for sure of the Guardian Grade. If not..... if not, why would the Devious Wyvern succumb under it? Your son had not known of that Spirit Beast’s grade at all before that and had thought that it was just a low grade Spirit Beast, thinking..... thinking that the Devious Wyvern’s power would not have any problem eliminating the opponent. I had not thought that that Jun Xie would be so despicable to deliberately hide his Spirit Beast’s grade and that had caused me to fall prey to his wiles.” Lin Feng cried out, purposefully shifting all the blame onto Jun Xie’s head.

Chapter 1013: “Heavenly Cloud Chambers (1)”

Lin Que narrowed his eyes. The death of the Devious Wyvern was not a fact that could be covered up so easily and the only thing he could do now was think of ways to reduce that person's rage so he would be able to pick his son out from this big pickle his son was in.

“Do you know the origins of the Spirit Beast?”

Lin Feng shook his head.

“I only know that the Spirit Beast takes on the form of a snowy white wolf and has nine tails behind it. It..... it is just a little sheep when it hides its true form and doesn't look like it holds much power.”

Lin Que thought deeply on it a moment immediately pulled Lin Feng up from the ground. “You tell me. Does that brat Jun Xie know that you were the one who brought the Devious Wyvern out right from the start?”

Lin Feng nodded hurriedly.

“Then you had better remember what I am about to tell you carefully. In this incident, right from the beginning, Jun Xie had schemed against you. He made his own Spirit Beast attack Shangguan Miao's Spirit Beast which caused Shangguan Miao to get hurt. And you had only acted rashly in order to avenge your brother in arms and fell under Jun Xie's plot to have the Devious Wyvern killed. Do you understand?” Lin Que instructed with his eyes narrowed, staring right at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was stunned.

Lin Que shouted out loudly with impatience: “Have you heard me clearly!”

Lin Feng shivered and nodded hastily.

“I heard you! I heard you!”

“Very good. Now, the matter is after all linked to you and when that person metes out punishment, just bear with it and I’ll try my best to plead for mercy on your behalf. But you must definitely insist that this has been the doing of Jun Xie. Jun Xie is a guest of the Fiery Blaze Clan’s and the Fiery Blaze Clan had always been against that person’s way of doing things. Very few people know about the Devious Wyvern but some people in the Fiery Blaze Clan are aware of it. They leaked the information to Jun Xie and made him scheme up this plot to instigate you to act. Make sure you remember all this properly! If that person sends people to come interrogate you, then answer them exactly as I have just told you without leaving a single word out!” Lin Que said fiercely.

“Father is intending to pin the entire blame for this matter onto Jun Xie?” Lin Feng was still rather surprised.

“What do you think! ? If he doesn’t take the blame, even I would not be able to save you from that person! You better pray hard that the Guardian Grade Spirit Beast of Jun Xie’s is enough to please that person. If that Guardian Grade Spirit Beast is able to appease that person’s rage, then you will be safe.” Lin Que said coldly.

Lin Feng shrunk his head into his shoulders meekly and did not dare say anything more.

“You useless good for nothing! Shouldn’t you be getting back to your room to reflect on your actions! ?” Lin Que hollered, his rage rising the more he looked at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng quickly wiped the tears and mucus off his face and slunk back to his room with his head held low but the terror that had filled his eyes was already slowly fading away. If Lin Que was asking him to remain back in his room, that told him that Lin Que had a certain level of confidence in regards to this matter. With that, Lin Feng knew that he had managed to escape disaster this

time.

Lin Que stared at his own son's slender back and could not help but feel a desperate sense of helplessness. He should have been able to strengthen his position with that person with the Devious Wyvern but now, it had all been ruined by this wastrel of a son and he had to think of a way to make up for it instead.

"Guards!" Lin Que called out suddenly.

"What instructions does the Clan Chief have for us?"

"Go to the storehouse and bring me the treasures I brought back yesterday. Then come with me to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers." Lin Que instructed the guards with a heavy sigh.

"Yes, Chief!"

Lin Que prepared quite a substantial heap of treasures and got onto the horse carriage to make his way towards the Heavenly Cloud Chambers in the Thousand Beast City.

The Heavenly Cloud Chambers in the Thousand Beast City was originally a place they used to worship the deities but after that person came back, orders were given to have the altar dismantled and to have all the spiritual tablets disposed. It was then converted into a residence for that person's own use and in the entire area the Heavenly Cloud Chambers sat, all buildings higher than two storeys were torn down as that person had felt that the buildings obstructed her view outside her windows.

Chapter 1014: “Heavenly Cloud Chambers (2)”

Lin Que waited outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers to be summoned as his underlings and servants held a heap of treasures within their hands beside him.

Moments later, a fair skinned and handsome looking male came out from within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. His clothes were thin and light, his demeanour frivolous. When he saw Lin Que, he began to say nonchalantly: “The Great Aunt is too busy to see you today and if there’s nothing else, you can leave now. “

Lin Que’s eyes narrowed. Within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, besides the other few highly powerful people that person had brought in with her, she reared a whole herd of handsome young men inside. The men were all kept there to attend to that person’s everyday whims and fancies within the entire Heavenly Cloud Chambers, that person was the only female in there and all the rest were without exception, only male.

According to a rule in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, no other female was to set foot within it and even Qu Ling Yue was only able to wait outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

Those handsome men were mostly selected from within the city and they were not highly skilled and possessed insignificant spirit powers. They were all however blessed with attractive flesh shells and that person liked handsome looking men like this.

Which had led to having even highly authoritative men like the Clan Chief of the Icy Frost Clan to not dare be too harsh with these “favoured men”.

Swallowing back his rage, Lin Que said with a smile: “I will have to implore that Young Master Yun to help relay another message for me, saying that the matter I am here for today is related to the

Devious Wyvern. I believe this matter is definitely of interest to the Great Aunt.” As he spoke, Lin Que pulled out a longish rectangular brocade box and placed it into the hands of Young Master Yun.

Young Master Yun raised up an eyebrow and opened the brocade box to see. He saw a glittering gold decorative Ruyi lying within and the impatience on his face immediately disappeared without a trace, quickly replaced by a satisfied smile.

“Since Clan Chief Lin has important matters to discuss, I shall then try my best despite the difficulties and help you relay the message once more.” Upon saying that, Young Master Yun slipped the brocade box within his sleeve and walked inside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers as he swiveled his hips.

Immediately upon after the man had turned and left, a malicious glint instantly shone within Lin Que’s eyes.

“Clan Chief, why do you need to be so polite to such people?” A servant beside Lin Que asked, highly displeased with Young Master Yun’s arrogant demeanor.

Lin Que sneered, his voice dripping with derision: “You really think that I treat these people with respect? If they were not so favoured by that person, useless garbage like this would not even be fit to wipe my shoes!”

After a while, Young Master Yun came out and told Lin Que that the Grand Aunt is willing to see him now.

Lin Que put on an ingratiating smile upon his face and thanked Young Master Yun repeatedly before he led his men into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

The Heavenly Cloud Chambers was seven storeys tall and that person lived on the top level.

Lin Que followed behind Young Master Yun the entire way as he made some enquiries about that person’s mood today. Young

Master Yun having accepted the gift had naturally spilled every single detail he knew and when they got to the top level, Lin Que immediately shut his mouth.

On the topmost level of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, the entire floor was covered with snowy white fox skin rugs. Every single inch within the room was covered with lavish extravagance. Gold trinkets and jade jewellery could be seen scattered everywhere and several lightly clothed and handsome looking young men were seated on one side, some playing the zither, some picking at the pipa, and a few piping out melodies on jade flutes.

Another group of good looking men were leaning against the sides of an elaborate consort's lounge chair, offering up platters of fruits and wine, their faces plastered with adulating smiles.

A lady in red was lounging lazily on the long lounge chair, being served by the mass of young men. She was beautiful looking and the ends of her eyes were slighted edged upwards, looking to be only in her twenties. A mane of black flowed out behind her, as one man knelt on the floor, carefully combing it out.

Lin Que glanced once at the beautiful lady, his face showing a cautious smile.

Who would have thought that the unparalleled beauty was in actuality an old woman beyond a hundred years old?

Chapter 1015: “Heavenly Cloud Chambers (3)”

“Your subordinate Lin Que pays his greetings to the Great Aunt.” Lin Que paid his obeisance, kneeling down on both his knees.

The beautiful lady being waited upon hand and foot by a good number of attractive looking men lifted her eyes slightly, her alluring eyes lightly sweeping over Lin Que as she said nonchalantly: “Little Yun told me you have something you need to see me for? And that it has to do with the Devious Wyvern. I remember you telling me just a few days ago that you will be presenting the Devious Wyvern as a gift to me for my birthday celebrations. For you to come here today, wouldn’t that mean that there has been a problem?”

The pitch she spoke with had been light and the voice enchanting, but the tone was nevertheless piercing like a needle, that drove pain into Lin Que.

Cold sweat ran down Lin Que’s back, as he knelt firmly before the lady, his face already pale as a ghost.

“Your subordinate is guilty! Your subordinate has failed to rein in my unruly son which had caused the moron to fall prey to the scheme of people with ill intentions, resulting in him losing the Devious Wyvern, and I beg for the Great Aunt to mete out punishment!”

The beautiful lady’s eyes narrowed slightly as she stared at Lin Que kneeling upon the ground, and then she suddenly broke out into a laugh sounding like the tinkle of silver bells.

“Lin Que, the reason you have come here today, is just to tell me that your son had lost my Devious Wyvern?”

Lin Que started shaking as he remained kneeling upon the ground. Although what his ears heard was laughter, but that sound

instead caused his entire body to break out in cold sweat!

“It’s your subordinate’s negligence that caused my son.....”

A shattering crash sounded!

A white jade wine cup had smashed upon Lin Que’s temple and a wound had immediately opened up on his head. Blood gushed out from the wound on his temple and started dripping down, the bright red blood dripping upon the white fox fur rugs on the ground, devilish blood flowers seemingly blooming upon the snowy white.

Lin Que did not dare to move from his spot and forced himself to remain kneeling as he said in a hurry: “It was my offspring’s foolishness, that allowed him to fall into the scheme set up by people, which made him lose the Devious Wyvern. Your subordinate has already investigated and looked into the matter clearly. The other party had actually disguised his Guardian Grade Spirit Beast as a low grade Spirit Beast which was the main cause of this issue. Although he was set up by others, but this incident still cannot be disassociated completely with your subordinate’s incompetent son and your subordinate is willing to submit myself to the Great Aunt’s punishment on my foolish son’s behalf.”

The beautiful lady narrowed up her eyes and sat up upon the long lounge chair. “Guardian Grade Spirit Beast?”

Lin Que’s heart filled with joy, realizing that he had chosen the right method. He quickly replied: “Yes, it was undoubtedly a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. That person was brought in by the people from the Fiery Blaze Clan and his name is Jun Xie. The person had never been in the Thousand Beast City before this.”

“Jun Xie? That’s interesting. Someone actually dares to lay hands upon the things that I want.” A malicious expression appeared upon the beautiful lady’s face and she clapped her hands which were fair as white jade lightly together.

And a towering man immediately came up from downstairs.

When Lin Que saw that man, he became even more cautious. That man was one of the powerful men the Great Aunt had brought here with her.

“Go look into the background of who that Jun Xie is.” The lady said, her voice sounding highly displeased.

The man was surprised and he hesitated a moment after receiving his orders, seemingly having remembered something. He suddenly turned to Lin Que and said: “That person named Jun Xie, how old is he, and is he male or female?”

Lin Que quickly replied: “He looked to be fourteen or fifteen years of age, small built, just a young immature youthful boy.”

An eyebrow on the man’s face lifted and he took a step forward to say: “Your subordinate has actually heard of the name Jun Xie before.”

“Oh?” The lady looked at the man inquiringly.

“A few days ago, our spies from the Fire Country sent in a report, saying that a great upheaval had shaken up the Fire Country’s ruling Imperial Family. The ruling regime of the Fire Country has changed hands and it had been to a person called Jun Xie! A youth that was about fourteen or fifteen years of age, and Xiong Ba has just returned from the Fire Country. If my guess is not wrong, the Jun Xie that Lin Que is talking about, should be the new ruling Emperor of the Fire Country.” The man said slowly.

Lin Que’s heart was suddenly overtaken with shock!

Chapter 1016: “Heavenly Cloud Chambers (4)”

Lin Que would never ever have thought, that Jun Wu Xie would possess such a prestigious background. In the Thousand Beast City, although he held the highly revered post of a Clan Chief, but it was not at a level that would be able to stand against the ruling Emperor of the biggest country throughout the lands, and Lin Que suddenly found himself completely bathed in cold sweat.

In his heart, he was cursing that son of his who was always stirring up so much trouble, many millions of times.

Of all the people in the world to offend, he had to choose to offend the Emperor of the Fire Country. His plan to divert the Grand Aunt's rage onto Jun Xie this time looked like it was about to go up in smoke.

“A youth merely fourteen to fifteen years of age was actually able to become the Fire Country's Emperor? Is that a joke from the Fire Country?” The lady asked doubtfully.

“Your subordinate heard that Jun Xie has a ring named the Ring of Imperial Fire and it was originally owned by one of the past Emperors of the Fire Country. That Emperor had gone missing for a very long time and the throne was temporarily taken over by his younger brother. Upon ascending to the throne, the younger brother had issued an Imperial Decree that once a person who holds the Ring of Imperial Fire appears, all descendants of his are to abdicate and give up the throne in favour of that person.” The man said.

“So that's how it happened.” The lady nodded slightly. “The little Emperor has recently just ascended into the throne, so what is he doing here in my Thousand Beast City instead of enjoying himself back in the Fire Country?”

“That..... your subordinate does not know.”

The lady waved her hand to dismiss him and she turned to look at Lin Que kneeling upon the ground. Her gaze seemed thoughtful as Lin Que was feeling all jittery.

“Forget it. It’s just a beast anyway. Since the Fire Country’s little Emperor likes it, take it as a greeting gift from me to him.”

Hearing the Great Aunt say that, Lin Que heaved a silent sigh of relief in his heart.

“Very soon, my birthday celebrations will be coming up. With such a rare opportunity that the Fire Country’s little Emperor also happens to be in the Thousand Beast City as well, have someone hand him an invitation at that time, to invite the little Emperor to join us with the festivities.”

“Yes!” Lin Que said hurriedly.

“In this matter, I will not pursue it further. You have afterall tried your best and spared no effort all these years. Your son’s life, will be spared for now. It’s also about time the next batch of people should be heading out to the Heaven’s End Cliff and you should know what to do.” The lady said, her gaze falling upon Lin Que. Although it was just a fleeting glance, but it was enough to make anyone feel oppressively stifled.

Lin Que replied: “Your subordinate knows, and your subordinate will definitely carry it out properly. But..... but when your subordinate asked the Grand Chieftain to allocate men for the expedition previously, the Grand Chieftain had not seem too pleased about it.” As Lin Que spoke, he discreetly raised his head up slightly to observe the lady’s reaction.

The lady said with a cold laugh: “His displeasure should be nothing new to you. Why should you bother how he feels about it?”

“Yes..... yes. Everything will be carried out as Great Aunt wishes

it to be. Your subordinate will spare no effort in getting it done.” Lin Que said.

The lady then nodded in satisfaction.

“You’re dismissed!”

“Yes.” Lin Que recused himself and asked his men to put all the gifts down before leaving the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

“All of the rest of you are dismissed as well.” The lady waved her hand, dispersing all the good looking young men in the room.

When she was the only person left on the top floor, the towering man who had left earlier came back up with two other men with him.

“All that was said earlier, did you all hear it?” Qu Xin Rui asked, sitting up straight on the long lounge chair, looking at the three companions who had come to the Thousand Beast City with her.

“We heard it clearly. The fact that you let Lin Que off so easily this time, was very unlike your personality. I had thought that you would have needed to tear his son into a million pieces before you will be appeased.” The man who had been highly respectful towards Qu Xin Rui earlier suddenly said with a laugh, and there wasn’t a trace of the same respectful tone in his voice that had been present earlier.

Chapter 1017: “Heavenly Cloud Chambers (5)”

Qu Xin Rui gave a cold laugh in response. After her spirit powers broke through to attain the Purple Spirit, she had left the place at the invitation by the Soul Return Palace of the Twelve Palaces and she had only come back here to the Thousand Beast City because she had an objective to achieve here.

“Lin Que’s son is a useless piece of garbage, but Lin Que is still rather useful. If I had his son killed, I do not think he will continue to submit himself to work for us voluntarily. They will have to die in the end anyway, but for Lin Que, it will have to wait till he completes all the tasks I have set out for him to do before he dies.”

“According to what you are saying, you are only intending to settle scores with him after Lin Que helps us to locate the Dark Emperor’s tomb?” One of the men asked, his eyebrow lifting slightly.

Qu Xin Rui’s eyes narrowed and a cruel glint showed in her eyes.

“Although the Devious Wyvern is not as vital as the Dark Emperor’s tomb, but it is still something of significant importance. That wastrel of a trash had actually in a fit of anger, caused me to lose the Devious Wyvern that had been within my grasp in vain. How could I let him go scot free so easily?”

“Lin Que is rather loyal to you though. Even for something so difficult to find like the Devious Wyvern, Lin Que had still managed to find it for you. But a pity. If not for this accident, if you had brought the Devious Wyvern back to the palace, Xin Rui, you would have won yourself much credit.” The man said with a smile.

Qu Xin Rui swept her gaze over to him, seemingly not affected by the man’s sarcasm in the least.

“If you guys have so much time to be telling me all this, you should instead be looking at all this in another way. The Devious Wyvern might already be gone, but hadn’t they sent us something good in return?”

“Something good? You mean the Guardian Grade Spirit Beast?”

Qu Xin Rui shook her head. “Although a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast is rare, but it would not help us much towards our objective here. Instead, that little Emperor of the Fire Country would be more useful towards our needs. The Fire Country is the biggest country in the Lower Realm and regardless whether we are talking about the population of people or battle prowess, no other country in the Lower Realm can compare to them. If we can make the little Emperor obediently submit himself to us, we will then be able to mobilise the army he has on his hands to explore the Heaven’s End Cliff, and the results will naturally be something way beyond what one lone Thousand Beast City can hope to achieve.”

“Little wonder you said to forget the matter, so you already had this thought in your mind then. I had thought that your temperament had changed today and you suddenly decided not to make things difficult for Lin Que, nor to pursue the matter any further with Jun Xie. Seems like when you asked for an invitation to be sent to the little Emperor, you had already thought to rope the boy in?” The man was well aware of the kind of malice Qu Xin Rui was capable of and he immediately understood what Qu Xin Rui was planning.

Qu Xin Rui smiled slightly and said: “There aren’t too many things in the Lower Realm that is able to hold my attention and if they can be put to good use, then why not? If the little Emperor’s looks catches my eye, I will naturally not ill treat him as well.” As she spoke, the tip of Qu Xin Rui’s tongue lightly licked her red luscious lips.

“It will be good if everything happens as you have planned.”

“Whether it will happen, will depend on whether the little Emperor knows what’s good for him. In the next few days, Lin Que will be arranging for people to go to the Heaven’s End Cliff and see who among you three will be going with them. Even though no one from the Thousand Beast City will be able to come back alive, we shouldn’t waste all that effort for nothing and should at least dig up whatever information we can about the situation down there at the bottom.” Qu Xin Rui said to the men.

“Alright.”

After that, Qu Xin Rui waved her hand and said: “All of you are dismissed.”

The three men exchanged looks between themselves and saw the sneer from being ridiculed in each other’s eyes but they chose not to speak of it. They pretended to show deference and walked down from the top floor of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

Very soon, the bunch of good looking young men who had been dismissed earlier rushed upstairs and quickly surrounded Qu Xin Rui once again, fawning all over her with shameless adulation.

Qu Xin Rui immersed herself within, her eyes closed in enjoyment.

Chapter 1018: “Victory without a Fight”

As Lord Meh Meh had crushed the entire Spirit Beast Arena’s battle stage platform into rubble when it had revealed its true form, based on reason, it had been the first participant to have set foot outside the boundary of the battle platform. Hence, Lord Meh Meh was no longer holding the Spirit Beast Arena’s first rank. But as the Devious Wyvern who had “defeated” Lord Meh Meh had already been swallowed up completely without a trace left behind, the second ranked in the Spirit Beast Arena had been promoted up to hold the top rank.

That very afternoon, Jun Wu Xie brought Lord Meh Meh to the Spirit Beast Arena once again, and stated that they wanted to register for participation in the competition.

However.....

The person in charge of the Spirit Beast Arena had almost fallen to his knees before Jun Xie in plea.

They had usually only had low grade Spirit Beasts being brought in to contest in the Spirit Beast Arena. Needless to even mention about Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts, even seeing a medium grade Spirit Beast appear in their contests was a rare sight by itself.

With Lord Meh Meh being such an impossibly magnificent Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, was there even any meaning for it to come take part in their competition? Any Spirit Beast that was placed before Lord Meh Meh would not need Lord Meh Meh to even bleat a second time. The first sound it made would drive any of them into uncontrollable incontinence.

Aside from the fact that the Spirit Beasts would not even dare to stand before Lord Meh Meh, even their owners who were people who were most keen to show off their skills in Spirit Beast Taming were all hiding their Spirit Beasts away from Lord Meh Meh, not a single one among them wanting to see their Spirit Beast toyed by

Lord Meh Meh on stage.

If that was allowed to continue on, how was the Spirit Beast Arena even going to continue its existence?

With no other choice, the person in charge in the Spirit Beast Arena had straightaway absolved Lord Meh Meh of having to go through any battles, and immediately shoved a Spirit Tamer Bracelet straight into Jun Xie's hand, quickly escorting the youth and beast out of the Spirit Beast Arena in a big hurry like he would the God of Calamity.

Having a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast in their Spirit Beast Arena..... Not just merely this year, it was thought that even if they were to wait till next year, not a single participant would even dare show up here.

Wouldn't that be just like the Chinese saying? Despite knowing a tiger's in the mountain, but still choosing to walk up the mountain?

Having unexpectedly received the Spirit Tamer Bracelet that she wanted so easily, Jun Wu Xie was still feeling rather surprised. But when she saw the mournful and almost tearful look on the face of the person in charge, she accepted the bracelet without stalling and immediately left the place carrying Lord Meh Meh in her arms, failing to see all the people in the Spirit Beast Arena wiping tears from their eyes after she left.

Having gotten the Spirit Tamer Bracelet, Jun Wu Xie went back to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall to slowly study it.

Fan Zhuo was still outside the Thousand Beast City at that moment and she did not know where his exact location was. It would only be after they came into the city and initiated contact with her that she would be able to hand the Spirit Tamer Bracelet to Fan Zhuo.

The Spirit Tamer Bracelets in the Thousand Beast City were

classified into different grades. The one Jun Wu Xie held in her hand was of the most inferior quality, that was only able to tame one low grade Spirit Beast. To someone like Jun Wu Xie who already had two Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts with her, the item was really not of much use to her. After looking at it carefully a few times, she then kept it away.

Jun Wu Xie then took the lotus basin out from the Cosmos Sack and slowly absorbed the spirit energy from it. She had already been at the pinnacle of the green spirit from quite a long time with her spirit power fully filled to the brim, and she would be able to breakthrough into the blue spirit anytime she wanted. But Jun Wu Xie was not too keen to do it at that moment as when she conducts a breakthrough, she would inadvertently fall into unconsciousness for a period of time. Being in the Thousand Beast City currently, Jun Wu Xie did not dare to allow herself to fall into a coma so carelessly and although she had Lord Meh Meh and the others at her side, she didn't hold too much confidence towards Lord Meh Meh's and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit's intelligence. Only the little black cat among them could be counted as quick witted but she was not certain that it would be able to handle any unexpected situations that might suddenly occur.

Afterall, within the Thousand Beast City, people from the Twelve Palaces were also present and under such circumstances, it was impossible for Jun Wu Xie to proceed with her spirit power breakthrough while alone.

As she silently absorbed the spirit energy, Jun Wu Xie's mind was also contemplating the situation within the Thousand Beast City.

Chapter 1019: “A Young Girl’s Heart”

In the subsequent few days in the Thousand Beast City, life could only be described as dry and uneventful for Jun Wu Xie. She almost never left her room and even Qing Yu did not see not see any sign of Jun Xie in the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall.

Everytime he suggested to Jun Xie to bring him out on a tour of the Thousand Beast City, he was quickly rejected by Jun Xie.

That had however freed up some time for Qing Yu to deal with some of the tasks his position required of him that had accumulated up previously.

Qu Ling Yue came down to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall on the fifth day after Jun Xie came to the Thousand Beast City. She knocked on Jun Xie’s room door as she stood uneasily before it.

“Young Master Jun, are you in there?”

The room door was slowly opened and Jun Xie appeared before Qu Ling Yue. And that one glance almost made Qu Ling Yue laugh out loud. Jun Wu Xie after having altered her looks disguised as a boy, could still be considered to be delicately attractive looking. But the delicate features on that face was always tinged with a slight chill which made the boy feel rather unapproachable. But at that moment.....

Jun Xie was carrying the round wooly Lord Meh Meh in his arms, while upon his left and right shoulders, were perched the little black cat and a snow white big eared rabbit. At first glance, those three adorable little fellows had instantly added quite a significant level of amusement to Jun Xie’s otherwise chilling demeanor.

Qu Ling Yue tried to hold herself back with much difficulty before she was able to not laugh out aloud.

“Come in.” Jun Wu Xie said expressionlessly.

Qu Ling Yue followed the youth in behind obediently and

immediately upon entering, she could smell a faint fragrance of herbs. The scent was very nice smelling but when she swept her gaze over the entire room, she could not spot any traces of herbs at all.

“Something you need?” Jun Wu Xie asked, putting Lord Meh Meh upon the table, before picking up the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit and the little black cat to put them on the table as well. Fortunately, Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts were able to alter their weight as well when transforming their bodies or with her thin arms and slender legs, it would really be rather tedious to carry around all three of those adorable looking beasts.

“Erm, it will be the end of the month soon and Father made me come to ask whether you have any plans made.” Qu Ling Yue said, looking at Jun Xie, the smile upon her face from earlier had faded, her expression stern and serious.

At the end of every month, Qu Xin Rui would bring all those people she had released at the beginning of the month back out of the city and release another batch of prisoners only in the beginning of the next month. If they wanted to find out where Qu Xin Rui imprisoned all the people of the Thousand Beast City, that was the only window period that allowed them to do anything to find out.

“No.” Jun Wu Xie answered very calmly.

Qu Ling Yue was slightly shocked. Jun Xie had been in the Thousand Beast City for several days now and she had not seen him take any action. It was not that she did not believe in Jun Xie’s capabilities, but as she knew absolutely nothing about what the youth was planning, she could not help but feel slightly uneasy about it.

“Aren’t you going to meet with any of the people who came back from there? And try to ask where they had been imprisoned?” Qu Ling Yue asked cautiously with trepidation.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head. “As the entire Thousand Beast City has fallen under the control of that person, anyone who comes in contact with those people would be discovered by that person. Moreover..... if she dared to release those people, it would mean all those people has no idea where they had been imprisoned. It would just be a waste of time to ask them and only serve to alert the enemy instead.”

The proper way to resolve the predicament the Thousand Beast City was facing, would be from outside, and not from within.

Qu Ling Yue then said: “Young Master Jun has guessed it correctly. For all those people who had been released, their family members had asked the released prisoners and tried to decipher where they had been hidden in imprisonment but none of them were able to tell them anything. After they were sent out of the Thousand Beast City, all of them would quickly be knocked out and by the time they regained their consciousness, they were already back in captivity.”

Chapter 1020: “A Young Girl’s Heart (2)”

“That would naturally be so.” Jun Wu Xie was not surprised in the least.

To have been able to hold all those people hostage against the Thousand Beast City for so many years, the Great Aunt would naturally have been a highly capable person, and she would naturally have prepared against this.

Qu Ling Yue shrugged. She had not seen her mother for a long time and she missed her mother terribly. Whenever she saw the family members of others return, while still not being able to see her own mother, the many times that she had been hopelessly disappointed, had made her begin to feel more and more anxious as time went by.

Seeing Qu Ling Yue looking sad and highly depressed, the little black cat used its tail to poke at Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie turned to look at the little black cat blankly and saw that the little black cat was trying to signal to her with its eyes.

“Meow.”

[Mistress, haven’t you yet realised that the Young Miss Qu came to find you seeking for an elixir of assurance?]

Jun Wu Xie lifted an eyebrow. She seldom told anyone about any of the plans she had in her head and it had already become a matter of habit for her. Qu Ling Yue knew absolutely nothing about any of her plans, and having been disappointed countless times in the Thousand Beast City, Qu Ling Yue was desperately wishing for just the slightest glimmer of hope to manifest.

Jun Wu Xie suddenly said: “Dumb Qiao and the others are already stationed outside the city and once those people are brought out of the city, they will then follow behind them. They will be able to find out where all the people have been

imprisoned.”

As expected, upon hearing Jun Wu Xie’s explanation, Qu Ling Yue immediately lifted her head, her face filled with delighted surprise.

Jun Wu Xie looked at Qu Ling Yue’s big round eyes which were suddenly shimmering with so much joy and hope and she understood why the little black cat had said that. Just a simple line from her, had been able to help Qu Ling Yue reignite that sense of hope and make her regain her confidence. It was just that simple.

Having seemingly learned something from this, Jun Wu Xie raised a hand and copied what Jun Wu Yao had done before, her tiny hand gently patting Qu Ling Yue lightly on her head.

“Rest assured. Whatever I promised you, I will achieve it.” In order to get the map, she would not allow herself any mistakes in this.

Qu Ling Yue was slightly stunned as she stared at Jun Xie, the pair of cold eyes seemingly having lost some of their chill and filled with a slight tinge of warmth. Although still cold, but these eyes seemed no longer biting.

Although Qu Ling Yue and Jun Xie had known each other for a period of time, those eyes of Jun Xie’s had always made her subconsciously not dare to get too close to the youth. Even coming here to get news from him today, had required her to summon up a great deal of courage. Although Jun Xie was slightly younger than she was, she had never dared to see Jun Xie as an ordinary youth. In her eyes, Jun Xie’s existence had far transcended the boundaries of seniority traditionally limited by age.

In her heart, Jun Xie took on an image of someone who was powerful, cold, wise and farsighted.

But when Jun Xie was now seemingly looking as if he was comforting her, having raised his hand to pat her on the head, Qu

Ling Yue suddenly found that her heart had skipped a beat.

Her clear and tiny face suddenly felt a warm surge. Her eyes widened, as she stared at the youth who wouldn't be considered to be highly exceptionally good looking. Without knowing why, at that moment, she suddenly felt that Jun Xie was actually even more attractive looking than that incredibly handsome man everyone had been drawn to back at the time at the Flame Spirit Auction House.

At that moment, Qu Ling Yue could feel as if several deers were leaping around in her heart and even her breaths were suddenly coming in in quick short gasps.

Jun Wu Xie looked at the suddenly red flushed face of Qu Ling Yue and her eyes narrowed up.

Her instincts as a doctor thought that Qu Ling Yue was feeling unwell and although their relationship was only one of cooperation, Jun Wu Xie was usually more gentle towards females. She immediately looked up and placed her palm upon Qu Ling Yue's forehead.

Chapter 1021: “A Young Girl’s Heart (3)”

When she felt Jun Xie’s slightly cold hand placed over her forehead, Qu Ling Yue’s face quickly turned even redder!

“You.....” Jun Wu Xie could feel that Qu Ling Yue’s forehead was getting rather warm and she was just about to take her pulse when Qu Ling Yue suddenly stood up with a swoosh.

Qu Ling Yue’s face was so red that her face looked like it was about to burst. She stood there in a fluster, her hands twisting helplessly together before her.

“I..... I..... I am fine.....” Qu Ling Yue stuttered nervously. When Jun Xie had been standing so close to her earlier, she had felt like her heart was almost going to jump out of her throat.

Jun Wu Xie looking puzzledly at Qu Ling Yue’s rather strange actions, unable to understand why Qu Ling Yue was reacting like this.

“Erm..... about that..... I..... I’ll take my leave first..... If..... If there’s anything else, I’ll come look for you then..... No..... no no, you can get Uncle Xiong to tell it to my father.....” Her tongue was getting all twisted up and Qu Ling Yue was getting more nervous the more she spoke, so she suddenly decided to just turn around and just run out of the room in a panic instead.

Qing Yu was just coming in to look for Jun Xie when Qu Ling Yue suddenly ran straight into him. He did not even have the time to apologise when Qu Ling Yue already had her head lowered and after quickly apologising a few times, she ran away like she was escaping from something.

“What happened to..... the Young Miss?” Qing Yu asked looking at Qu Ling Yue’s back as she ran away, his face puzzled as he turned to look at Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie shrugged her shoulders. She didn’t know what

happened to Qu Ling Yue as well.

She was completely fine just moments ago when her face had suddenly turned red and she had quickly run away after saying barely a few words after that.

Qing Yu scratched at his head but very quickly, he couldn't make himself worry about that anymore. He placed the invitation he held in his hand and placed it upon the table before Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie lifted an eyebrow as she glanced at Qing Yu and picked up the invitation to look at it, before quickly putting it back down on the table.

“This, was just brought in by the people from the Icy Frost Clan.” Qing Yu said with a frown. When it was delivered here, the person specifically stated that it was to be given to Jun Xie and that had greatly puzzled Qing Yu.

“Why would you be invited to that person's birthday celebrations?” Qing Yu had thought long and hard but still had no answers to that question. How long had it only been since Jun Xie came to the Thousand Beast City? Qu Xin Rui's birthday celebrations usually only included the Clan Chiefs and their deputies from the various clans, and the people within the Grand Chieftain's Residence. Other than that, no one else would be allowed to attend.

And Jun Xie would not even considered to be from the Thousand Beast City, so why had Qu Xin Rui suddenly decided to issue an invitation to Jun Xie?

Jun Wu Xie calmly replied: “Because the Devious Wyvern is gone.”

“What?” Qing Yu was stunned for a while.

“Remember the time I went by myself to the Spirit Beast Arena for the match between the Devious Wyvern and Lord Meh Meh?” Jun Wu Xie asked.

Qing Yu immediately nodded. Of course he remembered that. He had still been highly relieved that Jun Xie had been able to bring Lord Meh Meh back in one piece. He had been afraid that Jun Xie might still be sore about it and so he had not dared to bring the matter up with the youth.

“That day, Lord Meh Meh swallowed up the Devious Wyvern.” Jun Wu Xie said, her face highly calm.

With a loud thunk, Qing Yu’s jaw dropped onto the floor.

“Wh... What..... What did you say? Lord Meh Meh..... swallowed up..... the..... the Devious Wyvern?” Qing Yu could not believe what his own ears were hearing. He had seen with his own eyes just how huge the Devious Wyvern had been and with Lord Meh Meh’s tiny body, even if it was to eat up the Devious Wyvern, they would first have to slash and grind the Devious Wyvern by a million cuts and that would take Lord Meh Meh an entire month to eat it as ground meat!

But Jun Xie had just said.....

Lord Meh Meh swallowed the Devious Wyvern up?

Chapter 1022: “Dangerous Feast (1)”

[Lord Meh Meh swallowed up the Devious Wyvern?]

[How was that possible?]

Qing Yu stared very hard at the round ball of wool that was Lord Meh Meh, but he still could not find anything out of the ordinary.

“Meh?” Lord Meh Meh heard Jun Wu Xie mention its name and thought that its feedstress was heaping praise on it and it wiggled its little tail, its rear end wobbling as it came to Jun Wu Xie’s feet, shamelessly rubbing itself against her calf.

It looked at that moment, exactly like a shameless, fawning lackey!

The perspective that Qing Yu viewed the world with, was suddenly shattered.....

[That dumb looking sheep..... was really able to swallow up the Devious Wyvern?]

[Was Jun Wu Xie really not pulling his leg?]

“But you..... you previously said..... that you lost the match?”
[How did it turn to become Lord Meh Meh swallowing up the Devious Wyvern?]

Jun Wu Xie said: “Lord Meh Meh’s foot stepped off from the platform first.”

Qing Yu very nearly spurted out blood upon hearing that.

It finally dawned on him that when Jun Xie had said that they lost the match, he had not meant that Lord Meh Meh had been defeated by the Devious Wyvern, but it was actually because Lord Meh Meh’s foot had fallen outside the battle stage platform and that was how they lost. And the result of that loss had happened with Lord Meh Meh..... swallowing up the Devious Wyvern!

At that moment, Qing Yu suddenly thought himself hopelessly

naive. He had thought that Lord Meh Meh had been defeated by the Devious Wyvern and assumed the matter to be over and done with. Never could he have ever thought that something so absolutely terrifying had happened after that!

“You can’t go! You must absolutely not turn up for the birthday feast! That person was the one who specifically asked Lin Que to help her locate the Devious Wyvern. Lin Que spent almost ten years’ time before he managed to find it and you can see from that, just how rare the Devious Wyvern is. If you show yourself there, that person will definitely do something to you! That person’s methods are extremely cruel and vicious and she has never cared about consequences. For her to suddenly decide to send this invitation to you, it is obvious that she has malicious intentions behind it. If she really does anything to you at that time, I’m afraid even the Grand Chieftain will not be able to save you.” Qing Yu said, suddenly in a panic.

Qing Yu had not been worried that Jun Xie would really draw the attention of that person but one Devious Wyvern had changed all of that. They all knew that the Devious Wyvern Lin Que possessed was going to be gifted to Qu Xin Rui but it had been swallowed up by Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast. That must have thrown Qu Xin Rui into a rage!

“I’ll go get the Clan Chief immediately! I’ll ask him to get you out of the city!” Qu Yu could not wait another moment longer. He had personally witnessed that person’s cruel ways before. Whoever angered her, would undoubtedly have to repay for it with his life. Even Qu Ling Yue had not dared to show the slightest disrespect before her.

Jun Wu Xie looked at Qing Yu who had worked himself up into such a fluster and she calmly said: “No need.”

Qing Yu retorted: “Young Master Jun! This is no joking matter at all! That person was seeking to possess the Devious Wyvern and you have destroyed it. She would never let you off for that! I know

that you possess very high spirit powers, but that person had already attained the Purple Spirits several decades ago! Her powers now will surely be even more unfathomable. There is no way you can be a match for her.”

Jun Wu Xie then asked: “You really think that she sent this to me here, because she wants to kill me?”

“What else could it be?” Qing Yu then said.

Jun Wu Xie looked at Qing Yu and said in a patient voice: “If she really wanted to kill me, she would have acted immediately upon my return from the Spirit Beast Arena.”

Qing Yu was suddenly at a loss for words.

“Losing the Devious Wyvern, was not a responsibility that Lin Feng would be able to shoulder himself. He would have pleaded for his father to help him at the first instance and Lin Que would not dare to keep the matter under wraps and would have reported it to that person immediately. If that person really wanted to have me killed, she would have already acted by now. Why would she wait till now?” Jun Wu Xie’s eyebrow arched up and she pointed at the invitation card to say: “Do you really think, with her status and position in the Thousand Beast City, to just kill me, she would need to set up such an elaborate and mystifying trap?”

Chapter 1023: “Dangerous Feast (2)”

Jun Wu Xie’s words were like a bucket of cold water thrown upon the highly anxious Qing Yu that calmed him right down.

“Then why would she still send you this invitation?” Jun Wu Xie was right. With Qu Xin Rui’s power and her status in the Thousand Beast City, if she really wanted to kill Jun Xie, she would not need to do it in such a roundabout manner. And moreover, the incident had already passed for quite a time before this invitation was sent here.

“Maybe, she felt that I can be of some use to her.” Jun Wu Xie said expressionlessly. She had never thought that Qu Xin Rui would send an invitation to her, and the reason for that invitation was still not known to her for the moment.

“Then, Young Master Jun, does that mean you will be going?” Qing Yu was still feeling rather worried about it.

“Make a guess.” Jun Wu Xie threw the question back at him and Qing Yu did not say anything else.

If Jun Wu Xie was not going to leave the Thousand Beast City, then she would have to turn up for Qu Xin Rui’s birthday celebrations. But she wasn’t too bothered even if she was to really attend it. As Qu Xin Rui had not immediately made any attempts to kill her, that had told her clearly that Qu Xin Rui would not do anything to her during the birthday feast. She might also be able to find out the reason why she had been invited by attending the banquet.

After thinking the entire matter through, Qing Yu still felt that the entire matter felt too dangerous and he immediately ran to Xiong Ba to discuss it with him.

In the room, Jun Wu Xie was the only person left inside. She sat expressionlessly at the table as she poured herself a drink.

“Young Miss.” The figure of Ye Sha suddenly appeared within the room.

“In the past two days, were there any more people watching the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall?” Jun Wu Xie asked. On the night after Lord Meh Meh swallowed up the Devious Wyvern, Ye Sha had immediately detected that someone had infiltrated the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall deep in the night and hidden himself outside her door to watch her.

And Ye Sha had been able to sense that the man’s spirit energy was at least of the Purple Spirit or higher.

From that moment on, Jun Wu Xie knew that she had alerted the one in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and that person had for consecutive days, sent people to observe her but they had never revealed themselves. Hence, Jun Wu Xie knew that Qu Xin Rui would soon act.

“They had not come in the past two days.” Ye Sha said.

“The things I asked you to do, have they been done?” Jun Wu Xie asked, slightly raising her eyes.

“It’s all done. You can rest assured, Young Miss.”

Jun Wu Xie nodded in satisfaction.

“The man who came here in the past few days, did you manage to assess his power?”

“I managed to get a rough gauge.” Ye Sha replied.

“How does he compare to you?” Jun Wu Xie inquired.

Ye Sha was silent a moment before he said: “Your subordinate will be able to take him down.”

That meant that the opponent’s powers was inferior to Ye Sha’s and the difference wasn’t just by a bit.

Although Ye Sha did not possess any spirit powers, but his battle prowess was somewhat higher than common Purple Spirits. When

she heard Ye Sha's words, Jun Wu Xie was slightly more relieved.

"Young Miss." Ye Sha said suddenly.

Jun Wu Xie acknowledged nonchalantly and raised her cup intending to take sip from it.

"Ye Mei sent news that he will be returning with Young Master Wu Yao in a few days." Ye Sha reported in a low voice.

At that moment, the teacup in Jun Wu Xie's hand wavered, very nearly spilling its contents. Her face was completely expressionless but her fingers moved slightly, the only sign that betrayed her emotions.

"Is that so." She replied without emotion, like she did not care in the slightest.

"Yes. Young Master Wu Yao had also instructed Ye Mei to relay the message asking for the Young Miss to take good care of herself and wait for him to come here." Ye Sha said, reporting the message Ye Mei sent over, word for word.

Jun Wu Xie's eyes lowered, as she looked at her own reflection in the teacup.

"Alright."

Chapter 1024: “Dangerous Feast (3)”

When Xiong Ba knew that Qu Xin Rui had actually sent an invitation to Jun Xie, inviting Jun Xie to attend her birthday banquet, he immediately broke into a rage. He charged with fiery speed straight to Jun Xie’s room and pushed the room door open to declare: “You cannot attend Qu Xin Rui’s banquet!”

Jun Wu Xie seemed like she had been thinking of something and her gaze was solemn. With Xiong Ba’s single loud roar, she immediately recovered her senses and turned to look calmly at the heavily panting Xiong Ba.

“Why?”

“The kind of person Qu Xin Rui is, I know most clearly. For her to invite you for no good reason like this, could not be a good thing for you.” It was still fresh in Xiong Ba’s mind the deeds Qu Xin Rui had committed before. He remembered when Qu Xin Rui first came back to the Thousand Beast City, he was not yet the Fiery Blaze Clan’s Clan Chief. He had been just slightly over twenty years of age and was just the Fiery Blaze Clan’s Deputy Clan Chief. He had a rash temperament while the Fiery Blaze Clan’s Clan Chief was calm, steady, and highly decisive. The Clan Chief was a senior Xiong Ba respected the most.

But after Qu Xin Rui arrived here, she had asked Qu Wen Hao to assist her with the investigation of the Heaven’s End Cliff. From the beginning, no one knew what the bottom of the Heaven’s End Cliff was like at all. The Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City and their four Clan Chiefs saw her as a revered senior of the Thousand Beast City, their protector from the past. Afterall, Qu Xin Rui had brought great glory to the Thousand Beast City before she left and they trusted Qu Xin Rui, believing that a respected senior would not do anything to bring harm to the Thousand Beast City.

Hence, in the initial stages, regardless whether it was the Grand Chieftain or the four Clan Chiefs, they were all willing to help Qu Xin Rui achieve her goals.

But after the first teams from the Thousand Beast City went down to the bottom of the Heaven's End Cliff, the result they gained had been zero survivors. That had been a team of close to one thousand people, formed from the elite of the Thousand Beast City's four clans. Those people had gone to the bottom of the Heaven's End Cliff bearing the trust and reverence for the powerful Purple Spirit but not a single one among them had returned from the bottom of that cliff alive.

The total annihilation shocked the whole Thousand Beast City, for all those who died, were a group of the most precious people to the Thousand Beast City. The Grand Chieftain was heartbroken and aggrieved and the four Clan Chiefs were sad and dispirited. But Qu Xin Rui still did not want to give up, she persuaded and cajoled the people to attempt again, saying that everything had just been an accident and the people who went down the Heaven's End Cliff might still be alive and were waiting for people to go save them.

Because of that, the Thousand Beast City sent out another team of people and the number of people was even doubled.

However, all those people were like a stone that sank into the ocean, to remain at the bottom of the Heaven's End Cliff forever.

Ever since that time, the people of the Thousand Beast City realized that the Heaven's End Cliff was the most dangerous place in the world and the Grand Chieftain was no longer willing to send anymore people to the Heaven's End Cliff, firmly refusing any of Qu Xin Rui's subsequent requests.

It was at that time that Qu Xin Rui completely tore off her mask of pretense, and revealed her real personality, that was one of cruelty and viciousness.

That very night, she brought her henchmen and captured all the

four clan's Clan Chiefs, bringing them to the Grand Chieftain's Residence's main gates. The entire city's people were alerted and before everyone's eyes, they massacred all the four senior Clan Chiefs who were dead against any more expeditions to the Heaven's End Cliff!

The whole Thousand Beast City were overtaken with madness at that moment and at the moment the people were about to retaliate, Qu Xin Rui told them that their family members have been captured and their lives were in her hands. If all of them did not comply to her wishes, then all their family members would become deceased spirits by her knife.

That very night, it was not known how many lost their lives. All those who resisted, the innocent people who were helplessly captured, and all those killed by Qu Xin Rui and her underlings at the gates of the Grand Chieftain's Residence, the blood of all those people, turning the stones outside the Grand Chieftain's Residence a bright red.....

Qu Xin Rui used the most brutal method and most malicious scheme, to make the entire Thousand Beast City, to succumb to her tight grip of control!

Chapter 1025: “Dangerous Feast (4)”

Xiong Ba told Jun Xie all the deeds that Qu Xin Rui had committed in the past and hoped that Jun Xie would give up on his intention of attending the birthday banquet. They had brought Jun Xie to come here and he was the last hope they had to save the Thousand Beast City. The Thousand Beast City was by now unable to sustain any more losses of their people and if even Jun Xie succumbed under the hand of Qu Xin Rui, Xiong Ba did not dare to imagine who else would be able to save them from it all.

“Jun Xie! You must not go!” Xiong Ba boomed as he stared at Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie then said: “If I do not go, are you then going to send me out of the city?”

Xiong Ba was stumped, as he stood frozen in his spot.

“The invitation has already reached me. If I do not go, that was be a snub to her face and she would definitely not tolerate that from me. The only option left for me then would be to leave the Thousand Beast City to escape from all of this. But if I am to leave, will there still be any meaning for me to even come here in the first place?” Jun Wu Xie said as she looked at Xiong Ba. She understood Xiong Ba’s concerns, but the bow had been strung and they had to shoot the arrow.

Xiong Ba fell back into a chair in defeat, his face perplexed.

“That’s right. She will not spare anyone who goes against her wishes. To save you, we will need to send you far away from the Thousand Beast City. With that..... you will not be able to execute any of your plans here.....”

“She will not do anything to me. Or at least, she won’t on the day of the banquet.” Jun Wu Xie said expressionlessly. That was one point she was still fairly confident of.

“Are you really going?” Xiong Ba said, still feeling rather worried.

Jun Wu Xie nodded to him.

“On the day of the banquet, Qing Yu and me will stick close by your side. If anything unexpected comes up, we will do everything in our power to escort you out. If anything really happens at that time, you must leave the Thousand Beast City immediately and never come back.” Xiong Ba said, staring unwaveringly at Jun Xie. They asked Jun Xie to come, not for her to lose her life here. And if the Heavens were to really abandon the Thousand Beast City, they will then have to deal with it on their own.

“Mmm.” Jun Wu Xie did not believe that anything untoward will happen on the day of the banquet and she had responded in agreement only to ease Xiong Ba’s worries.

Xiong Ba sighed heavily, but his face was still looking deeply troubled.

Jun Wu Xie poured him a cup of water and she discreetly slipped a little soothing and calming medicinal powder into the cup. After Xiong Ba gulped it down, he finally managed to calm down a little.

“You must really be on your toes at that time. I know you are surpassingly intelligent and even if I wreck my brains out, I will still pale in comparison to what you can think of.” Xiong Ba reminded as he looked at Jun Xie. If he had not met Jun Xie, he would really find it hard to believe that a young little youth like Jun Xie, could possibly be capable of such careful and meticulous deliberations.

“I will.” Jun Wu Xie agreed.

Xiong Ba had seemingly suddenly transformed into a naggy old man and he warned and reminded Jun Xie repeatedly for a rather long while more, constantly harping on Qu Xin Rui’s temperament and her idiosyncrasies. Only after he emptied out the entire flask

of water did he finally spare Jun Xie and took his leave. From the way it looked when he left, he was definitely going to seek out Qing Yu to continue with his tirade.

The matter about Qu Xin Rui inviting Jun Xie to the banquet, did not really concern Jun Wu Xie too much herself, but it sure threw the Fiery Blaze Clan's Clan Chief and his deputy into a hapless tizzy.

“Mistress seems to be in a rather good mood today.” The little black cat said, looking at Jun Wu Xie. Jun Wu Xie had actually exhibited several rare instances of “humanity” with her warmth and gentle consideration for others, which made the little black cat want to stand up and clap for the immense progress its Mistress had achieved.

“Really?” Jun Wu Xie did not feel any different.

Talking about her mood, Jun Wu Xie raised her eyes and looked out at the scenery outside her window. She was somehow feeling, as she stared into the stretches of green outside, that an all too familiar figure would appear suddenly, his face showing his highly comforting smile as he walked slowly towards her.

[Maybe.....]

[Soon, they will meet again.]

Chapter 1026: “Birthday Banquet (1)”

Time passed and the days went by one at a time. Qu Xin Rui’s birthday was quickly approaching and the batch of people who were to be sent back out of the city would be bidding their families goodbye on the day after the birthday banquet. Torn away from their home soil, and placed back into captivity in that stifling prison.

It was already evening on that day. After Xiong Ba and Qing Yu finished dealing with the clan’s tasks, they immediately went towards Jun Xie’s room. This day, they would be going to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers together, to offer their congratulations to that person for her birthday.

Although it was to be congratulatory, but there wasn’t the slightest tinge of voluntary willingness on Xiong Ba’s face. The congratulatory gift from him was even prepared by Qing Yu. Jun Wu Xie packed up her things and then took out a bottle of elixirs from her Cosmos Sack to hold in her hand.

When Xiong Ba saw the bottle in Jun Xie’s hand, he asked curiously: “What is that?”

“Congratulatory gift.” Jun Wu Xie replied.

Xiong Ba’s eyes widened.

“You have even prepared a congratulatory gift for that old hag?”

Jun Wu Xie’s gaze fell calmly onto the two brocade boxes Qing Yu was carrying.

Xiong Ba’s face turned red and he coughed awkwardly.

“That was prepared by Qing Yu. I am not going to give anything to that old hag. Not a single copper coin.”

Qing Yu looked at Xiong Ba with a bitter laugh. He had not prepared anything, but wouldn’t that mean Qing Yu had to do it

for him?

“Young Master Jun, please do not mind him. Our Clan Chief has always been like this. Making him attend the banquet is no different from pushing him up onto the executioner’s block. For that person’s birthday banquet every year, I have always had to prepare two congratulatory gifts. As Young Master Jun is not from our Thousand Beast City, it will be alright even if you do not bring any gift.”

“This will have to do then.” Jun Wu Xie did not really care for one bottle of elixirs. In her free time in the Thousand Beast City, she had spent it either receiving news from Ye Sha to understand the situation around her, or used it to cultivate elixirs. Just this one bottle of elixirs, was not that hard for her to part with.

Seeing that Jun Xie was insistent, Qing Yu did not say anything more. But Xiong Ba’s face was however still extremely grumpy, just like Qing Yu had said, like he was being sent to the executioner’s.

The three of them left the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, and made their way towards the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

Although it was already evening, the inside of the Thousand Beast City was brightly illuminated by lanterns, and outside every single house, lanterns were hung up, a flush of red lining the streets, which threw a bright red shade of blood, over the entire city against the approaching darkness.

“On her birthday every year, within the entire Thousand Beast City, every house has to hang up red lanterns, to make it appear as if the entire city’s people were celebrating the occasion.” Qing Yu explained to Jun Xie, as they walked through the street, filled with red lanterns.

“It’s all just pure tyranny. If she were to die, every single person within the Thousand Beast City would then voluntarily hang up red lanterns everywhere, in jubilant celebration!” Xiong Ba

grumbled with disdain.

Qing Yu stared at his own clan's Chief and said in a low voice: "No matter how displeased Chief Xiong might be, it is fine if you grumble about it within the Clan Hall. But if anyone out here were to hear it, nothing good will come out of it."

Xiong Ba's mouth twitched. Although he was filled with resentment, he did not say anything more.

Jun Wu Xie looked at all the red lanterns and only found them too dazzling to the eye. She did not bring Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit with her but had locked them up separately in two rooms within the yard. As the little black cat would be coming with her, she had done that to prevent the two dumb beasts from tearing down the entire place while she was gone.

The three people's steps were unhurried, but they still reached the Heavenly Cloud Chambers very quickly.

The seven storeys high Heavenly Cloud Chambers was heavily adorned with banners and lanterns, but the main doors remained tightly shut. Outside those doors, was a group of people already gathered and standing together in wait, who had come to offer their birthday congratulations.

Chapter 1027: “Birthday Banquet (2)”

Among those people, were the Clan Chiefs and their respective Deputies from the two other clans that Jun Wu Xie had not seen before. They saw Xiong Ba walking over and they nodded their heads at him as a form of greeting.

Lin Que and Lin Feng were there too and besides that father and son pair, Shangguan Yan had also followed them here. But the expressions on the faces of those three men did not look the least bit friendly. Since Jun Xie appeared there, Lin Feng’s eyes had been staring viciously and they had not moved away from Jun Xie once.

Jun Wu Xie was not bothered in the least by Lin Feng’s “watchful” eyes and it could even be said..... that Jun Xie did not even pay any heed to whether Lin Feng was even there.

“We will still need to wait a little while, nothing we can do but to wait.” Qing Yu said, staring at the tightly shut doors of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, like he was already used to such situations.

Xiong Ba then whispered to Jun Xie in a low voice: “That old hag does this every time. Everyone must have all arrived first and waited for a while outside these doors before they will be opened up for us to enter.”

Jun Wu Xie nodded slightly.

As everyone continued to wait, Qu Wen Hao and Qu Ling Yue walked in, coming to the front of everyone there and everyone immediately knelt down and greeted: “Grand Chieftain! Young Grand Chief!”

“All rise please. Everyone arrived here early today making me the last one.” Qu Wen Hao’s face was filled with a gentle smile and his features looked rather similar to Qu Ling Yue’s, just with a more

steely resolve. Qu Wen Hao was just barely forty years of age but the hair on both sides of his temple were already streaked with white. Although the smile on his face was gentle, it did not remove the wrinkles of worry at the corners of his eyes.”

Qu Ling Yue stood just behind her father and she nodded in greeting to the various uncles there before her gaze invariably fell onto the figure of Jun Xie standing just beside Xiong Ba. When she saw the figure that would be considered to be not tall, her clear and white face immediately showed a suspicious pink tinge involuntarily. She suddenly felt highly flustered and she immediately lowered her head, her hands tugging at her sleeves self consciously.

Lin Feng’s gaze had immediately upon Qu Ling Yue’s arrival, shifted from Jun Xie onto the figure of Qu Ling Yue. Since Qu Ling Yue came back to the Thousand Beast City, he had only seen her once when she just just entered through the city gates and due to the incident with the Devious Wyvern, he had been grounded at home to reflect on his actions, only having been allowed out of the house just today. Having not had any chances to see Qu Ling Yue for such a long time, Lin Feng had been anticipating to have a good chat with Qu Ling Yue here today but now, the situation had instead turned out like this.

After Qu Ling Yue arrived here, she had not even spared him a single glance, not even from out of the corner of her eyes. Her gaze had been fixed onto Jun Xie all this time and they had even showed the innocent bashfulness of a little girl.

When that shy and bashful gaze was seen by Lin Feng’s eyes, it cut him like a sharp blade had been sliced deeply across his heart.

If it was said that Lin Feng had initially just suspected whether Qu Ling Yue held other intentions towards Jun Xie previously, and he had only just been making a wild guess, then after having seen the kind of gaze that Qu Ling Yue was looking at Jun Xie with today, he was almost totally convinced that Qu Ling Yue’s heart

held affections for Jun Xie!

That was a situation that Lin Feng found absolutely intolerable.

He stared viciously at Jun Xie, wishing to skin Jun Xie alive and break his bones. He really could not understand, just what Qu Ling Yue saw in a boy that was so skinny and ordinary looking.

Jun Xie was obviously inferior to him in every aspect but why had Qu Ling Yue totally disregarded him and instead become fond of that brat?

Unwilling to accept it, a strong jealousy burned up in Lin Feng's chest. His hands clenched into fists and he clenched his jaw, slicing and slashing Jun Xie a thousand times in his mind.

Qu Wen Hao shared a few more polite lines with the various Clan Chiefs and then walked over to stand right before Xiong Ba. He pretended to have his gaze sweep past Xiong Ba unconsciously to fall upon the figure of Jun Xie, like he had suddenly just discovered the youth and said: "This, should be our Little Brother Jun right?"

Chapter 1028: “Birthday Banquet (3)”

Please read on original Translator site at
www.mistyccloudtranslations.com

Jun Wu Xie raised her eyes up to look at Qu Wen Hao. Qu Wen Hao's expression was composed and he exuded the amiable air of a senior, looking just like he was politely asking after a junior with no other implied meaning.

“Jun Xie is humbled, greetings to the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City.” Jun Wu Xie greeted.

Qu Wen Hao then said with a smile: “There's no need for such formalities. I had heard from Ling Yue how well you've taken care of her back in the Fire Country and had even saved my little daughter's life. I had been really too busy lately though I had always wanted to go thank you but did not manage to find an opportunity, and could only let these two gentlemen from the Fiery Blaze Clan receive you as our esteemed guest. I hope Young Master Jun does not take offense.”

“The Grand Chieftain is too kind.” Jun Xie and Qu Wen Hao were smooth in their questions and answers to each other and the conversation between them did not sound strange at all. Nobody would have suspected that Jun Xie and Qu Wen Hao had already agreed to cooperate and work together through Qu Ling Yue.

“Gratitude that has been long overdue must still be said.” Qu Wen Hao said with a laugh as he pulled Qu Ling Yue who was hiding behind him to stand before Jun Xie and said: “Ling Yue, aren't you going to thank Young Master Jun properly?”

Qu Ling Yue's heart had been thumping so loudly and jumping all over the place the very moment she had spotted Jun Xie earlier and she already did not have the courage to look at him again. And now, having been dragged out by her own father so suddenly and placed in such close distance from Jun Xie, so close that it seemed

like she could almost smell the faint fragrance of herbs emanating from Jun Xie.

That scent was not the sickly sweetness of flowers, but a fragrance that initially smelled bitter, but would soon make one feel the smell calms a person down.

But that was a calm, that Qu Ling Yue would not be able to experience.

Suddenly being so close to Jun Xie, Qu Ling Yue had almost unconsciously raised her head. When she found herself suddenly looking into Jun Xie's cold clear eyes, her face turned an even brighter red, her fingers that were clasped tightly together before her twisting up the handkerchief in her hand nervously.

Her almond shaped eyes widened, reflecting the light from the bright lanterns in a shimmer.

"Young..... Young....." Staring at the delicately featured face so close to her, Qu Ling Yue suddenly felt that that face was more attractive than most good looking man under the Heavens by a hundred times. She felt as if the cat had gotten her tongue and she could not speak coherently at all.

Jun Wu Xie's head tilted as she looked at the red faced and highly nervous Qu Ling Yue, feeling rather puzzled in her mind. Ever since Qu Ling Yue had left from her room that day, she thought that Qu Ling Yue had been acting rather strange. And now that she was seeing her again after a few days, Qu Ling Yue's "condition" seemed to have worsened.

Being stared at by Jun Xie like this, Qu Ling Yue was so nervous she was about to cry. She quickly lowered her head into her shoulders and closed her eyes, hurriedly bowing at the waist to express her gratitude towards Jun Xie.

"Thank....."

A loud thud sounded!

Qu Ling Yue's highly flustered bow with her eyes squeezed shut, had sent her head crashing straight onto Jun Wu Xie's shoulder, and a dull thud was heard.

Qu Ling Yue was suddenly feeling dizzy as she saw stars before her eyes, but Jun Wu Xie on the other hand, was perfectly alright.

With Qu Ling Yue's spirit power level, crashing into Jun Wu Xie who was almost breaking into blue, would not have much of an effect on Jun Wu Xie, but to Qu Ling Yue, that had been quite a hard hit.

Seeing that Qu Ling Yue was holding her forehead and was about to fall backwards, Jun Wu Xie reflexively stretched out her hand, and caught Qu Ling Yue by the waist, pulling her back up to stand.

Rushing forward intending to hold up her own daughter who was tilting back, Qu Wen Hao was suddenly stunned, as he stared blankly at Jun Xie "embracing" Qu Ling Yue in his arm, and his face stiffened for an instant.

And secretly watching Qu Ling Yue and Jun Xie from a distance, Lin Feng had upon seeing that scene, clenched his fists hidden within his sleeves so hard they were making crackling noises, wishing in his heart that he could fly over that distance, and slice off that arm of Jun Xie's looped around Qu Ling Yue!

Chapter 1029: “Birthday Banquet (4)”

Please support by reading on original Translator's site at www.mistycloudtranslations.com

Qu Ling Yue's mind was in a whirl and it was a while before she managed to regain her senses. And when she opened her eyes to look, she nearly fainted away in shock once more.

[She..... She..... She was actually..... In Jun Xie's..... arms!]

In that instant, Qu Ling Yue's mind went completely blank. She was in a hapless fluster as she struggled to “escape” out of Jun Xie's embrace, her face flushed a bright red, her expression almost tearing up, so embarrassed she almost sobbed on the spot.

“.....” Jun Wu Xie looked at Qu Ling Yue, feeling greatly puzzled, as she was confronted by such a reaction like she had not seen before.

She had just reached out reflexively, and because both her and Qu Ling Yue were girls, she thought that there wasn't anything to it.

However, Jun Wu Xie had forgotten that she was at that moment, dressed as a boy. Her actions earlier, had not just to Qu Ling Yue alone, but had also made Qu Wen Hao, Xiong Ba, and Qing Yu show strange looks on their faces.

Especially Xiong Ba, the look he was looking at Jun Wu Xie with was looking a little ambiguous.

“Cough, thank you Young Master Jun.” Qu Wen Hao said, glancing at Qu Ling Yue who had run to hide behind him with a swoosh. Although he had just met Jun Xie, but he highly admired Jun Xie's steady and calm demeanor. When he saw the bumbling bashfulness his own daughter was exhibiting at that moment, as one who had been through it himself, how could Qu Wen Hao not know what kind of thoughts Qu Ling Yue was hiding?

But.....

Jun Xie's cold and indifferent personality made it very hard for people to tell whether he felt the same way towards Qu Ling Yue.

But if they really had similar feelings for each other, Qu Wen Hao would be glad if that was the case. Having heard both Xiong Ba and Qu Ling Yue both praising Jun Xie to the skies, and after having seen the youth in the flesh, Qu Wen Hao was highly satisfied with what he saw.

Besides being just a little small in size, they was nothing else not to like about the boy.

But youths like them were still not fully grown up and the boy would require another round of review sooner or later.

Jun Wu Xie would never in her dreams have thought, her earlier simple act of assistance, would stir up such a big issue, that would cause Qu Wen Hao to start seeing her as a "prospective son-in-law". If she knew Qu Wen Hao's thoughts then, it would have driven Jun Wu Xie completely speechless.

Qu Ling Yue was feeling so highly embarrassed that she was not able to even look at Jun Xie at all. She stood panting slightly behind Qu Wen Hao, her mouth slightly parted, her limpid eyes covered over with a shimmering sheen of tears.

[What had she just done?]

[Why must she do something so embarrassing in front of Jun Xie?]

[Young Master Jun would surely despise her now!]

The heart of the Young Miss of the Thousand Beast City was almost on the verge of breaking down.

Lin Feng discreetly observed Qu Ling Yue's reaction, hating Jun Xie right down to the bones. His eyes were red and bloodshot with suppressed rage, holding it down with every single ounce of his

willpower, that was stopping him from charging straight at the youth.

Just at that moment, the doors of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers opened slowly. A good looking young man dressed in red clothes stood inside with his chin slightly lifted as his gaze swept over the crowd of people waiting outside.

“The Great Aunt has ordered that all of you can go in now.” Immediately after saying that, he turned and went inside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers without saying another word, like he was oblivious to the identities of all the men standing outside.

In regards to the favoured man’s arrogance and impudence, the group of men reacted like they were already used to such treatment, and none of them said a word about it.

Qu Wen Hao nudged Qu Ling Yue and Qu Ling Yue went red faced, taking one step towards the doors of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. She lowered her head as she slowly came before the doors and knelt down. “Ling Yue sends her greetings to the Great Grand Aunt and I wish Great Grandaunt happiness as great as the East Sea, longevity like the Southern Mountains.”

There wasn’t a single sign of anyone behind those open doors, and there wasn’t a single sound that came back.

Chapter 1030: “Birthday Banquet (5)”

Please support by reading on original Translator's site at www.mistyccloudtranslations.com

There wasn't a single sign of anyone behind those open doors, and there wasn't a single sound that came back.

After Qu Ling Yue finished her greetings, she knelt there a moment longer before she got up and said to her father: “Father, I'll head on home first.”

Qu Wen Hao nodded.

Qu Ling Yue then secretly stole a glance at Jun Xie before she departed from the place.

Jun Wu Xie's brow lifted slightly and Qing Yu beside her said softly: “The Heavenly Cloud Chambers does not allow any females to come near as Qu Xin Rui detests girls. So, not even the Young Miss is allowed to enter. On her birthday every year, the Young Miss is made to kneel before the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and convey her well wishes like this.”

Having a junior pay respects and send their well wishes to a senior was nothing strange.

But when it was done like how Qu Ling Yue did it, when there was no sign of anyone before her and she was made to kneel at the doors, that was something completely unheard of.

Jun Wu Xie sneered in her heart, but did not let it show on her face.

“Gentlemen, please.” Qu Wen Hao turned around and said to everyone, as they all made their way into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

Inside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, lavish extravagance exuded from every single corner. After Qu Xin Rui revealed her

true nature, she went completely unrestrained. She asked Qu Wen Hao to move all the treasures in the Thousand Beast City into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and even the account books of the Thousand Beast City were to be scrutinised by her every month. Every single precious item the people of the city received need to be declared and checked by her, and if it suited her, it would be confiscated and the people would not be compensated with a single copper.

Such extortion and unreasonable seizure, blatantly disregarded the feeling of the people. The citizens of the Thousand Beast City moaned and complained, but before Qu Xin Rui's tyrannical powers, the people had no choice but to swallow back their grouses.

Ever since she had been reborn, this was the most vile person Jun Wu Xie had met, blatantly abusing the people, and not bothering to hide her actions in the slightest.

Such arrogance and impunity, relied only on the fact that Qu Xin Rui had attained her Purple Spirit many years ago, and that she had gone to the Middle Realm. In Qu Xin Rui's eyes, people in the Lower Realm, were no longer fit to be called humans at all.

All the people from the Middle Realm's Twelve Palaces whom she had encountered and seen before, gave Jun Wu Xie this same feeling. In the eyes of those people from the Middle Realm, the lives of people in the Lower Realm were as worthless as insects, where they could kill as they wanted, beat up as they wished, never once seeing the people here as human at all.

Although the Middle Realm was powerful, but that was not what made them behave so imperiously and act completely without any scruples.

Jun Wu Xie lowered her gaze, where she took her eyes off the interior of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

The little black cat was snuggled inside Jun Wu Xie's arms, the

tip of its nose quivering slightly, its eyes suddenly flashed with a strange glint.

When everyone came to the top floor of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, they saw the entire room adorned with blood red sheer silk, the white fox skin rugs that covered the floor entirely were scattered with rose petals, and an alluring fragrance permeated the surrounding air. A group of good looking young men dressed in light and thin clothes were seated on one side playing music while another group of men with their clothes not covering their bodies completely were kneeling around the long lounge chair.

Upon the long lounge, Qu Xin Rui was dressed in a bright red dress, her long elegant shapely legs faintly discernable under the dress, one foot held in the hands of an effeminate looking man, kissing it gently.

Qu Xin Rui's head was rested on one hand as she leaned back upon the lounge chair. When she saw the group of men walking in, she did not get up in the slightest. Her legs exposed to the sight of the men merely shifted slightly, further revealing more flesh, without showing the slightest sense of shame.

However, all the men in the group did not dare cast another glance her way, but fell down to their knees, to offer their greetings.

Only Jun Wu Xie alone, stood upright among them.

Chapter 1031: “Birthday Banquet (6)”

“Our respects to the Great Aunt.” Under the chorus of greetings from the group of men, Jun Wu Xie stood unmoving from her spot, and Qu Xin Rui’s gaze fell upon the youth.

The devilish looking pair of eyes swept over the figure of Jun Xie standing conspicuously in front, and Qu Xin Rui’s eyes narrowed slightly, her lips curling up into a faint smile.

She had sent people to investigate into Jun Xie’s background prior to this and had seen a portrait of the youth. She had thought that the figure in the portrait could at most be seen as delicately attractive looking and Qu Xin Rui had been rather disappointed. But when she saw Jun Xie in the flesh now, she was suddenly pleasantly surprised.

The face that still did not yet show full maturity was though not exactly outstanding, but upon that not too exceptional looking face, it was graced with a pair of eyes that captured your soul!

Like the icy waters of winter lakes, chilling and deep.

Having been used to seeing good looking young men around her, Qu Xin Rui was in that instant immediately attracted by Jun Xie’s eyes.

Qu Xin Rui completely ignored all the others who were kneeling upon the ground and just stared at Jun Xie standing upright before her and said: “Will this Young Master here, be the one that the others here address as Jun Xie?”

Jun Wu Xie looked at Qu Xin Rui. Qu Xin Rui was gorgeous looking and her skin was smooth and firm. She could not find a single sign of aging no matter where she looked. However you looked at her, she would be at most just slightly over twenty years old. But the age she looked like, was not even a fraction of her actual real age.

Jun Wu Xie knew that upon attaining the Purple Spirit, a person's looks would recover some of the aging slightly, but that slight change would not be enough to let a saggy old woman regain their youth completely, to turn into a twenty year old young lady in her prime.

When Qu Xin Rui attained her Purple Spirit, her hair had already turned completely white and she was an old granny close to a hundred years old. But when she came back to the Thousand Beast City, she had transformed into an gorgeous looking young lady of twenty something, her looks no different from how she looked when she was younger. But that drastic change, had instead seemed very strange.

Jun Wu Xie narrowed her eyes slightly, and said in an unaffected tone: "The humble Jun Xie, wishes Miss Qu good health."

To make Jun Wu Xie address Qu Xin Rui as a Great Aunt, you might as well kill her then.

Jun Xie's address of Miss Qu, almost caused Qu Wen Hao and the rest kneeling upon the ground to suffer a heart attack. In the entire Thousand Beast City, no one had dared address Qu Xin Rui in that manner!

Lin Feng was secretly sniggering in his heart, waiting to see Qu Xin Rui show her rage against Jun Xie for that disrespect.

However, Qu Xin Rui had after a brief pause of surprise, suddenly laughed out loud. That sound had not exhibited the slightest tinge of rage but had instead been filled with delight.

"Young Master Jun is really good with his words. At my age, how can I be addressed as a Miss? The term, Miss, has not been heard by me for over a hundred years." The corners of Qu Xin Rui's mouth were curled up in a smile, the ends of her eyes lifted slightly, seemingly in a rather good mood.

Under the Heavens, not a single female would be pleased to be

addressed to be older than they were. Even Qu Xin Rui who was already an old woman over a hundred years old but had changed her appearance to look like this, removing all signs of age and the passage of time from her body, would be deemed a person highly concerned about her looks and age.

And Jun Wu Xie's address of her as a Miss, had made Qu Xin Rui highly pleased, instead of anger.

Although Jun Wu Xie did not know much about interaction between people, but she had heard that women usually had such a preference from someone.

“When I heard that Wen Hao had praised you as being young and highly talented, and that you cured the lass Ling Yue's injuries, as their senior, I had naturally wanted to thank you. If Young Master Jun does not mind, then come sit here beside me.” Qu Xin Rui raised up a hand slightly, pointing at a low table nearest to her.

Chapter 1032: “Birthday Banquet (7)”

Jun Wu Xie did not decline but walked over on her own and sat down at the low table beside Qu Xin Rui. All the favoured men serving Qu Xin Rui cast Jun Xie a look, their eyes filled with disdain.

Seeing Jun Xie sitting down at the table, Qu Xin Rui then turned her attention to the group of men still kneeling upon the ground.

“All of you rise.” She said lazily.

Qu Wen Hao and the rest of them finally got up, and found themselves places to sit down at.

Lin Feng stared at Jun Xie. He had thought that Qu Xin Rui would throw a fit at the youth impudence and had not expected for Jun Xie to be treated so cordially, to even be granted a seat right beside Qu Xin Rui.

It must be known, that that seat had never been occupied by Qu Wen Hao, but was always taken by Lin Que, his father. The treatment that Jun Xie had been showered with was equivalent to Jun Xie having usurped his father’s position.

Lin Feng still could not understand after thinking it through, not understanding why Qu Xin Rui had suddenly become so forgiving. His father had told him that he was coming here to see Qu Xin Rui to pin all the blame for the incident with the Devious Wyvern upon Jun Xie’s head. But when Lin Que returned home, he had only continued to ground him and asked him to reflect on his own actions, refusing to mention another word about it. Lin Feng had assumed that Qu Xin Rui had dealt with Jun Xie at that time but when he saw Jun Xie appear at the banquet today, he realised he had been mistaken.

The fact that Qu Xin Rui had not pursued the matter for the loss with him, he could still attribute it to his father’s favoured

position with Qu Xin Rui, which had persuaded Qu Xin Rui to spare him in leniency. But who does Jun Xie think he is? On what basis should the tyrannical Qu Xin Rui let that nobody off that easily? To the extent that she was even being so cordial to Jun Xie today?

Unwilling to accept that Jun Xie had stolen all the limelight, Lin Feng immediately stood up. He lifted his wine glass and said to Qu Xin Rui: "Greetings to the Great Aunt, Lin Feng would like to convey well wishes to the Great Aunt on her birthday, wishing Great Aunt fortune, longevity and good health every single year."

Qu Xin Rui's attention was fixed on Jun Xie and with the sudden toast from Lin Feng, she snapped back to her senses.

Lin Feng possessed rather outstanding looks and Qu Xin Rui always had a weakness towards good looking men, which made her a little more accommodating towards Lin Feng.

"Little Feng grew a little taller this year, and you are looking more and more outstanding. That little mouth of yours seems as if it had been smeared with honey." Qu Xin Rui said with a smile.

Lin Feng was secretly gladdened in his heart and he downed the glass of wine in one gulp.

Qu Xin Rui drank a cup as well but upon putting her wine cup down, her gaze went back to looking at Jun Xie.

"I heard that Young Master Jun has a Spirit Beast, and it is a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast that is rare to see even in a hundred years. That is really impressive, so why did our little Young Master Jun not bring it here today?"

Jun Wu Xie replied: "That beast is too rowdy."

Qu Xin Rui laughed. "It might be a little too rowdy indeed. I previously heard that little Young Master Jun had brought that Spirit Beast to the Spirit Beast Arena and created quite a stir. But Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts are all proud magnificent beasts

impossible to harness and the fact that little Young Master Jun is able to tame it is an extraordinary feat by itself. All below the Guardian Grade are useless and it's such a pity for that Devious Wyvern of mine. I had actually other uses for it and I did not think that it would be brought to the Spirit Beast Arena, where it ended up being swallowed up by your own Spirit Beast entirely, without even leaving any of its bones behind."

Qu Xin Rui looked mournfully at Jun Xie and although her real age was already over a century, but as her looks were still gorgeous and youthful, her mannerisms were highly alluring. It was a little more genteel than younger looking girls, and those eyes slightly lifted at the corners moving together with the movement of her irises, was a gaze that seemingly would be able to ensnare a man.

Instead, Jun Wu Xie just said: "I just got to this place and I did not know that the Devious Wyvern belonged to Miss Qu. I only saw that it was brought in by a young youth who came up to challenge me and I just accepted it."

Lin Feng had not thought that Qu Xin Rui would bring up the topic about the Devious Wyvern at that moment and when he heard Jun Xie answer the way he did, his heart suddenly sank.

Chapter 1033: “Birthday Banquet (8)”

Before this, Lin Que had made Lin Feng collaborate their statements and when he had come to report the matter to Qu Xin Rui, Lin Que had pinned the entire blame for the incident onto Jun Xie. They had thought that Qu Xin Rui would not pursue the matter any further after that and they had gotten away scot free. But Qu Xin Rui had suddenly brought up the matter now and Jun Xie had replied in such a manner.....

Lin Feng was immediately feeling highly worried. If Qu Xin Rui started to become suspicious on whether his father had spoken the truth, and found out that he had actually been the one who had arranged for the Devious Wyvern to be brought in to stir up trouble with Jun Xie, it would become extremely hard for him to answer for it.

When Qu Xin Rui heard what Jun Xie said, her eyes narrowed up and her gaze swept over to Lin Feng who had his head lowered and his entire body completely tensed up. She did not say anything to him but turned back to Jun Xie and said smilingly: “It must have all been an understanding. Although the Devious Wyvern was highly precious to me, but since it is now gone, then it’s gone, and Young Master Jun does not have to feel guilty about it. But I am wondering, after your Spirit Beast swallowed up the Devious Wyvern, did it show any strange reactions? The Devious Wyvern is no ordinary Spirit Beast and its unique abilities is not known by the average person.”

Jun Wu Xie’s expression changed a little. Qu Xin Rui’s words did not feel like she was trying to find fault with her but was instead expressing goodwill. It was a sign that Qu Xin Rui wasn’t going to pursue the matter any further and from the words that Qu Xin Rui had earlier said in their conversation, Jun Wu Xie realised that Qu Xin Rui was even thinking of telling her about the Devious Wyvern’s unique ability!

In regards to the Devious Wyvern, Jun Wu Xie did not know much about it, but she had been able to make a rather accurate deduction that the Devious Wyvern was not just any ordinary Spirit Beast.

Or, why would it be able to induce these people from the mighty Twelve Palaces to make a move on it, and cause the Soaring Serpent and the golden seed within her body to stir so restlessly?

The Soaring Serpent wanted the Devious Wyvern, and it had been very anxious about it.

Jun Wu Xie had felt that the Soaring Serpent had not truthfully revealed the entire truth and since Qu Xin Rui was seemingly willing to clear the doubts for her, what reason would she have to refuse?

“My Spirit Beast had not shown any unusual reactions recently but if Miss Qu is willing to instruct me a little, the humble Jun Xie would listen most attentively.” Having sensed that Qu Xin Rui was showing goodwill towards her, and although Jun Wu Xie did not know the reason behind it, she at least knew this.....

If someone was so eager to offer assistance, why shouldn't she accept?

Qu Xin Rui saw that Jun Xie was hooked and she continued on to say with a smile: “The Devious Wyvern molts its scales a total of three times in its life. In the beginning, the Devious Wyvern is merely just a high grade Spirit Beast. But after its repeated molting of its scales, it will be promoted to become a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. Throughout the world, an ability like this is unique only to this Spirit Beast. Does little Young Master Jun know from where did the Devious Wyvern gets this special ability from?”

Jun Wu Xie shook her head.

Qu Xin Rui said: “According to legend, it is said that the Devious Wyvern is a Spirit Beast born from all spiritual bodies in both

Heaven and Earth and it is born with a spirit stronger than its mortal flesh. Every time it molts its scales, its mortal flesh would undergo a round of shock. The Devious Wyvern's spirit is different from other Spirit Beasts and it is rumoured that within the Devious Wyvern's spirit, a mystifying power lays hidden, a power that would enable humans to gain an entryway that leads to the Spirit World.....”

“Spirit World?” Jun Wu Xie was slightly surprised. That term was not strange to her as Little Lotus had mentioned it a few times. But Little Lotus had not spoken very clearly about it and Jun Wu Xie had only been able to get a good guess out of it. The Spirit World should be the realm that ring spirits reside in before they are awakened.

Jun Wu Xie had not thought that she would ever hear the words, Spirit World, coming out from Qu Xin Rui's mouth!

“The Spirit World. That was a place that nobody had gone to before. Only spirits are allowed to enter that place.” Qu Xin Rui was smiling faintly, her fingertips lightly brushing over her chest, her demeanor looking highly alluring!

Chapter 1034: “Birthday Banquet (9)”

“Someone had once said. If a person was able to devour a Devious Wyvern’s spirit, then that person would be able to breakthrough those barriers and possess more ring spirits.” Qu Xin Rui said, her eyes slightly narrowed up. The Devious Wyvern only existed in the Lower Realm and she herself had only gotten to know about it when she heard it mentioned by an Elder in the Soul Return Palace, which had made her ask Lin Que to seek out the Devious Wyvern here in the Lower Realm.

Powerful ring spirits, would at any time, regardless of the time and place, to absolutely anyone, be an irresistible temptation.

The Lord of the Soul Return Palace had once tried to seek for the Devious Wyvern in the Lower Realm but had not managed to find it. Qu Xin Rui had actually intended to gift the Devious Wyvern that Lin Que had found to the Palace Lord and win for herself even bigger rewards.

Unexpectedly, the Devious Wyvern had been swallowed up by a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast!

Fortunately the Devious Wyvern was something that Qu Xin Rui had only wanted to do as a secondary task at her convenience and the first and foremost task she sought to achieve was actually to locate the Dark Emperor’s tomb. If she did not know that Jun Xie was the Fire Country’s ruling Emperor, she would have immediately torn the youth into pieces right at the beginning!

Jun Wu Xie was greatly shocked in her heart, but her face was still completely calm.

[Devouring the Devious Wyvern’s spirit would gain one an entryway into the Spirit World? And win them more ring spirits?]

That piece of information startled Jun Wu Xie with a rather big shock and she immediately understood why the Soaring Serpent

had been so anxious to get the Devious Wyvern. The Soaring Serpent must have known about the secret of the Devious Wyvern and it had wanted the Devious Wyvern, not to heal its own spirit, but to actually find a way to get out of Jun Wu Xie's body!

If she had not heard Qu Xin Rui's words here today, Jun Wu Xie would not have been able to be certain of the Soaring Serpent's motives, but it was now all clear to her!

[It was truly a sly and cunning beast.]

Jun Wu Xie laughed coldly in her heart.

"But what a pity, the Devious Wyvern was swallowed up by your Spirit Beast. If it had been devoured by you, maybe little Young Master Jun might really be able to get another ring spirit in the future!" Qu Xin Rui said smilingly. Although that was what she was saying through her mouth, that was completely not what she was thinking in her heart.

To want to devour the spirit of a Spirit Beast was not such an easy task. The little Emperor was merely someone from the Lower Realm and even if he got the Devious Wyvern, and knew of the Devious Wyvern's secret, he would definitely still be unable to devour the Devious Wyvern's spirit.

"Miss Qu must be joking. How can a person possibly devour a Spirit Beast's spirit?" Jun Wu Xie replied expressionlessly, but the calm in her heart was already stirring slightly.

[The average person, might not be able to devour spirit bodies.]

[But as for her.....]

[It was an entirely different matter!]

[Everytime she broke through her spirit power levels, hadn't she always done it through the devouring of ring spirits?]

[Ring spirits were by themselves the same as spirit bodies!]

There were still some doubts in Jun Wu Xie's heart, and she still

did not dare to be certain about it. After all, what had been melded into her body was the Devious Wyvern's spirit stone and not a spirit body in its spiritual form. Spirit Beasts differed from ring spirits and spirits were ephemeral bodies that were formless. Unless special methods could be employed, it was something that was very hard to gather and collect.

Even Jun Wu Xie herself did not know, whether after having absorbed the Devious Wyvern's spirit stone, it would give her the same effects.

Lin Feng had remained in his seat with his head lowered all this while, but in his heart, a fiery rage was burning inside. Hearing the light hearted conversation between Jun Xie and Qu Xin Rui, Jun Xie's voice was grating on his ears so hard he could almost not remain sitting there another moment more.

[Why?]

[Why does everyone think Jun Xie is so great?]

[He is just a youth who had popped up out of nowhere! Why does everyone think so highly of him?]

[Qu Ling Yue did that, and now even Qu Xin Rui was doing the very same thing!]

Lin Feng clenched his jaw so tightly together they were hurting but he did not dare to create a ruckus during Qu Xin Rui's birthday banquet, and could do nothing but to push down the jealous rage eating at him in his chest.

[He just could not accept the fact. That a kid from out of town had come in and stolen all his limelight, and he could not bear to see before his very own eyes, Jun Xie becoming so close to Qu Xin Rui!]

Chapter 1035: “Birthday Banquet (10)”

Qu Xin Rui and Jun Xie looked to be on amicable terms, which made the other people in the banquet feel a little more or less puzzled and confused about it.

“It’s fate that let us meet and since little Young Master Jun came to my Thousand Beast City as a guest, then you are a guest of the entire Thousand Beast City.” Qu Xin Rui said with a smile, before her gaze shifted slightly, to look at Lin Feng whose face was looking highly gloomy. “Little Feng, any previous misunderstandings you had with little Young Master Jun had better be resolved today. Shouldn’t you just take this opportunity during my birthday banquet today and offer Young Master Jun a toast?”

Upon saying that, Qu Xin Rui got someone to bring two cups of fine wine and placed them before Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s face immediately showed a trace of shock!

[Qu Xin Rui wants him to apologise to Jun Xie with a toast? ?]

Lin Feng could not believe what his own ears were hearing. He could ignore it if Qu Xin Rui merely didn’t pursue the previous transgressions with Jun Xie, or even the fact that she was being so cordial towards Jun Xie today. But..... now she wanted him to apologise to Jun Xie whom he hated so much that he wished he could tear into pieces? How was that possible! ?

Lin Feng hated Jun Xie so badly in his heart and he was now expected to make an apology toast before everyone here. Humiliated to such an extent, how was Lin Feng supposed to tolerate that?

Seeing that Lin Feng was showing such a dark face, his fists so tightly clenched up, a trace of displeasure came onto Qu Xin Rui’s face. Lin Que noticed the look of discontent on Qu Xin Rui’s face

and he was suddenly startled as he quickly pulled his son's sleeve discreetly, which told him to follow what Qu Xin Rui told him to do.

Lin Feng gritted his teeth tightly and he glared balefully at the two cups of wine before him, his eyes showing his strong reluctance.

A moment later, all traces of dark gloominess suddenly disappeared from Lin Feng's face, and looking like he had completely forgotten all his prejudices against Jun Xie, he suddenly smiled and got up, carrying the two cups of wine as he strode with wide steps over to Jun Xie.

The sudden change that had come over Lin Feng surprised everybody and Qu Xin Rui looked rather pleased.

With everyone watching him, Lin Feng held the two cups of wine in his hands, a strange smile on his face. At the very instant he turned, with the fingertip on one of his hands, he wiped it around the rim of one of the wine cups lightly unnoticed.

"Young Master Jun. All the things I did before were due to my immature youth and brashness. If I have caused any offence, I hope that Young Master Jun does not mind it." Lin Feng said with a highly insincere smile, as he pushed one of the cup of wine before Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie lifted an eyebrow and looked at Lin Feng whose demeanor had suddenly changed completely, her cold gaze eyeing the cup of wine that Lin Feng had pushed over to her.

Just as everyone was thinking that Jun Xie was still unwilling to forgive Lin Feng, Jun Xie suddenly stood up, and took the wine cup from his hand.

"Since it's all just a misunderstanding, then it's all right now." Upon saying that, Jun Wu Xie lifted the offered cup of wine and emptied the cup with her head thrown back.

Lin Feng watched Jun Xie at the instant that he downed the wine from the cup, and his eyes shone with undisguised malice, before he drank the cup in his own hand.

“In regards to what happened before, I have been partially at fault as well. Since Young Clan Chief Lin is so big hearted about it, I cannot be so reserved.” Lin Feng had fully intended to go back to his seat but Jun Xie had already waved at the servants holding the wine flasks at the side.

The servants brought the wine flask over and Jun Wu Xie nonchalantly picked up the wine flask to fill up her own cup, before lifting her chin slightly, to similarly fill up the cup in Lin Feng’s hand.

Lin Feng looked at Jun Xie with his brows creased together. [Did the youth discover it?]

But thinking back about it, he had done it so secretly it was impossible that Jun Xie would suspect anything before he erased the doubts from his mind.

“A cup of wine finished, all in the past is past.” Jun Wu Xie lifted her hand, and led by pouring the wine down her throat first.

Chapter 1036: “Cooperation (1)”

Lin Feng laughed coldly to himself inside, but on his face, he was smiling as he gulped the wine down.

Qu Xin Rui looked at Jun Xie. Seeing that Jun Xie was being so receptive, she was rather pleased.

Although Jun Xie's looks was not really comparable to the men serving her in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, but just that pair of eyes, and the Fire Country behind him, really suited him to Qu Xin Rui's tastes.

“Come, drink up.” Qu Xin Rui said highly satisfied.

Lin Feng retreated quietly back to his seat with a highly suspicious smile hanging upon his face. His gaze fell quietly upon Jun Xie, somewhat anxious and seemingly tinged with anticipation.

The entire banquet, had turned into one where the rest of the people had blended into the background when all of Qu Xin Rui's words were directed only towards Jun Xie alone.

Even if Jun Wu Xie was really that dumb, she would still be able to see that Qu Xin Rui was actually trying to win her over. But that realisation had come rather suddenly and she could not think why Qu Xin Rui would want to win her favour.

When the banquet was about halfway through, Qu Xin Rui saw that the time was ripe and she said: “Our little Young Master Jun has just recently ascended to rulership and you have immediately come to our Thousand Beast City. It would seem to me that you hold quite a bit of interest in the Thousand Beast City as well. My Thousand Beast City might not be on par in terms of might with some other countries but we are still able to hold our own in this region. Our little Young Master Jun might have already gained significant and decisive status and position but youth is highly

fleeting and one does not live forever. If I am to tell you that one is able to gain an immortal body and enjoy unending life, what would our little Young Master Jun have to say to that?”

Jun Wu Xie narrowed her eyes slightly as she felt that the chill in Qu Xin Rui’s words to be rather strange. She appeared unmoved as she said: “Within Heaven and Earth, everything is already destined.”

Qu Xin Rui laughed at that and replied: “As long as one is powerful enough, one does not worry about being unable to defy the Heavens and changing one’s destiny. Little Young Master Jun addresses me as Miss Qu, would you happen to know my actual age?”

Jun Wu Xie answered. “Looks to be in your prime, about twice in tens.”

Qu Xin Rui gave a light laugh, her gaze swinging over to Qu Wen Hao. “Little Young Master Jun says such sweet things. Do you realise that even the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City needs to address me as Great Aunt when he sees me? The age that you guessed, I’m afraid even if you take the first digit off my actual age, it’s still a dozen years or so older than your guess.”

“Really?” Jun Wu Xie feigned shock.

Qu Xin Rui nodded. “Over a century old but still able to maintain the looks of one being in her twenties. Isn’t little Young Master Jun moved by all this?”

Jun Wu Xie replied: “If one could be just like Miss Qu, anybody would naturally be moved.”

Attaining the Purple Spirit can extend a person’s life, but in terms of the changes to one’s looks, it would never reach such an extent like Qu Xin Rui’s had. She had discreetly observed Qu Xin Rui earlier and saw that Qu Xin Rui’s looks were real and not altered by any known methods.

Qu Xin Rui's eyes flashed with glee and she said slowly: "We seemed to have hit it off really well and I wonder if little Young Master Jun is willing to work together with me. We can cooperate on a grand task and after we succeed, I will naturally then be able to grant little Young Master Jun anything he wishes."

Upon hearing those words spoken by Qu Xin Rui, everyone within the banquet went silent with shock.

Everyone had understood the meaning behind Qu Xin Rui's words. It was clear that she wanted to cooperate with Jun Xie and was even willing to offer him the power of the Purple Spirit in exchange!

Since time immemorial, the Purple Spirit itself had been an irresistible draw to anyone and almost no one had been able to resist such great temptation!

Sitting on the other side, Qu Wen Hao's heart had risen up to be lodged at his throat. From what Qu Ling Yue had told him, he had gathered that the reason Jun Xie had been willing to help them was only because of the map in Qu Xin Rui's hands. And now Qu Xin Rui was offering to work together with Jun Xie, which would undoubtedly be to trace the location indicated upon the very map that the youth sought, and even offering the power of a Purple Spirit in exchange. No matter from which perspective he looked at it, Jun Xie would have more to gain in every way by choosing to cooperate with Qu Xin Rui instead!

Qu Wen Hao's heart was filled with endless worry, but he could not afford to reveal the slightest sign of it.

Chapter 1037: “Suffer Your Own Consequences (1)”

Qu Wen Hao was helplessly nervous. And when Lin Feng heard those words spoken, his eyes widened up, filled with pure disbelief.

[Qu Xin Rui was even willing to use the Purple Spirit in exchange for Jun Xie’s help?]

[Why?]

[Even if Jun Xie had a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, that was still no reason for Qu Xin Rui to think so highly of that brat!]

Lin Feng suddenly felt that it was all so unfair. His father had tried so hard to please Qu Xin Rui but he had gotten nothing in return. But Jun Xie here had caused Qu Xin Rui to lose the Devious Wyvern and was not even subservient to Qu Xin Rui. So, based on what was Jun Xie entitled to have all these good things happen to him?

Lin Feng suddenly felt his blood within himself surge and all the unfair treatment his heart had had to endure was growing furiously, fanned by a fiery fire that had appeared in his heart, all the rage and jealousy that he had been trying so hard to suppress exploded.

Before Jun Xie could open his mouth to reply, Lin Feng stood up suddenly. His face was flushed fiery red, looking like he had gotten himself drunk.

“Great Aunt! Jun Xie is merely a kid who came from outside our city. What make him qualified enough to cooperate with our Thousand Beast City? He merely possesses a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast but so what? If Great Aunt wants it, I can kill him anytime and deliver the Guardian Grade Spirit Beast right before you!” Lin Feng blurted out in sudden rage!

Lin Feng’s words threw the entire banquet into silence in an

instant. All the favoured men at the side who were playing music stared in horror as they looked at Lin Feng who had the audacity to spout such nonsense spuriously right before Qu Xin Rui.

Lin Que immediately saw that the situation was dire and the smile had completely disappeared from Qu Xin Rui's face. He hurriedly reached out his hand to stop Lin Feng but Lin Feng flung his father's hand away!

Jun Wu Xie's body leaned back slightly as she toyed with the wine glass in her hand, and her eyes glinted with an icy chill as she stared at Lin Feng "explode".

Lin Feng seemed to have lost all control of his rage as he pointed at Jun Xie and said to Qu Xin Rui: "Great Aunt, what's so good about this person? He is just milking the one fact that he possesses a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. If Great Aunt wishes to have that Spirit Beast, I can help you get it! Once Jun Xie dies, everything will no longer be a problem. Besides the fact that he has that Spirit Beast, does he have any other desirable traits?"

"You shut that mouth!" Seeing that rage was already showing on Qu Xin Rui's face, Lin Que's heart was shivering with fright. He shot up to stand with a swoosh and slapped his own son across the face, hitting Lin Feng who was jabbering incessantly right onto the ground.

"May Great Aunt forgive him! My useless son has had too much too drink and he blurted out that nonsense unintentionally. I beg that Great Aunt would not take it to heart, and forgive him on account that he is just a child." Lin Que quickly pleaded for mercy fearfully.

The darkened expression on Qu Xin Rui's face did not improve in the slightest.

Qing Yu who was watching from the side was shocked beyond words. Although Lin Feng personality was rather arrogant and self conceited, but he had always at least known how to act

appropriately when in front of Qu Xin Rui. But just what had gotten into him today that made him suddenly turn into a runaway wild stallion that went out of control, all semblance of calm and restraint seemingly disappeared into thin air, seeking to stare death in the face!

Qing Yu's gaze had somehow subconsciously drifted over to look at Jun Xie. When he saw Jun Xie giving him a meaningful glance, Qing Yu's heart jumped in surprise and he immediately pushed away the doubts he had in his mind to quickly say: "What Clan Chief Lin is saying is rather interesting I might note. I had not seen the Young Chief drink more than a few cups tonight, has he always been unable to hold his liquor this badly? As for being a child..... Clan Chief Lin must really be joking about that. Lin Feng is already set to undergo his coming of age ceremony into adulthood very soon and if at this age he is still considered a child, what would that make little Young Master Jun then? A toddler?"

Chapter 1038: “Suffer Your Own Consequences (2)”

The Fiery Blaze Clan and the Icy Frost Clan had always been at loggerheads and Qing Yu had also received the hidden signal from Jun Xie which just further encouraged him to add fuel to the fire.

When Lin Que found himself retorted by Qing Yu in that manner, he almost choked to death on the rage that surged up within.

Lin Feng on the other hand, still did not seem to be holding back in the slightest despite his father's display of infuriated rage as he struggled to stand up from where he fell, his face flushed a deep red, looking highly aggrieved.

“Father! I am not drunk! And isn't everything I said the truth? Who does Jun Xie think he is? How is he even qualified to cooperate with Great Aunt? You've bent over backwards and spared no effort to serve Great Aunt for so long and obeyed Great Aunt's every single order. What have you gotten in the end? Now Great Aunt actually wants to gift the Purple Spirit that everyone couldn't even dare dream of to that little bastard! Based on what? All of it should be given to you instead!”

Lin Feng's words made Lin Que's heart almost jump out of him. It had been bad enough when he had only just berated Jun Xie in his earlier tirade, but his words just now had even included Qu Xin Rui in his admonishment!

[What was he going to fix this now?]

Lin Que immediately knelt down before Qu Xin Rui, shaking like a leaf in the wind.

“Great Aunt knows it clearly! Your subordinate has never harboured such ambitions. My young son's words are spoken out of a drunken stupor and must not be taken seriously. To have been able to serve Great Aunt is already my greatest fortune derived

from the good I have done in my past life, and I am already eternally grateful for it. I wouldn't dare be so audacious to think of anything beyond unconditional servitude."

Qu Xin Rui's expression was so ominously dark then that it seemed like it was almost dripping off her face. The entire banquet fell deathly silent and no one else dared say a single word.

"Father! Are you telling me what I said is not true? For so many years, how many things have you done for Great Aunt? It's fine even if Great Aunt doesn't reward you for all of that but when she is even being so cordial to a kid from outside, where does that leave you?" Lin Feng still refused to give up.

Lin Que wished so hard he could just seal his son's mouth at that moment.

"Unfilial child! Aren't you going to shut up! ? Before our Great Aunt, such audacity shall not be allowed! Who do you think you are, to dare to speak to our Great Aunt in such a manner? Quickly kneel down and beg for forgiveness!"

"I did nothing wrong! Why must I shut up! ? Isn't everything I said the truth? Among all the trips made to the Heaven's End Cliff, which one wasn't by carried out by you, Father, through your efforts? The Grand Chieftain was unwilling and it was you alone who gathered the teams! How many people have died at the bottom of the Heaven's End Cliff? How badly have you been cursed by everyone in the Thousand Beast City? Having spared no effort with all your heart, is all of that still not enough?" Lin Feng's chest was filled with inconsolable angst and rage, and all his negative feelings surged out like floodwaters, unstoppable.

Lin Que was so absolutely terrified he remained kneeling in his spot, not even daring to look up. He did not dare to even look at the look on Qu Xin Rui's face at that moment.

Ominous dark clouds had formed in between Qu Xin Rui's brows as she turned to gaze darkly at Lin Feng to say: "What Lin Feng is

saying is telling me that I was the cause that Lin Que had to suffer all those curses?”

Lin Que was shaking even more badly.

Lin Feng did not seem to notice any of it as he replied: “Father was just carrying out the tasks for our Great Aunt and it should be nothing to us having to suffer those curses and admonishments. But who does this little kid think he is? Why should Great Aunt treat him so nicely?”

A loud crash sounded!

Qu Xin Rui slapped a palm down and smashed the long table before her, as she suddenly stood up from the long lounge chair.

“Lin Feng! You are becoming more and more audacious!”

Qu Xin Rui was enraged. She had still not settled the scores with him for having lost the Devious Wyvern and now he dared to criticise her methods in such a manner before so many people! Where was she going to place her face after this?

“Quell your anger Great Aunt! Don’t be angry! My son is drunk, he’s drunk and words spoken in a drunken stupor should not be believed, not to be believed.” Lin Que heart was filled with shock as he frantically pleaded in tears for Lin Feng to be spared.

Chapter 1039: “Suffer Your Own Consequences (3)”

“Drunken words?” Qu Xin Rui sneered: “It is said that the one speaks the truth when drunk, and those words must have been suppressed within his mind for a long time.”

“I do not dare.....” Lin Que knelt on the floor, a trembling mass. Qu Xin Rui was really angry this time.

“Lin Que, aren’t you thinking the same thing in your heart?” Qu Xin Rui said with a completely mirthless smile.

Lin Que immediately kowtowed, hitting his head upon the ground: “Your subordinate wouldn’t dare! Why would your subordinate think in that way? Your subordinate is absolutely loyal to Great Aunt and has never once dared to entertain any thoughts otherwise.”

“Hmph.” Qu Xin Rui wasn’t about to believe a single word of what Lin Que was saying.

“Do not dare? What is there that you wouldn’t dare do?”

Lin Que was greatly startled and he continued to hit his head on the ground, reiterating his unwavering loyalty, but it was of no use at all.

On the other hand, Lin Feng on the side had suddenly jumped in shock at Qu Xin Rui’s rage and was looking dazed in his spot, the bright red flush gradually fading from his face when his complexion immediately went white as a ghost.

[What has he said just now?]

Lin Feng absolutely could not believe all that he had just said to Qu Xin Rui. Those thoughts had indeed gone through his mind before but he had only dared to grumble to himself in his heart about it and had he had never dared to utter a single word of it out.

But for some reason just now, he had suddenly felt a ball of fire burning in his heart, which had forced him to blurt out all of those words in his heart, and it was only after Qu Xin Rui had lost her temper that that evil fire had quietly disappeared.

Having somewhat calmed down, Lin Feng fell kneeling onto the ground with a loud thud and shaking like a willow in the wind.

“Great Aunt..... Great Aunt..... I do not mean what I said, that’s not what I meant.....” Lin Feng was shivering on the ground, not a single trace of colour left on his face.

“Not what you meant? What did you mean then?” Qu Xin Rui sneered. “Having both you and your father to work for me must have really been hard on you!”

“No! It’s not like that at all!” Lin Feng quickly shook his head. Qu Xin Rui’s look on her face was making him break out in a cold sweat and never in his dream would he have thought that he would ever have spoken his grievances aloud.

“It’s not? Ha.” Qu Xin Rui stepped out slowly and came to stand before Lin Feng.

Lin Feng did not even dare to raise his head and could only continue to tremble as he stared at Qu Xin Rui’s feet.

Qu Xin Rui suddenly raised a foot and kicked Lin Feng to fly up into the air!

A kick from an incredibly powerful Purple Spirit was not what Lin Feng was able to take. The instant that he was sent flying and landed on the ground, Lin Feng threw up a mouthful of blood which spurted upon the ground, his bright red blood creating an extremely garish contrast against the pure white fox skin rugs on the ground.

“What are you to me? You dare to talk to me in such a manner? So what if your father is one of the Clan Chief of the Thousand Beast City? He’s just a dog I keep by my side. When I want him to

live, he lives. If I want him dead, he will have to die. Before me, you are not even in a position to speak!” Qu Xin Rui said, glaring at Lin Feng who was lying upon the ground and vomiting out blood continuously, not a single sliver of sympathy in her eyes.

Before this, on account of Lin Que, she had already relented and not pursued the matter about the Devious Wyvern with Lin Feng, but Lin Feng had even climbed up over her head and snubbed her during her birthday banquet, how could she possibly tolerate that?

“Great Aunt, Great Aunt have mercy..... Lin Feng..... Lin Feng didn’t mean it at all.” When he saw the pitiful sight of his son fallen upon the ground, Lin Que’s heart hurt so much he almost died, but he did not dare to go help his son up before Qu Xin Rui.

“Did not mean it? Lin Que, I gave you a chance, to let you watch your son carefully, but how did you handle it? Jun Xie is an esteemed guest I invited and your son dared to smear and slander my guest like this. Does he really think that his position as a mere insignificant Young Clan Chief is comparable in any way to Jun Xie as the Emperor of the Fire Country?” Qu Xin Rui said with a sneer filled with disdain.

Chapter 1040: “Suffer Your Own Consequences (4)”

[The Fire Country’s Emperor! ?]

Fallen upon the ground, Lin Feng stared incredulously at Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie remained calmly seated in her seat and her face did not show any sign of surprise. But upon the faces of even Xiong Ba and Qing Yu who had come here together with Jun Xie from the Fire Country had eyes that were suddenly filled with utter shock!

[Jun Xie was actually the Fire Country’s Emperor! ? How was that possible? When they had returned here together with Jun Xie, they had not heard of any such rumours at all!]

Jun Wu Xie was calm on the surface, but she was deeply puzzled in her heart. She knew it better than anyone that she had not accepted Lei Chen’s request and had definitely not accepted the Fire Country’s throne of the Emperor. But the way Qu Xin Rui had put it, it sounded like it was a confirmed fact.

If that was really true, then the reason that Qu Xin Rui was trying so hard to win her favour had just been found.

Jun Wu Xie did not know how she had become the Emperor of the Fire Country, but with that added identity, that had drawn a lot of attention from Qu Xin Rui to her. The prior incident with the Devious Wyvern must have been because of her newfound identity that had absolved her of guilt and Qu Xin Rui’s repeated displays of goodwill today was not just to win her over, but was targeted at the Fire Country behind her.

Jun Wu Xie found all of this highly laughable. But with the way matters stood, it was a good thing that Qu Xin Rui had misunderstood and Jun Wu Xie could not be bothered to explain it to her.

Lin Feng entire body had been in unbearable pain, but when his

ears heard those words, all that pain seemed to be forgotten at that moment as he stared blankly at his father, and everything dawned upon him then.

Why Qu Xin Rui had not pursued the matter about losing the Devious Wyvern and why Lin Que had not mentioned a single word about Jun Xie after he returned from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. Lin Feng realised that his father must have found out about Jun Xie's identity and did not dare make any more moves against the youth. But as Lin Feng had been grounded all this time in reflection, Lin Que had not had the chance to tell him about Jun Xie's real identity.

And as if by impossible cosmic chance, that chain of events had led to things suddenly falling into the current irreparable state.

Who could have thought, that the Emperor of the mightiest country throughout the lands would suddenly become the youth right before his eyes now?

Even Qu Wen Hao was wide eyed with shock, as he had not heard a single word of anything like this from Qu Ling Yue at all.

"Incomparable, in no way could they compare. My young son has been foolish and your subordinate would bring him back and discipline him most strictly, and would never allow any such incidents to happen again." Lin Que promised, his current state of mind unable to concern himself with Jun Xie, but only to plead for mercy, asking for Qu Xin Rui to spare Lin Feng.

However.....

Qu Xin Rui was never a kind hearted soul of any kind.

"Bring back to discipline? This is not the first time I am hearing such words. The fact is that Lin Feng dared to kick up such an unreasonable fuss today, which causing alarm to my esteemed guest. If you think that can really be wiped off that easily, I'm afraid that will not work for me." Qu Xin Rui said, her eyes

narrowing up. She clapped her hands together and a man came up from downstairs immediately.

When Lin Que saw that man, his face immediately turned white with fright. That man had come to the Thousand Beast City together with Qu Xin Rui and he also held powers of the Purple Spirit. In the Thousand Beast City, this man was always the one who dealt with those people who were “disobedient” to Qu Xin Rui.

Seeing that man appear, Lin Que immediately almost lost his mind.

“I beg Great Aunt to spare Lin Feng just this once! He will never ever dare do it again!” Lin Que hurriedly kowtowed, hitting his head hard upon the ground. Even with the fox skins laid upon the ground, he had knocked his head hard enough to open up a bloody wound on his head.

But Qu Xin Rui completely ignored Lin Que.

“Drag this incorrigible one away from here and teach him a proper lesson. Since Lin Que is unable to discipline his son properly, then let me do it for him.”

Before Lin Feng even regained his senses, he was already picked up by that man with a single grab of his hand!

Chapter 1041: “Suffer Your Own Consequences (5)”

“Great Aunt!” Immediately upon seeing Lin Feng being grabbed, Lin Que’s heart jumped.

“You have an opinion?” Qu Xin Rui smiled coldly at Lin Que.

Lin Que froze in place, his mouth agape and his shivering continued unabated, as a faint chattering sound could be heard coming out from between his teeth. He slunk down to the ground in obeisance, not daring to utter another word.

“Great Aunt have mercy! I have realised my mistake! I have really realised my mistake!” Having been grabbed and picked up, Lin Feng did not have the mind to worry about the pain that was wrecking at his body at that moment. Upon hearing that Qu Xin Rui wanted him to be disciplined, he knew that he was in really big trouble this time and there was nothing he could not do but to beg and plead loudly.

“Father! Save me..... save me.....” Lin Feng’s voice was sounding highly terrified.

[He had done wrong, he realised that he had really gotten it all wrong this time. He had never ever thought that Jun Xie could be the Fire Country’s Emperor. If he had known, he would have immediately understood Qu Xin Rui’s intentions for trying to win Jun Xie’s favour, and he wouldn’t have dared to be so discourteous to Jun Xie in the first place.]

But Lin Feng himself did not know why he had been unable to hold himself back at all earlier, that had made him utter such self damning words.

A pity Qu Xin Rui did not care, and Lin Que did not dare to care.

Lin Feng was dragged downstairs by that man and when his figure disappeared down the stairs, his screams still reverberated

within the banquet.

Qu Xin Rui slowly leaned back upon the long lounge, resting her head upon her hand as she looked at Lin Que kneeling upon the ground and said: "I'll discipline him here for a few days and send him back to you after that. You can get up now."

Lin Que was silent for a moment before he stammered: "I thank Great Aunt for your concern."

He got up and went back quietly to his seat, where he did not say another word after that.

On the rug, the bloodstain thrown up by Lin Feng was still a bright red grisly shade, mixing the stench of blood with the sickly sweet scent that hung heavily in the room.

The sound of the zither then played, as if nothing has happened.

A smile came back onto Qu Xin Rui's face as she turned to Jun Xie at her side. "Little Young Master Jun, do not pay any mind to it. Let me offer you a toast."

Jun Wu Xie raised her cup expressionlessly, accepting the toast from Qu Xin Rui.

"Do not let such ignorant people spoil the mood. Regarding what I have said earlier to little Young Master Jun, I wish that little Young Master Jun will consider it seriously. If you are willing to cooperate, whether to you and me, or to the Fire Country behind you, it will only be highly beneficial to all. Afterall, currently throughout the world, there isn't a ruler anywhere that possesses the power of the Purple Spirit." Qu Xin Rui went on to say, as if she had completely forgotten everything about the incident with Lin Feng, her smile blooming like a flower.

Jun Wu Xie did not know from where Qu Xin Rui found out that she was the Fire Country's Emperor, but she was not about to explain the details to her. Since Qu Xin Rui asked her to consider it, she would then consider it "slowly".

“I will definitely deliberate on it seriously.”

Qu Xin Rui smiled. She did not believe that any man throughout this land would not be looking forward to gaining the magnificent powers of the Purple Spirit.

Even as a ruling Emperor, one would still be worried about ageing and the finality of death.

Qu Xin Rui lifted up her wine cup and was about to drink up when she spotted the skin on her own wrist. The expression on her face immediately twisted up.

A loud sharp crash sounded!

Everyone looked up in shock.

Qu Xin Rui had smashed the wine cup she held in her hand upon the floor in resentment, her alluring countenance faintly showing traces of rage.

“Today’s banquet ends here and all the guests may now depart!” Qu Xin Rui’s face was dark as she held her wrist and suddenly turned around, walking towards the back of the main hall.

The birthday banquet had ended suddenly and the guests were surprised by the sudden turn of events. But as Qu Xin Rui had issued the eviction order, none of them dared to remain there a moment longer as they all shuffled out of the place obediently, except for Lin Feng, whom would not be making it back home that night.

Chapter 1042: “I Don’t Need To (1)”

After coming out from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, Qu Wen Hao stood unmoving in a spot and stared at Jun Xie for a good while, looking like he wanted to say something but finally left without a word.

Lin Que was in despair as he left while the other Clan Chiefs and their deputies bid each other farewell before they all left.

Jun Wu Xie departed from the place with Xiong Ba and Qing Yu and halfway through the journey, it was already very late at night and only the bright red lanterns were still lit in the Thousand Beast City, the streets already completely empty.

“Young Master Jun, how did you suddenly become the Fire Country’s Emperor?” Xiong Ba had tried very hard to resist for a very long while and he could not hold himself back anymore as he asked of Jun Xie in a low voice.

He still clearly remembered that Jun Xie had only been a disciple from the Zephyr Academy and although he played the Fire Country’s Emperor out completely, he had not seized the opportunity to take on the throne. From what Qu Ling Yue said, hadn’t Jun Xie previously heaped the rulership of the Fire Country onto the Crown Prince, Lei Chen at that time?

“I don’t know.” Jun Wu Xie replied truthfully.

Xiong Ba’s face was immediately filled with surprise.

“I know only just as much as both of you.” Jun Wu Xie said calmly. She had come to the Thousand Beast City together with Xiong Ba and the others and after they left, whatever Lei Chen actually did then was not known to her at all.

But from the way Qu Xin Rui had reacted, she must have investigated into her identity and the matter about her being the ruling Emperor must have been collaborated.

If there was no problem with Qu Xin Rui's source of information, then it could only mean that the Fire Country had done something after she had departed from the country.

At first, Lei Chen had been insistent for Jun Xie to ascend to the throne, but Jun Wu Xie had relentlessly given him the runaround and distracted Lei Chen from the issue completely. Jun Wu Xie had then quickly left the place without even a word, and came to the Thousand Beast City with Xiong Ba and the others. She had thought that she would be able to forget everything about the Fire Country cleanly, but from the way things looked at the moment, things were not exactly going the way she had anticipated.

Having suddenly become the Emperor of the Fire Country for no good reason, Jun Wu Xie did not find it the least bit amusing.

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu exchanged a look between themselves, and knowing that Jun Xie was not a person prone to lies, they believed what the youth said.

"From Qu Xin Rui's demeanor, she intends to poach you. Barring that it's something completely unexpected, she must be eyeing the might behind the Fire Country, to help her further the exploration of the region around that map." Xiong Ba reasoned.

"But from what she said, she seems to be willing to use the powers of the Purple Spirit in exchange. But..... the powers of the Purple Spirit, can be bestowed upon a person by others?" That was one point that Xiong Ba had not been able to understand. If Qu Xin Rui had the ability to give others the powers of the Purple Spirit, wouldn't that be just absolutely Heaven defying?

Jun Wu Xie did not reply. Xiong Ba and Qing Yu were people in the Lower Realm and they would naturally not know that there exists a method that enabled people to temporarily raise their spirit powers in the Middle Realm. But she noted that Qu Xin Rui method of trying to win her over was the same as what the original owner of the ring had experienced.

They were both baited with the might of the Purple Spirit, to lure them to the hook.

Although Jun Wu Xie had never met that person, but she already acknowledged him as her Master. Having the disciple put in the same situation as her Master, to be confronted with the same temptation, had seemed like fate was at play.

“Young Master Jun, you wouldn’t really be..... thinking of cooperating with Qu Xin Rui would you?” Xiong Ba asked, looking worriedly at Jun Xie. It wasn’t that he did not believe in Jun Xie’s character, but it was because the lure Qu Xin Rui threw out was really alluring.

What Jun Xie sought, Qu Xin Rui was able to provide, and even help him attain the Purple Spirit. But the Thousand Beast City on the other hand, had besides that one piece of map, nothing else to offer Jun Xie and Xiong Ba could not help himself but to become worried.

“I don’t need to.” Jun Wu Xie replied.

Chapter 1043: “I Don’t Need To (2)”

With Jun Xie assuring words, Xiong Ba and Qing Yu were finally able to set their hearts which had been hanging by a thread at ease.

Although it was merely four words uttered by Jun Xie, it gave them a great sense of security.

“Cough, if it were up to me to say, do you think there is something wrong with Lin Feng today? Everything was going on fine but he had somehow insisted to seek his own death before that old hag of a Qu Xin Rui? He might be usually highly arrogant, but in front of Qu Xin Rui, he has always observed the necessary decorum. But today, he seemed to have taken the wrong medication and seemed to have lost his mind.” The finally relieved Xiong Ba immediately changed the topic.

Lin Feng’s actions today, had really stunned everyone at the banquet.

To dare to slap Qu Xin Rui across the face during her own birthday banquet, Lin Feng was definitely the first in the entire Thousand Beast City. As Xiong Ba did not really like Lin Feng all that much, having gotten to witness Qu Xin Rui being angered to such a rage was rather satisfying for him.

“He took wrong medication indeed.” Jun Wu Xie told him expressionlessly, the corners of her mouth curling up into an almost indiscernible sneer.

No one knew that when Lin Feng offered her the toast, he had spiked the wine.

When the wine cup was brought over, it had already been smeared with poison. Any other person might not have been able to detect it, but Jun Wu Xie had found that something was suspicious with just a single whiff. The very faint scent had been covered by the smell of alcohol and it could have been easily

mistaken as the fragrance of the wine but it had not escaped Jun Wu Xie's alert senses.

A great pity it was, under the Heavens, a poison that would be able to take her down had still not been developed.

Since Lin Feng dared to play the game, she couldn't very well not return the favour.

All favours done for you must be reciprocated in return, and that was merely the "polite" thing to do.

When Jun Wu Xie poured out the wine for Lin Feng, she had already drawn out her silver needle and had it hidden between her fingers. Under the cover of the wine flask, she had poured the wine over the tip of the needle before it fell into Lin Feng's wine cup. Her silver needle had been small and fine and she had only exposed it by such a tiny bit that no one would even see it.

Qing Yu stared at Jun Wu Xie. Her words had just made him feel stronger about the guess he had been holding in his heart and he could not help himself but to ask: "Young Master Jun, did you..... drug Lin Feng earlier?"

Xiong Ba's eyes grew wide. It was obvious he did not have the slightest idea that Jun Xie could have drugged Lin Feng.

"Mmm." Jun Wu Xie nodded without hiding it.

Xiong Ba's face was twisted in shock while Qing Yu's face showed that he had guessed it in his mind.

"I had thought, why had Lin Feng suddenly turned so stupid. I had only been suspicious, until I saw your signal, and I immediately understood that all of that had been your doing." Qing Yu said.

If not for that glance from Jun Xie, he would not have stood forth and said those words.

"What did you actually drug him with?" Qing Yu asked curiously.

“It was just something trifle. It wouldn’t have killed him, but had just weakened his sense of self control.” Jun Wu Xie said with a cold voice. That couldn’t be considered to be a form of poison but would have an effect on a person’s mood and emotions, digging into a person’s negativity and make him release all that the heart tries hardest to suppress. That was one of the drugs that she had developed based on the organization’s requirements, to use on those members of their organization who have suppressed themselves for too long, to give vent to their emotions. The duration of the effects of that drug was very short and after they have vented it out, all they needed was a certain amount of provocative stimulation and the effects would be completely nullified, and the target would immediately regain their senses.

In terms of the damage it inflicted, this drug could be considered to be the most gentle one she had at her disposal.

But.....

Under exceptional circumstances, and at special times, it could bring about amazing effects.

With Qu Xin Rui’s petty and spiteful nature, how would she allow a insignificant young youth like Lin Feng to snub her so completely during her own birthday banquet?

Chapter 1044: “I Don’t Need To (3)”

To deal with Lin Feng, Jun Wu Xie did not even need to lift her own hand. She only needed to introduce a little stimulant into Lin Feng’s body and Qu Xin Rui would help her to do the rest.

To punish an opponent, sometimes, one did not need to dirty one’s hands.

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu stared at Jun Xie and the two of them shivered involuntarily.

Lin Feng was finished for sure this time. Having fallen into Qu Xin Rui’s hands, even if he managed to live through it, he would definitely be at least hopelessly crippled. Jun Xie’s hand, killing with a borrowed knife, was played very quickly and devastating. So quick that Lin Feng still did not know that it had all been Jun Xie behind it.

Jun Xie was seen to be small and skinny in size, unexceptional in looks, but that shrewd mind.....

Whew~

The two of them secretly told themselves, that they must never offend this one here, or they wouldn’t even know what killed them even upon the very moment of death.

When they got back to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, the three of them parted to get some rest.

Jun Wu Xie sat in her room and snapped her fingers, which immediately summoned Ye Sha to appear within the room.

“Young Miss.”

“You found anything?” Jun Wu Xie asked, looking at Ye Sha.

Ye Sha answered: “Within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, there are a total of four people who hold powers at the Purple Spirit and above. The most powerful among them is not Qu Xin Rui. Qu Xin

Rui's powers is not considered the highest among those four people."

"Oh?" Jun Wu Xie lifted an eyebrow. Xiong Ba had said those powerful pugilists around Qu Xin Rui were all her subordinates. But if she were to base it on what Ye Sha had told her, things were not as simple as they seemed. The general rule among the Twelve Palaces had always been survival of the fittest and unless one was highborn, otherwise, the powers they possessed spoke the loudest.

Qu Xin Rui was not the most powerful among them, and she had been born in the Lower Realm. According to reason, the position she held shouldn't be higher than the other three people.

"Looks like, this Qu Xin Rui is putting on an act." Jun Wu Xie reasoned, rubbing at her chin.

"There's one more thing, that your subordinate finds rather fishy." Ye Sha said.

"What is it?"

"Your subordinate felt a very strange energy within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. That surge of energy reminds your subordinate of the Soul Return Palace among the Twelve Palaces. The Soul Return Palace had always excelled in manipulating spirits to turn things to their advantage. If your subordinate's gut feeling is right, within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, there should be a certain spirit tool from the Soul Return Palace in use." Ye Sha said.

"Did you manage to find out what it was?"

"I did not. I did not have enough time. The other three people from the Soul Return Palace were on that level and your subordinate was unable to investigate further into it without alerting them."

Jun Wu Xie nodded. At least she knew that their opponent was the Soul Return Palace.

.....

Back in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, all the favoured men had been chased out and sent to the second level, and the way upstairs was guarded.

On the seventh level, Qu Xin Rui sat in front of the dressing table, looking at her own beautiful countenance in the copper mirror. The alluring features were reflected inside the copper mirror but the expression did not show the slightest trace of joy or admiration.

Qu Xin Rui's brows were creased up tightly together, and her eyes stared hard into the copper mirror as they swept over the reflection of her eyes, brows, lips and nose before she lowered her head to look at her own wrist.

Around her wrist, wrapped under the smooth skin, a piece of crinkled up flesh was showing. That palm sized area when compared to the smooth and fair skin in the other areas, had lost its original elasticity, and the skin had turned a dark yellow, filled with wrinkles all over, where some faint brown spots were even seen scattered over that portion of her skin.

Qu Xin Rui's eyes were filled with fear and panic. She kept reaching her hand out, wanting to wipe away that piece of old and aged skin, but it was to no avail. Caught up in distraught and anxiety, she suddenly swept everything upon the dressing table onto the ground!

The clear and loud clatter of the fallen items rang out within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers deep in the night.

Chapter 1045: “Invite (1)”

On the second day after Qu Xin Rui’s birthday banquet, a group of people gathered outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers at dawn. They were all female and their looks varied across all levels, dressed in all different clothes, but on their faces, they all looked just as sorrowful.

They all stood outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, their gazes fixed longingly upon their family members who had sent them here, not knowing when the next time they would be seeing their family.

People came out from within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and there were ten horse carriages stopped outside as well. The men from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers then hastened the womenfolk onto the horse carriages, completely severing all the last vestiges of longing from their minds.

As the wheels trundled to move along, all the other people crowded around the Heavenly Cloud Chambers could do nothing but watch on as their wives and children gradually moved further away from them, and no matter how much they hated what they were forced to bear, there wasn’t anything they could do about it.

Ten horse carriages rolled out through the gates of the Thousand Beast City as they slowly moved towards the mountainous forests. They went past a little swathe of woods and were passing through a little village of the Thousand Beast City’s.

“Look! They’re here.” A plainly dressed youth said as he tapped his companion lightly on the shoulder.

The youth who was eating turned his head around and through the little window of the inn, he saw a convoy of horse carriages.

“Innkeeper, keep the change!” The youth wiped his mouth hurriedly with the back of his hand, and threw down a nugget of

silver on the table before the two companions picked up their legs and swooshed outside.

“Their timing is right on the dot.” Qiao Chu said as he stared at the row of horse carriages, his eyes slightly narrowed. They had waited at this village outside the Thousand Beast City for a rather long period of time and their target had finally appeared.

“Inform Brother Hua and the others, that they do not need to watch the other gates anymore.” Qiao Chu turned his head to say to Rong Ruo.

The five of them had split up and had been watching the four city gates of the Thousand Beast City from the villages just outside and Qiao Chu had been waiting here in this one with Rong Ruo.

Rong Ruo released her Hell Butterflies soundlessly and several Hell Butterflies fluttered their wings under the sunlight before flying off in different directions while Qiao Chu and Rong Ruo followed behind the team of horse carriages, quickly disappearing into the woods.

“Those people have moved out.” Xiong Ba had woken up very early today. He had not rushed or hurried himself to go attend to the matters of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, but had instead come to Jun Xie’s room.

Every month at this time, this mournful scene of sad and tearful parting would play out at the Thousand Beast City where long separated family members who had been reunited for merely one short month would have to be forcibly separated once again.

“Young Master Jun. Are you really confident that you would be able to find out the location of the place our people have been imprisoned?” Xiong Ba asked of Jun Xie. After arriving at the Thousand Beast City, Jun Xie had not taken much action here. Although he knew that Jun Xie’s companions had split up and parted from them just before they came into the city proper, to make their respective preparations, Xiong Ba could not help

himself but feel highly anxious about the whole thing at that moment.

If they did not succeed this time, they would have to wait one whole month. And within that one additional long month, it was not known how many more issues might come up.

Since Qu Xin Rui fully intended to win Jun Xie over, it was expected that she would take action quite soon.

“Mm.” Jun Wu Xie nodded, acknowledging as expressionlessly as she always did.

Xiong Ba was on the other hand on the edge of his nerves, pacing around the room endlessly.

Which almost drove Jun Wu Xie dizzy.

“You’re worried?”

Xiong Ba froze a moment. “This..... I can’t help being worried..... Better to resolve it quickly before more problems crop up.”

“There is no need for that.” Jun Wu Xie said: “Whether it succeeds or not, is not something you and I can change now. With Dumb Qiao and the others out there, we will naturally have to leave it in their hands to deal with it. Since it is something we cannot do anything about, why should we get ourselves all flustered about it?”

Thinking too much about it might not be a good thing. Considering other options within your power wouldn’t be wrong, but when things are in the hands of others, no matter how much one worried about it, would be of no use, but only mess up your mind together with your emotions.

Chapter 1046: “Invite (2)”

As she spoke, Jun Wu Xie poured Xiong Ba a cup of tea and Xiong Ba drank it up in a single gulp. It was rather strange, but the anxiety and nerves were seemingly slowly soothed by the fragrance of the tea and Xiong Ba managed to calm down quite a bit. He took a seat on a chair at the side and looked like his raging emotions had settled quite a bit.

But before Xiong Ba was able to completely calm himself down, Qing Xu came running, in a worried fluster.

“People from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers are here.” Qing Yu said with a deep frown on his face.

Xiong Ba shot to his feet from the chair. “What are people from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers here for?”

Qing Yu’s gaze fell upon the figure of Jun Xie.

“Qu Xin Rui would like to invite Young Master Jun for a visit to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.”

Xiong Ba’s face immediately darkened. He had just been worried that Qu Xin Rui would take action soon to poach Jun Xie and it had now resulted in this. They had just met last night and Qu Xin Rui had already sent people here bright and early in the morning to invite Jun Xie over there.

Jun Wu Xie stood up and said: “I’ll go.”

“You cannot!” Xiong Ba was immediately displeased. The terror that Qu Xin Rui was in his heart made Xiong Ba not dare to have Jun Xie come into such close contact with Qu Xin Rui.

Jun Wu Xie swung her gaze over to Xiong Ba and said: “Do you wish that I go over voluntarily or to see me forcibly dragged over there by the people from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers?”

Qing Yu then added: “One of Qu Xin Rui’s close aides came this

time.”

Xiong Ba was immediately speechless.

All of Qu Xin Rui’s close aides possessed the power of the Purple Spirit and if Jun Xie refused the invitation, the other party might very well do it by force.

What was really depressing was the fact that they would not be able to defeat him!

“You have to be very careful. Qu Xin Rui is really not a good person.” Xiong Ba said, looking at Jun Xie very seriously.

Jun Wu Xie nodded and stood up to leave.

A tall man was standing at the main doors of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall and that was the man that Jun Wu Xie had seen at the birthday banquet last night. He was the man who had dragged Lin Feng out from the banquet. According to Ye Sha’s observations, this man’s powers, was the strongest among the four people together with Qu Xin Rui.

“Young Master Jun.” A smile came upon the man’s face when he saw Jun Xie, but within that pair of sharp eyes, there was a tiny hidden tinge of disdain.

Jun Wu Xie acted as if she did not notice the disdain that the man tried to hide and nodded expressionlessly to him.

“We will like to trouble Young Master Jun to make a trip to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. Miss Qu said that she had not had a chance to have a good chat with Young Master Jun about some things and she asked us to come invite you to go over.” The man’s mouth was smiling as he spoke, and his tone was highly respectful, but those eyes of his did not show the slightest bit of sincerity.

“I’ve caused you trouble.” Jun Wu Xie said.

“Young Master Jun is too courteous. My name is Shen Chi, and I shall be escorting Young Master Jun there.” Shen Chi said with a

smile, while his eyes measured the tiny figure of Jun Xie.

[This puny one here is the Emperor of the mightiest country of the Lower Realm?]

Jun Wu Xie's gaze then turned to stare at Shen Chi.

Shen Chi retracted his contemptuous gaze and smiled: "Is anything the matter, Young Master Jun?"

"Your surname is Shen?" Jun Wu Xie asked, frowning slightly.

Shen Chi smiled and nodded his head.

Jun Wu Xie did not say anything more and just followed Shen Chi to make their way to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

The main door of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers opened for Jun Wu Xie without the slightest obstruction and Jun Wu Xie went straight up to the top floor.

On the top level, the sweet smell was thicker and more intense than it was last night and lightly clothed men were sitting and kneeling upon the soft and plush floor rugs while Qu Xin Rui lay upon the long lounge chair like before, her half narrowed eyes looking at Jun Xie as he slowly approached. Her posture was highly alluring as her pair of endlessly long smooth legs peeked, partly invisible below her dress.

"Little Young Master Jun, you're here. All of you are dismissed." Qu Xin Rui said, waving her hands nonchalantly at the favoured men around her.

Chapter 1047: “Invite (3)”

The favoured men obediently retreated from the room and in the hall on the top floor, only Jun Wu Xie, Qu Xin Rui and Shen Chi were the only three people left. Jun Wu Xie sat down upon a chair at the side while Shen Chi just stood on one side.

“I was overcome by the alcohol last night and had to go rest early, where I had not been able to have a good chat with little Young Master Jun, which I found to be a great shame.” Qu Xin Rui said, looking mournfully at Jun Xie, her mannerisms seductive. “I had intended to chat a little bit more with Young Master Jun last night but Lin Feng had unexpectedly spoiled the entire mood. Lin Feng is from our Thousand Beast City and he had been extremely discourteous to little Young Master Jun. I hope that little Young Master Jun would not take offence towards it.”

Upon saying that, Qu Xin Rui lifted her chin towards Shen Chi to signal to him. Shen Chi immediately turned and went downstairs, returning in a short while as he dragged a shabbily clothed youth as he walked in.

All four of the youth’s limbs had been forcibly broken by people and were twisted up at odd angles. As he was dragged in by Shen Chi, the blood from the youth’s body drew a red trail behind him over the snow white fox furs on the ground. The bright scarlet blood trail appeared especially striking against the pure white and it was seen that a metal ring had been locked around the youth’s neck. A thick chain of two finger width was attached to the metal ring that was gripped in Shen Chi’s hands on the other end. With both legs broken and unable to walk and both hands twisted up behind his back, the youth could only lie helplessly upon the ground as he was dragged over the floor by Shen Chi to come become Jun Xie.

“Lin Feng is almost about to turn eighteen and is no longer a child. If he commits a wrong, he would naturally have to take

responsibility for his actions. I wonder if little Young Master Jun is satisfied with the punishment I have given him?" Qu Xin Rui said, swinging her feet down to the ground and walking to come right before the youth, before lifting up his chin with the tip of her foot.

With his head raised, Jun Wu Xie was able to see clearly the youth's face.

That youth was not anyone else but the one who had angered Qu Xin Rui last night, Lin Feng!

But at that moment, Lin Feng looked completely different from the way he had yesterday!

{{ The face which had been considered to be rather good looking was now streaked with blood, both his eyes sewn shut with thread, his dry lips split and his mouth agape, with blood dried at the corners of his mouth. With his mouth open, it could be seen that his teeth had been smashed and broken pieces of the roots showed still lodged in his gums, and that his tongue had been pulled completely out! }}

If not for the fact that his facial features had not changed, who would have ever linked this barely half alive person to the Young Chief of the Icy Frost Clan?

Jun Wu Xie looked indifferently at the wretched state that Lin Feng had been reduced into. It had only been one night and Qu Xin Rui had already gotten Lin Feng tortured to such a state. At that moment, Jun Wu Xie finally understood why Lin Que had fallen into such despair the very moment he saw Shen Chi appear.

Lin Que must have already known at that moment, what the result of having Lin Feng falling into Shen Chi's hands would be.

All four limbs broken, eyes unable to see, mouth unable to speak, Lin Feng lay weakly in a hapless heap upon the ground, moans and groans of pain escaping faintly from his dry and hoarse throat.

Qu Xin Rui secretly observed Jun Xie's reaction and only

discovered that Jun Xie's reaction was a lot calmer than she thought. After seeing the state Lin Feng was in, Jun Xie had not shown the slightest trace of shock or horror and that pair of eyes had just remained as cold and as indifferent as ever, without one single ripple of emotion.

“Miss Qu invited me to come here just to let me see this?” Jun Wu Xie turned her head coldly, not the slightest bit of sympathy for Lin Feng in her heart, nor the tiniest sliver of fear towards Qu Xin Rui's cruel and vicious methods.

Qu Xin Rui held her hand close to cover her mouth and gave a light laugh: “Of course not. That was just to show little Young Master Jun a little bit of my sincerity that's all.”

Chapter 1048: “Cradle Snatcher (1)”

An eyebrow lifted up on Jun Wu Xie’s face.

“Sincerity?”

Qu Xin Rui said: “Has little Young Master Jun forgotten what I said to you yesterday? Although an Emperor possesses the highest authority in his lands, but he would finally still be unable to escape the deterioration brought about by time. If little Young Master Jun is willing to lend support to my goals, you will be able to wipe that biggest worry of ruling Emperors from your mind. I showed Lin Feng to little Young Master Jun because I just wanted little Young Master Jun to know, that I am truly sincere in cooperating with you. If you agree to it, you and I will be seen as one, and anyone who disparages you will be my enemy, even if he is one of my men, no one will be spared.” Qu Xin Rui said as she leaned her body over towards Jun Xie.

Her body was curved in all the right places and dressed very lightly in very thin clothes as she leaned into Jun Xie’s body, her alluring eyes looking highly coquettish.

Jun Wu Xie did not react but just looked coldly at Qu Xin Rui who had stuck herself to her.

“Little Young Master Jun. Have you finished thinking about it since yesterday? Are you willing to cooperate and work together with me?” Qu Xin Rui said, looking at Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie frowned slightly. There was a strange fragrance coming from Qu Xin Rui’s body and from what she could smell, that scent was slightly overpowering. Jun Wu Xie slightly shifted her body to move away from Qu Xin Rui.

“I wonder what kind of help does Miss Qu expect from me?”

Qu Xin Rui noticed Jun Xie avoiding her and she was feeling rather displeased, but her attention was quickly drawn away by

Jun Xie's questions right after that.

"I hold a map in my hands, and on that map is marked a humongous treasure, but the map is however incomplete. I only have a rough indication of the location of the treasure and am unable to find it's exact location. If little Young Master Jun is willing to use the Fire Country's might to help me search for the treasure's exact location, even before the deed is done, I will teach little Young Master Jun how to turn into the Purple Spirit and after finding the treasure, I am also willing to share the treasures with Young Master Jun."

Jun Wu Xie looked at Qu Xin Rui, with her honeyed mouth and belly filled with swords and Jun Wu Xie laughed coldly to herself in her heart. Treasure? That must be the cheap trick the people in the Twelve Palaces were using to fool the people in the Lower Realm. The treasure they mentioned with their mouths was actually the Dark Emperor's tomb and when they actually say they would share the exploits just made it sound like a bigger joke to Jun Wu Xie.

The Twelve Palaces had in order to fight for the Dark Emperor's tomb, not even been willing to work with the other palaces. Among them, they held almost a complete set of the map but in seeking to hog the entire treasure to themselves, they had been willing to spent that much more time and expend that much more effort but just refused to gather themselves to work together.

If they really manage to locate the treasure, the first thing they would do would be to silence everyone else. There would be no chance of them really honouring their words to split the treasure with anyone.

Qu Xin Rui's words were just so highly laughable to Jun Wu Xie and she really could not understand how so many powerful pugilists across the lands could be hoodwinked by such childish words of foolery from the Twelve Palaces, willing to sell their lives for the Twelve Palaces so foolishly?

They thought that they had stumbled upon a chance to gain unimaginable wealth and unparalleled power, not knowing in the end they would not even be alive.

In regards to the intelligence to those people, Jun Wu Xie really could not find the words to describe them.

“If it is about something like this, why would Miss Qu need me for? The might of the Thousand Beast City should be more than ample to deal with that wouldn’t it?” Jun Wu Xie replied, without giving any affirmative reply.

Qu Xin Rui would naturally not deride her own people and said: “The Thousand Beast City might be enough to complete the task, but woe befell me when I unintentionally saw little Young Master Jun’s portrait! Although little Young Master Jun is still rather young but your aura of eminence as a ruler was extraordinary which really moved my heart.”

Chapter 1049: “Cradle Snatcher (2)”

The little black cat who was being carried inside Jun Wu Xie’s arms had upon hearing Qu Xin Rui’s words, almost exploded in rage.

[What in the hell!]

[This goddamned old hag who has lived too long was actually thinking of seducing its Mistress!]

[How decadent!]

[This old hag was obviously a disgusting cradle snatcher!]

If not for the fact the current moment wasn’t suitable for them to retaliate, the little black cat would just loved to leap onto Qu Xin Rui’s face and scratch an entire chessboard out from it.

Qu Xin Rui had been so blatant and straightforward with her words and regardless how dense Jun Wu Xie could be with these things, she would still be able to detect Qu Xin Rui’s undisguised hint.

In both her past and present life, this was the first time someone had confessed their liking for her and it had even been an old hag, which did not exactly let Jun Wu Xie feel any of the joy one felt from a “confession” of love.

“Little Young Master Jun, why aren’t you saying anything? Don’t tell me Young Master Jun does not think I am good enough?” Qu Xin Rui asked, looking forlornly at Jun Xie, the expression on her face showing hurt, but in her heart, she was highly confident of herself. Her looks in the entire Thousand Beast City was one of the most attractive and Jun Xie was merely a immature and inexperienced little kid. Even though he had ascended to become a ruler, he would still not have much experience and with the tricks she had up her sleeve, which man could escape her clutches?

Jun Wu Xie had initially thought of dragging it out with Qu Xin

Rui but for some unknown reason, she suddenly felt that she did not want to continue on with these sham gestures of politeness with Qu Xin Rui anymore.

She stood up suddenly and stared at the limp and languid Qu Xin Rui to say: "In regards to Miss Qu's suggestion, I will seriously consider it. I still have some things to attend to and if there isn't anything else, I'll be going back now." Upon saying that, Jun Wu Xie did not wait for Qu Xin Rui to reply and wanted to leave.

Shen Chi was suddenly blocking her way right in front of her, the same hypocritical smile hanging upon his face.

Qu Xin Rui was surprised for a moment. She had not thought that with her having tried to seduce the youth so openly and invitingly, Jun Xie still did not react to her in the slightest, and had even..... even showed that he could not wait to a moment longer to avoid her.

Having always had complete confidence with her own charms, it was quite a while before Qu Xin Rui recovered from the fact of what just happened. She raised her head up and stared at Jun Xie who had his way blocked by Shen Chi and a trace of rage flashed in her eyes.

Never had a single man even once disregarded her beauty so completely!

Qu Xin Rui walked slowly to come beside Jun Xie and both her arms raised up slightly, to fall and hold Jun Xie upon the shoulders.

"Jun, my love, you're leaving just like that? Do you really hate talking to me all that much?" Qu Xin Rui said, looking sadly at Jun Xie, looking like she would stick her entire body against Jun Xie's back next.

She was taller in stature than Jun Xie and with her having hugged Jun Xie from the back, Jun Wu Xie was able to clearly feel

the shapely curves of a woman's body.

A cold chill shot through Jun Wu Xie's body and she forced herself to calm down.

"I have things to attend to." Jun Wu Xie said coldly.

Qu Xin Rui blinked her eyes and leaned upon Jun Xie's shoulder. Like thunder that hits before you can cover your ears, Qu Xin Rui planted a kiss firmly on Jun Xie's cheek.

Jun Wu Xie froze in her spot at that moment.

Qu Xin Rui looked at Jun Wu Xie's stunned expression and a smile bloomed in her heart. As she had expected, the kid was still very green.

"It's alright, since my man has something to attend to, I shall not hold you back anymore. You should think through it clearly fast, and not make me get too anxious waiting." Immediately upon saying that, Qu Xin Rui released her grip and lifted her chin in a gesture to Shen Chi.

Finally having escaped from Qu Xin Rui's claws, Jun Wu Xie slowly blinked her eyes, her gaze looking a little dazed. After Shen Chi moved away, Jun Wu Xie carried the little black cat in her arms as she walked down the stairs without any expression on her face.

The little black cat curled up within Jun Wu Xie's arms and lifted its head to look at its Mistress whose expression on her face was looking rather queer.

[It's over, all over!]

Its pure and untainted Mistress, had been taken advantage of by an old hag!

.....

Chapter 1050: “Cradle Snatcher (3)”

When Jun Wu Xie walked out from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, there wasn't a trace of an expression on her face. Her consciousness had seemed like it had been frozen and her gaze just stared straight ahead in front of her.

Little Black was a little panicked. It lifted its tiny paw and pawed at Jun Wu Xie's hand.

“Meow.”

[Mistress, what happened to you? Do not scare me like this!]

Jun Wu Xie did not reply and only hastened her steps and walked quickly towards the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall.

Inside the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, Xiong Ba and Qing Yu were waiting for Jun Xie to return and when they finally saw Jun Xie coming in completely expressionless after having waited so long, they were all ready to ask Jun Xie what Qu Xin Rui had spoken to him about.

In the end, before they could even open their mouths, Jun Xie had been just like a gust of wind that whirled past them and then disappeared from before their eyes.

The two men were left standing at the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall's main doors staring dumbly, completely flabbergasted.

“What is wrong with Jun Xie? He seemed to be acting a little strange.” Xiong Ba said still standing dumbly by the doors. Seeing Jun Xie acting like this, Xiong Ba was thinking that something bad must have happened. He had immediately wanted to immediately go after the youth in pursuit but was stopped by Qing Yu pulling him back.

“What?” Xiong Ba asked.

Qing Yu sighed and then said: “I think that Young Master Jun

would not wish for anyone to go disturb him at this moment. Even if anything really happened, we should wait till..... later in the afternoon and see.”

Jun Xie always had a cold expression on her face, but today, Qing Yu had noticed that Jun Xie’s expression did not look right, thinking it was cold and rather frightening. Instinct told her that it was better not to go ask Jun Xie about it for the moment.

Xiong Ba contemplated on it for a while before he decided to listen to Qing Yu, while cursing at Qu Xin Rui another million times in his heart.

Jun Wu Xie walked back quickly into her room and slammed the door shut with a loud bang. Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit wobbled over to adorably ask for cuddles but were both completely ignored by Jun Wu Xie. She put the little black cat down at the side and turned to go into the washroom to scoop out a ladle of water from the wooden bucket, before pouring it into the wooden basin.

Jun Wu Xie applied some medicated water upon her face and changed back to her original looks. She immediately scooped out the icy cold water and splashed it upon her face. Spring had not yet broken and the weather was still cold. The water was like ice and its chill was biting cold. But Jun Wu Xie did not seem to take any notice of it and just continued to scoop up the water to scrub at her fair snowy white face.

The snowy white skin very quickly turned slightly red under the biting chill of the icy water, but Jun Wu Xie still did not seem to want to stop.

“Meh.....” Lord Meh Meh stared at the abnormal actions of its feedstress and it fell back a step in fear. Its sharp animal instinct had made it feel that Jun Wu Xie’s aura didn’t feel right.

Even the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit did not dare to kick up a fuss but just hugged its big floppy ears and stood there looking up at

Jun Wu Xie.

The little black cat gritted its teeth and with a swoosh, leapt onto the shelf beside Jun Wu Xie.

“You cannot continue to wash yourself like this.” The little black cat called out anxiously. The water was too cold and if Jun Wu Xie continued on like this, her face would really get frostbitten.

Jun Wu Xie stared completely unaware at the wooden basin in front of her, the action of her hands still not stopping in the slightest.

The only emotion she was feeling at that moment was disgust.

So disgusted was she that she wished fervently she could peel her entire face off to wash it thoroughly.

The little black cat’s incessant pleas were of no use and it could do nothing but groan anxiously at the side.

It knew Jun Wu Xie’s personality better than anyone else. She had always hated to have any physical contact with other people the most and needless to say when she was thoroughly kissed by such a loathsome and disgusting old witch! Jun Wu Xie who had always been almost freakishly obsessed with cleanliness must really be on the very verge of going mad at this moment!

“Little Xie, didn’t you promise me that you would take good care of yourself?”

Chapter 1051: “You’re Not Cold? I Am (1)”

A highly masculine and throaty voice suddenly rang within the room and Jun Wu Xie who was standing within the washroom immediately halted all her movements. She stood in her spot not moving in the slightest, as her eyes continued to stare at her reddened hands still soaked within the icy cold water.

A clean and handsome looking hand reached out to come before Jun Wu Xie. That hand’s joints showed prominently, slender but strong. The big, warm and comforting hand reached into the water and pulled Jun Wu Xie’s tiny hands which had turned freezing cold out of the icy water.

So cold were those hands that almost couldn’t feel anything anymore, firmly grasped in that big hand, the warmth slowly spreading to drive the freezing chill out.

“It’s icy cold, don’t you feel cold?” The flawlessly handsome man looked solemnly at the tiny face that was slightly lowered, the snowy fair face reddened all over, showing up upon her skin, exceptionally glaring.

“Still alright.” Jun Wu Xie said quietly, her head still lowered.

“But I’m cold.”

Jun Wu Xie did not reply.

The next moment, she was pulled into a warm and comforting embrace, the pair of icy cold hands laid upon that burning chest, big hands clasped over the tiny ones, pulling them to slip them under the robe.

A burning warmth was felt under her fingertips which quickly shocked Jun Wu Xie back to her senses. She suddenly raised her head up and Jun Wu Yao’s comforting countenance reflected within her clear eyes.

Jun Wu Xie had instinctively wanted to move her hands away

from Jun Wu Yao's chest but her tiny bit of strength was helpless and insignificant before him. With one hand holding her tiny hands down, Jun Wu Xie could do nothing else but have her hand stuck upon his chest.

The burning warmth and the icy chill interweaved as the heat and cold passed between each other, embracing, to normalise the temperature.

"Cold." Jun Wu Xie said with a frown and wanted to retract her hand. How freezing cold her hand was, she knew it well.

Jun Wu Yao lowered his head with a beaming smile and looked at that reddened little face. His other hand gently clasped over it and he found that it was just as chilling cold under his palm. Her face was still slightly wet and the icy chill water had taken the warmth out from her face.

"You only just realized that it's cold now. Why didn't I see you avoid it earlier?" Jun Wu Yao asked Jun Wu Xie, a brow lifted up on his face.

Jun Wu Xie's lips stiffened and she just lowered her head and refused to say a word.

Jun Wu Yao saw that Jun Wu Xie was acting rather abnormally. He had left for quite a period and immediately upon his return, he had found his Little Xie acting so strangely.

In the past, whenever they reunited, this little one's face would also flush slightly red, but not with such an icy chill, and it had been with warmth instead. But this time, not only had her skin turned so cold, her eyes had also become rather morose. Her eyes now reminded him of when he had first met her, that fully armed and always poised little porcupine. But with the gradual passing of time, the gaze she looked at him with had no longer been so cold and distant. So why was it looking so different today?

Jun Wu Yao held Jun Wu Xie within his arms and used his own

body warmth to drive off the chill from her. He then turned his head slightly and out of the corner of his eyes, his gaze swept over the little black cat.

The little black cat immediately shivered under that sweeping gaze. It saw that Jun Wu Yao's gaze had been so gentle and sweet towards its Mistress but why had those eyes so suddenly turned into ones from such a terrifying demon lord when they turned and was looking at it! ?

The sharp chill in that gaze, had almost instantly made the little black cat's blood turn to ice!

The little black cat had immediately understood what Jun Wu Yao's chilling gaze had meant. He would not force Jun Wu Xie to tell him, but that did not mean that its little self would be spared from interrogation!

Under the great demon lord's tyrannical abuse, the little black cat would have no choice but to spill everything it knew.

“Erm..... just now..... an old witch kissed Mistress once.”

Chapter 1052: “You’re Not Cold? I Am (2)”

Jun Wu Yao’s eyes immediately lit up with an intense murderous rage!

Although the little black cat knew that that murderous rage wasn’t directed at it, but it nevertheless caused it to hold its breath as when Jun Wu Yao’s gaze swept over its tiny body, it had thought it was going to die for sure!

Jun Wu Yao’s eyes narrowed up dangerously and he raised his hand to lift Jun Wu Xie tiny face. The instant his eyes turned back, that terrifying murderous gaze had disappeared without a trace and there was only a faint smile on his face.

“It’s just only an old hag. Little Xie is a girl afterall and would a mere kiss from a female be able to cause you to be so distraught?” Jun Wu Yao teased gently.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head.

“Just feel disgusted.”

Jun Wu Xie did not know why she was feeling so strongly against it. A kiss was not that unfamiliar to her anymore as whenever Jun Wu Yao and her met, he would always kiss her on her forehead. With Jun Wu Yao’s kiss, she did not feel discomfited in the slightest but she had felt it to be natural and as it should be. When Qu Xin Rui’s lips were planted firmly on her face, she had felt so disgusted that she had almost puked on the spot.

The strong urge to want to tear her face off had been just too intense.

Jun Wu Yao asked with a laugh: “Kissed you where?”

Jun Wu Xie reached out a hand and pointed at a spot on her cheek.

Without waiting for her to shift her hand away, Jun Wu Yao

suddenly lowered his head to where her finger was pointed at and laid down a faint and gentle kiss, the soft and warm lips brushing over her stinging cheek and fingertip.

“Still feel disgusted?” Jun Wu Yao asked, beaming brightly at Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie was stunned momentarily as she looked at Jun Wu Yao’s familiar and comforting smile, and the feeling of disgust instantly disappeared completely from within her chest, replaced by a numb limpness that pervaded her body.

She shook her head without a word.

Jun Wu Yao held her tiny face and smiled sinisterly in tease as he asked: “My kiss is not disgusting?”

Jun Wu Xie considered it a moment and then nodded her head earnestly.

Jun Wu Yao immediately broke into a tirade of joyous laughter as he hugged Jun Wu Xie tightly within his embrace.

“If it’s not disgusting, then I should kiss you a few more times to make you forget the one from before.” And Jun Wu Yao took advantage of the opportunity to plant a few more light kisses on Jun Wu Xie’s face.

Jun Wu Xie face was still red, but it was no longer cold, but was now instead glowing with a slight warmth.

The subtle feeling from before grew in intensity within her heart. She had not thought that the freezing winter’s chill had been all that unbearable but for some unknown reason, she was suddenly feeling that she was actually longing for Jun Wu Yao’s warm embrace, and was quite reluctant to leave it.

Could it be..... the harsh icy chill from the freezing waters just now had gotten to her?

Jun Wu Xie thought hard in trying to discern the reason.

“I saw the message that Ye Sha sent me.” Jun Wu Yao said suddenly.

Jun Wu Xie looked at Jun Wu Yao in confusion. She knew that Ye Sha would sometimes relay news of their current situation to Jun Wu Yao via Ink Snakes but..... she seldom received news from Jun Wu Yao.

She didn't know what Jun Wu Yao did on a daily basis, and she didn't care about it in the past, but now..... she felt a little curious about it.

“He said, that you missed me?” Jun Wu Yao's voice turned a little raspy, his jet black eyes looking straight and unwavering at Jun Wu Xie, looking deep into her eyes, seeing the reflection of himself in them.

At that very moment, there was no one else in her eyes, but only him.

Jun Wu Xie's mouth opened but she was not able to speak, but only slowly nodded, a form of silent consent.

Within Jun Wu Yao's jet black eyes, traces of his emotions surged suddenly, and a shadowy violet shade appeared within his black eyes.

“Where..... have you been?” Jun Wu Xie asked suddenly, her gaze serious as she looked at Jun Wu Yao.

Chapter 1053: “You’re Not Cold? I Am (3)”

A strange look came over Jun Wu Yao’s face a fleeting moment. Jun Wu Xie had never once asked anything about him before. Who he was, where he usually went on a daily basis, she had not asked him once. But today, she had now asked.

Jun Wu Xie was still looking at him earnestly.

Jun Wu Yao was not displeased in anyway by her inquiry but the smile lines at the corner of his eyes had instead creased up more deeply.

“I had to go deal with some matters and I have resolved them now.” This was the first time Jun Wu Xie has asked him something about himself. Could he in turn then understand it as the little one was finally beginning to become concerned about things relating to him?

“Will you still need to go?” Jun Wu Xie could not hold herself back from asking.

“Not for the time being.” Jun Wu Yao replied as he looked at Jun Wu Xie, his eyes which had been jet black completely transformed to violet. His violet eyes fully reflected the figure of Jun Wu Xie, as if wanting to forever brand that image deeply into his soul.

Jun Wu Xie did not say anything else after that.

Jun Wu Yao carried her up and sat down on a chair, putting her directly upon his lap, a hand holding her tiny face, his eyes carefully scrutinizing every single strand of her brows.

“Don’t want me to go?” Jun Wu Yao’s voice was slightly suppressed, as if treading on untested ground.

Jun Wu Xie looked at him and hesitated for awhile before she very faintly, nodded her head just once.

“Then I won’t go.” Jun Wu Yao said suddenly.

Jun Wu Xie's eyes widened up slightly as she looked upon Jun Wu Yao's face with its immensely wide smile.

"You have things you need to deal with." She was only thinking that way but she never really expected that he would always remain behind. Behind Jun Wu Yao, too many secrets were hidden and her instructs told her that the matters he was dealing with was way beyond her to be able to interfere.

Forcibly making him stay with her would be too selfish of her and Jun Wu Xie did not want to do that.

"In my heart, there is no matter that can be more important than you." Jun Wu Yao said, as he held Jun Wu Xie's tiny hands, beaming smilingly at her.

Jun Wu Xie's heartbeat, suddenly skipped a beat.

She wanted so much to calmly tell Jun Wu Yao that he did not need to do that as it was merely just her emotions were feeling rather strange today and he need not take her words seriously. But even she looked into that pair of smiling eyes, those words seemed to have all lodged up within her throat where she was unable to speak them no matter how she tried.

"There no need to worry. Certain things do not require me to do it myself." As if he had seen through Jun Wu Xie's dilemma, Jun Wu Yao could not help but laugh as he brought himself closer to her, putting his forehead against hers, to say softly: "Unless, Little Xie doesn't wish for me to stay behind to accompany you?"

"No....." It had been some time since Jun Wu Xie had felt her speech impairment had regressed once again. After being reborn, she had experienced quite a lot and gained herself a family and companions. She was gradually changing and her ability at expressing herself was slowly improving. But at this moment, it was as if she had gone back to the past where she did not know what she wanted to say or how to express how she felt.

Jun Wu Yao just laughed and wrapped her within his arms, using a gentle and comforting voice to say: “Good that it’s not and you do not need to worry about the rest. I know how to deal with my things. But..... Little Xie does not find me as a bother to you anymore?” Embracing the little figure within his arms, Jun Wu Yao could not help but think back to the time when they had just met each other. At that time, embracing her like this was completely unthinkable. Even just getting a little closer to her and the little one would immediately draw her silver needles, and put forth a stance like she would send him to his death at that very moment.

Jun Wu Xie’s face turned slightly warm and fortunately Jun Wu Yao was not able to see, as she recalled the same memory as Jun Wu Yao.

Chapter 1054: “You’re Not Cold? I Am (4)”

Seeing that its Mistress had been successfully appeased by the demon lord, the little black cat finally let out a sigh of relief.

Although it was just absolutely terrified of the demon lord but it really had to say.....

Sometimes, the demon lord’s ability at pacifying its Mistress really had a rather immediate effect.

When that thought came to its mind, the little black cat could not help but secretly wipe tears from its eyes inside, suddenly having a feeling that its Mistress was about to be stolen, and its heart winced with pain.

“I need to change out of these clothes.” Jun Wu Xie said solemnly. The icy water had splashed all over her earlier and in that weather, wearing those wet clothes were really rather uncomfortable.

“Go ahead.” Jun Wu Yao then let go of Jun Wu Xie, immediately retreating gracefully out of the room, and shutting the door behind him.

Jun Wu Xie stared at the tightly shut door. She did not know why, but she found that her nerves which had been so tightly tensed up all this while had somehow unknowingly relaxed as she went to retrieve a clean set of clothes.

At the very moment Jun Wu Yao stepped out from the room, all traces of his smile disappeared like smoke dispersed into the wind, and the pair of violet eyes shone with a chilling murderous aura.

Ye Sha and Ye Mei appeared in a instant, kneeling before Jun Wu Yao.

“Lord Jue.”

Jun Wu Yao’s eyes narrowed. He raised up a hand grandiosely,

and Ye Sha who was a distance away found himself suddenly being lifted up in the air!

A black mist coiled around Ye Sha's neck, and just like a hand, it constricted as its grip tightened up.

"At that time, you were there?" Jun Wu Yao's voice now, compared to when he was in the room, was at least ten times more chilling.

"Yes....." Ye Sha was finding it harder and harder to breathe and all colour had drained out from his face.

"And you did not do anything?" Jun Wu Yao's voice narrowed dangerously, the murderous aura within his eyes turning more brutal!

Ye Sha's face was completely pale but he did not dare resist in the slightest.

"The Young Miss left orders..... before she opens her mouth to say it..... I am not allowed to make any moves....."

The fingers on Jun Wu Yao's raised hand tightened abruptly and a very faint sound of cracking could be heard from Ye Sha's neck. Ye Mei who was kneeling at the side was already drenched in cold sweat as he remained unmoving as he knelt on the ground.

Jun Wu Yao's rage had never seen anyone able to withstand it.

At the very instant just before Ye Sha's neck was about to snap, Jun Wu Yao suddenly retracted his hand. Having lost the support, Ye Sha instantly fell onto the ground in a sorry heap, and he did not even let out a single groan.

"If there's a next time, you will die for it." Jun Wu Yao said menacingly.

Ye Sha was not able to bother with the excruciating pain around his throat as he hurriedly knelt properly and there were clear and highly visible strangulation marks on his neck. "Your subordinate

has failed in his duties this time. If it happens another time, your subordinate will answer for the crime with my life!”

This time, it had really been beyond whatever Ye Sha had expected.

Jun Wu Xie had always been calm and resourceful all this while and when Qu Xin Rui had moved herself close to Jun Wu Xie, Jun Wu Xie had not given much of a reaction and Ye Sha had continued to secretly observe the situation. When Qu Xin Rui kissed Jun Wu Xie, Ye Sha had actually intended to make his move but he saw Jun Wu Xie’s indifferent reaction and he also remembered the orders Jun Wu Xie had given him where he then decided to remain hidden.

But, when Ye Sha followed Jun Wu Xie to return here and he saw Jun Wu Xie’s actions which almost bordered on self torture, Ye Sha finally realised that it was not that Jun Wu Xie wasn’t bothered, but it was just that she did not know how to express what she felt at that moment, and she was only able to give vent to the utmost disgust in her heart with such a base and direct method.

Towards that, Ye Sha was highly remorseful himself, hating himself for having been too careless then, where he failed to detect Jun Wu Xie’s abnormality on the spot.

Jun Wu Yao snorted derisively. “If not for the fact that you once saved Little Xie’s life and she feels indebted to you, you would already be dead with this one incident.”

Ye Sha did not dare to make a single sound as he knelt there, his mind whirling furiously. In regards to his own previous self, his memories were rather fuzzy. He did not remember having ever saved Jun Wu Xie at all.

Chapter 1055: “Apologies, Am Not In a Good Mood (1)”

Those fragmented memories, had been squeezed into his mind and without a hint, he would not be able to recall any of it. Those memories seemed to be his, yet not really exactly his. The feeling made him feel rather deranged and made Ye Sha unable to switch back immediately.

It seemed like there was such a scene, upon the Cloudy Peaks, everything his eyes saw, was through blood.

In the courtyard, the pattering of footsteps reached their ears. Ye Sha and Ye Mei immediately disappeared from their spots.

Xiong Ba was still feeling a little worried and unable to tolerate the nerves gnawing at him any longer, he dragged Qing Yu along with him to come to the courtyard that Jun Xie was staying at. Although he was hesitant to come disturb Jun Xie, but he felt that he should at least come find out what had happened.

In the end, Xiong Ba's foot had just stepped into the courtyard when he saw a immensely handsome looking man standing right before Jun Xie's door!

Immediately, Xiong Ba's face showed a sense of caution as he asked guardedly: “Who are you? Why would you appear here within the premises of my Fiery Blaze Clan Hall?”

The man's looks was peerlessly handsome but it was a face Xiong Ba had never seen before. The Fiery Blaze Clan Hall was heavily guarded, so how had this man managed to come in here?

Jun Wu Yao turned his gaze around slowly, as he looked at the highly nervous Xiong Ba and Qing Yu. In the next instant, he smiled and said: “My humble self is Young Master Jun's personal aide.”

“.....” Xiong Ba's eyes widened and stared, looking like he did not

believe a word of it.

The air Jun Wu Yao gave out was nothing like that of an aide and even when he had suppressed his aura, but the feeling he gave people still showed his powerful might clearly.

A personal aide like this, who dared to employ him?

“You lie! Jun Xie had not ever brought any personal aide here with him! Who are you really? And how did you manage to sneak into my Fiery Blaze Clan Hall! ?” There was no way that Xiong Ba would be able to see this extraordinary man with the exceptional air he gave out as anyone’s aide. Moreover, no one in the clan had known of his coming and just that one point alone made his presence here very highly suspicious.

Jun Wu Yao looked at Xiong Ba and his eyes slightly narrowed with a smile.

[This is a rather sticky situation.] Jun Wu Yao thought to himself. From the information Ye Sha had provided, Jun Wu Yao was roughly able to guess at these two men’s identities. If they had been anyone else, he could very well have just killed them. But Little Xie seemed to be cooperating with these two and if he killed them, it might be a little difficult to answer to Jun Wu Xie.

When Xiong Ba did not get a reply from Jun Wu Yao, he immediately rushed forward, fully intending to capture the man.

Jun Wu Yao looked smilingly at Xiong Ba who was charging straight at him and he raised one hand slightly, catching the fist Xiong Ba threw at him firmly.

“It will be better for you to not strike at me. I am not really in a good mood at the moment.” Jun Wu Yao said, looking at Xiong Ba. The only thing he felt like doing now in his heart was to kill people. Only for Jun Wu Xie, for any other person, he really didn’t feel like suppressing his own emotions.

Xiong Ba stared at Jun Wu Yao in shock. He had not held his

punch back in the slightest and had used all his powers. But that punch had been effortlessly caught by this handsome and ageless man right before his eyes, and he had not detected the man having summoned the slightest bit of spirit power at all.

“As long as you do not die, I guess it should still be fine.” Jun Wu Yao was still smiling, but those words were not said to Xiong Ba, but just him talking to himself.

Xiong Ba was just about to say something when a crisp crack suddenly sounded in the air, and his hand that was held by Jun Wu Yao was easily broken by Jun Wu Yao as if it was just a lone chopstick!

The heinous pain made Xiong Ba immediately break out in cold sweat!

Shock filled Qiao Yu's heart when he saw that and he had wanted to rush up to save Xiong Ba when Jun Wu Yao's chilling eyes with their murderous aura swung over to him, which made him freeze in the spot he was standing.

“If you do not want him to die, then remain there obediently.”

Chapter 1056: “Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood (2)”

Qing Yu did not dare to make any rash moves at all as the man before him had so effortlessly contained Xiong Ba's full powered strike. His own power was inferior to Xiong Ba's and if he charged at him recklessly, he would not only be unable to save Xiong Ba, he would be putting himself in danger as well.

“Who are you really? Why have you come to our Fiery Blaze Clan Hall? What do you want from us?” Qing Yu asked, the clothes on his back drenched with sweat.. Although the man before his eyes was not giving out the slightest bit of spirit powers, the powerful aura exuding from him was already making it hard for him to breathe. What terrified him even more was, the murderous glint in the man's chilling pair of eyes!

Qing Yu had never felt murderous aura with malice reaching such an extent. It felt as if once those eyes looked upon you, one was immediately shrouded completely in death, and your strength just saps out of you.

The Thousand Beast City had no lack of powerful pugilist themselves, especially after Qu Xin Rui returned. Every single person that came here with her possessed the powers of the Purple Spirit. Even when Qing Yu faced all those people, he had never ever experienced such an intense oppression, feeling at that moment, that he couldn't no longer be considered to be a human, but just a helpless tiny bug creeping upon the ground, waiting to be crushed.

“I've said it. I am Young Master Jun's personal aide.” Jun Wu Yao repeated, shrugging his shoulders slightly.

But nobody would ever believe those words of his.

An aide, who possessed such immense power, was just not

possible!

Even after Xiong Ba's hand had been broken by Jun Wu Yao, the expression on Jun Wu Yao's face had not changed in the slightest. He was looking exactly the same as when Xiong Ba and Qing Yu had first seen him, a devilish smile upon his face, and even the curve at the corner of his lips had not reduced at all.

Qing Yu did not dare to make any reckless move. Even Xiong Ba had been taken down by this man so quickly and he really could not think of anyone within the entire Fiery Blaze Clan Hall who would be a match for this man.

With a creak, the room door behind Jun Wu Yao slowly opened.

Upon opening the door, Jun Wu Xie was immediately presented with the scene of Jun Wu Yao having a hand clasped over Xiong Ba's fist and Xiong Ba's wrist was bent at an odd angle, a joint of white bone sticking through the flesh, exposed to the air.

"Young Master Jun!" Qing Yu called out quickly upon seeing Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie looked at the pale faced Xiong Ba and then turned her gaze of Jun Wu Yao.

Jun Wu Yao almost instantly released his hold on Xiong Ba. Xiong Ba fell back a few steps in a flurry and Qing Yu quickly stepped forward to catch him.

"Young Master Jun! This man....." Qing Yu was just beginning to say.

Jun Wu Yao turned to look at Jun Wu Xie and said with a beaming smile: "Erm..... I was just kidding with him."

Jun Wu Xie's gaze fell upon the broken joint of bone on Xiong Ba's wrist.

[Just kidding and you broke people's hand?]

"Young Master Jun, you know him?" Qing Yu was no simpleton.

When Jun Xie saw the mysterious man, Jun Xie's face had not exhibited any trace of shock or puzzlement, which told him that the two of them knew each other.

“Help him over here.” Jun Wu Xie said as she gave Jun Wu Yao a cold glare, her originally subtle feelings of excitement vanished to nothing.

The wide smile on Jun Wu Yao's face slowly faded. “You give the orders, I will follow.” Upon saying that, he reached out and wanted to help hold Xiong Ba.

Why would Xiong Ba dare to have the man even touch him at all? The terror in his heart made Xiong Ba retreat back subconsciously, and even Qing Yu was looking at Jun Wu Yao guardedly.

“Not for you to help.” Jun Wu Xie said looking at Jun Wu Yao.

Jun Wu Yao shrugged his shoulders and retreated to stand at the side.

The overly terrified Xiong Ba was helped by Qing Yu to go into Jun Xie's room. Jun Wu Xie swept her gaze to glare at Jun Wu Yao another time before turning to go in as well.

Chapter 1057: “Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood (3)”

Jun Wu Yao stood outside the door and looked at the ground in front of it. Seeing the scattered drops of blood, his eyes narrowed.

After the room door was shut, Ye Sha and Ye Mei immediately appeared.

“Lord Jue.”

“Clean up this area.” Jun Wu Yao said simply and then turned to push the door open to walk inside.

Ye Sha and Ye Mei exchanged a look and saw the look of suffering on each other’s faces.

The atmosphere had just been so harmonious when their Lord Jue and the Young Miss had met again, but those two idiots had to come barging in suddenly, appearing just when their Lord Jue had been feeling absolutely murderous. In the end, besides the fact that those guys had almost gotten themselves killed, they have caused the Young Miss’ demeanor become cold towards their Lord Jue once again.

Ye Sha and Ye Mei could not help but to light a pair of candles for Xiong Ba and Qing Yu in their hearts. Why their Lord Jue had not slaughtered that pair immediately on the spot must have been because of the consideration for the Young Miss, but having been the cause to make the Young Miss show their Lord Jue the cold shoulder, death wouldn’t be too far from those two.

Mourning for Xiong Ba and Qing Yu for the tragedy that was about to befall them, Ye Mei and Ye Sha began to clean up the blood stains in front of the door in resignation, making sure that they do not leave the slightest scent of blood behind!

In the room, Xiong Ba had already turned pale from the pain. He had not sustained such a severe injury for a long time and he had

just barely seated himself while Jun Xie had turned around to gather some things when he noticed that Jun Wu Yao who had entered a step behind them currently had his arms crossed over his chest, looking at him and Qing Yu, calm and unaffected. He still had a smile on his face and did not seem to hold much animosity against them, but, for no reason, Xiong Ba felt that the distance between him and death had suddenly been pulled a lot closer!

Due to that instinctive fear that gripped him, Xiong Ba involuntarily shifted his chair backwards a little.

Jun Wu Xie took out some elixirs from her Cosmos Sack and turned around to walk back to them.

Without a word, Jun Xie bent her head down and began to treat Xiong Ba's injury. Qing Yu sat at the side anxiously but was greatly surprised to see that Jun Xie seemed highly proficient at treating wounds, just like he had when providing treatment for the "big eared rabbit". Jun Xie's actions while treating Xiong Ba's wound could only be said as fast, efficient, and steady!

"Young Master Jun, just who is he?" Qing Yu could not help but open his mouth to ask. Jun Wu Yao then stepped further into the room to stand, and Qing Yu suddenly felt as if the air in the entire had suddenly turned thin.

Jun Xie's actions with his hands paused slightly and he raised his head to look at Jun Wu Yao standing at the side. She then called out in a cold voice: "Aide."

Qing Yu's eyes bulged wide open and Xiong Ba even forgot about the pain on his wrist as he hollered in shock. "Really! ?"

[That terrifying man is really Jun Xie's personal aide?]

[Isn't that a joke?]

Xiong Ba felt that his view of the world was being seriously challenged!

Having been completely thrashed by Jun Wu Yao and was

completely unable to retaliate in the slightest, Xiong Ba had gotten a full taste of Jun Wu Yao's might. He had a feeling, like Jun Wu Yao's prowess was a lot more powerful than Qu Xin Rui! Qu Xin Rui was already a Purple Spirit, then Jun Wu Yao's powers.....

Xiong Ba could not imagine it.

[And a man so powerful that it was completely unbelievable to people, was an aide to Jun Xie?]

Although Jun Xie was also an incomparably devilish prodigy, but Xiong Ba still felt that answer incredibly hard to believe.

“Too noisy.” Jun Wu Xie frowned and she treated Xiong Ba's wound speedily, before standing up to go to the side to wipe off the blood stains on her hands cleanly.

The moment Jun Wu Xie's body was turned, Xiong Ba immediately found that Jun Wu Yao's gaze had grown to become terrifying. He hung his head low between his shoulders as a strange feeling came over him.

He could not shake off the feeling that once Jun Wu Xie left the room, that man would immediately kill him.

Chapter 1058: “Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood (4)”

Always fearless and reckless, this was the first time Xiong Ba knew the meaning of the word “weak”. With merely just one look from Jun Wu Yao he was now completely weakened.

Qing Yu was also seated obediently, where he did not even dare to look in that direction, deeply afraid if he were to even gaze at the man, his eyes just might be dug out.

By the time Jun Wu Xie came back, that stifling air of a critical crisis then disappeared without a trace. The speed that it happened at, made the two of them feel that they had just imagined it all.

“Young Master Jun, he is really..... your aide?” Xiong Ba asked as he shrunk into his shoulders.

“Mm.” Jun Wu Xie said as she glanced at Jun Wu Yao standing at the side and Jun Wu Yao immediately showed her a dazzling smile, but she turned her head away from him!

“.....” Jun Wu Yao was speechless.

[The little one..... seems to be angry.....]

It was after so long that he finally could get along harmoniously with Jun Wu Xie and might even have a chance to advance in their relationship but..... it was now all ruined. In his heart, Jun Wu Yao had already ground the bones of Xiong Ba’s and Qing Yu’s into dust and scattered them in the wind. If those two people had not chosen to come barging in at the time when he was in a bad mood, why would the little one be unhappy with him?

If Xiong Ba and Qing Yu knew what Jun Wu Yao was thinking, they would have immediately knelt down to plead before the Lord.

The two men were wishing with all their heart that they had never met Jun Wu Yao who was just really too goddamned

terrifying!

His hand having been broken and still held in contempt for intruding into his blissful reunion, who were they expected to run crying to?

“For the next two weeks, do not move this hand too much.” Jun Wu Xie exhorted.

Xiong Ba nodded dazedly, looking like he still had not recovered from being told that the demonic lord was just an aide.

Qing Yu was secretly bowing in deference to Jun Xie in his heart. He had already thought that Jun Xie was almost devilishly talented and now he had even proven himself more heaven defying. To have a man so immensely powerful that was willing to serve as an aide, such a show of dominance was not something anyone would be able to emulate!

“Go back then.” Jun Wu Xie issued her eviction notice.

Xiong Ba cradled his injured hand, and in a hesitant voice, he asked: “About the..... Did anything happen to you at the Heavenly Cloud Chambers? Did Qu Xin Rui.....”

Xiong Ba had not even finished his words when the atmosphere in the room suddenly turned strange. Jun Xie’s eyes turned completely cold and an intense murderous aura was raging behind Xiong Ba’s back.

Xiong Ba almost weeped on the spot, immediately realising that he seemed to have asked a question he should not have asked.

“My hand hurts! I need to go back and recuperate! Deputy! Quick! Help me walk!” Xiong Ba immediately shot to his feet and cradling his hand, he slipped out quickly from the room in escape as Qing Yu hurried to catch up behind.

The Clan Chief and Deputy Clan Chief of the Fiery Blaze Clan ran away, in such a panic under the cold glare of Jun Xie and Jun Wu Yao’s murderous aura that they did not even have time to close the

door behind them!

“Why did you injure them?” Jun Wu Xie asked, glaring at Jun Wu Yao. She did not believe that Jun Wu Yao would be unaware of Xiong Ba’s and Qing Yu’s identities. With Ye Sha here, every single person around her, would be made known to Jun Wu Yao.

Jun Wu Yao looked at Jun Wu Xie’s darkened little face and he coughed lightly to say: “Sorry, am not in a good mood. And went slightly overboard in the heat of the moment.”

Cleaning up the bloodstains just outside the door, Ye Sha and Ye Mei almost choked on their own saliva.

[That was overboard?]

They both thought that Jun Wu Yao had already held himself back with everything he had! Based on the kind of mood he was currently in, not killing Xiong Ba and Qing Yu on the spot was already the greatest mercy shown to the two men! If their Lord had indeed gone “overboard”, those two men would by now have their bodies already completely reduced to ashes! !

Chapter 1059: “Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood (5)”

Having witnessed their Lord Jue’s self restraint, the two of them were almost moved to tears.

They had never seen their own Lord Jue ever held himself back from his desire for slaughter!

Whoever he wanted dead, would not live another moment, and would never just merely have his hand broken. That was already the greatest form of restraint!

However.....

Before Jun Wu Xie, Jun Wu Yao’s self control was really going off the charts!

Jun Wu Xie suddenly tilted her head and stared at Jun Wu Yao, a questioning look in her eyes.

Jun Wu Yao did not want Jun Wu Xie to see the strong murderous aura he held within and he walked over to come before Jun Wu Xie with a wide smile while stretching out a hand to say: “If Little Xie blames me for that, then shall I break this hand of mine as recompense to you?”

And after saying that, Jun Wu Yao was about to break his own hand!

Jun Wu Xie then grabbed Jun Wu Yao’s hand, preventing him from doing something so horrifying.

Jun Wu Yao smiled.

“By not wanting me to break it, does it mean Little Xie wouldn’t blame me anymore?”

“.....” Jun Wu Xie felt as if she had been led in a circle to fall into this quandary but she was not willing to think about it anymore

and just said: “Xiong Ba and his people are still useful to me. Do not hurt them anymore, especially not anywhere near to my room.”

This little bit of injury was really nothing in Jun Wu Xie’s eyes but it bothered her that the faint stench of blood would not disperse within a short period of time.

Jun Wu Yao’s gaze swung over to the figures of Ye Mei and Ye Sha who were hard at work scrubbing the floor. The figure of Ye Mei completely disappeared almost at the same instant that the gaze fell upon him and mere moments later, he rushed into Jun Wu Xie’s room like he had flown to retrieve a bunch of plum blossoms in full bloom, gripped in his hand.

“Young Miss, the fragrance from the plum blossoms would cover some of the blood’s stench and I beg for Young Miss to endure it for a little while more while we get those blood stains completely cleaned up.” Ye Mei said carefully. Only upon seeing Jun Wu Yao retract his gaze, did he then retreat out from the room to continue with the scrubbing of the floor with Ye Sha, squatted down just outside the door.....

The light fragrance of the plum blossoms spread through the air, which helped to reduce the stench of blood a little. Jun Wu Xie looked at the bunch of winter plum blossoms placed upon the table and reached out to pick up a small branch, and stuffed it into Jun Wu Yao’s hand.

A smile came into Jun Wu Yao’s hand.

“The stench is just as bad, from your body.” Jun Wu Xie said seriously.

Realising that the real reason the little one had “gifted flowers” to him was not because of love but disdain, the joy in Jun Wu Yao’s eyes was immediately replaced by depression.

“I’ll go wash up and change right away.” Jun Wu Yao said

quickly with a smile, gripping the stick of plum blossoms in his hand before departing from Jun Wu Xie's room.

The gifting of the flowers had obviously been shoved into his hand in disdain but Jun Wu Yao still gripped it tightly within his hand.

Jun Wu Xie looked at Jun Wu Yao's departing back and her lips flashed with a faint smile that even she herself had not been aware of.

The courtyard that Jun Wu Xie stayed at was one that the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall prepared for guests of theirs and besides Jun Wu Xie, there was no one else staying there at the moment.

Xiong Ba finally returned to his room with Qing Yu's assistance and before he could even settle down, a most nightmarish figure appeared before his eyes.

A loud thump sounded!

Xiong Ba had fallen on his behind to the ground!

"Wha..... What..... do you want?" Xiong Ba was white as a sheet as he stared at Jun Wu Yao.

"I've decided to stay at the same courtyard with Young Master Jun henceforth." Jun Wu Yao said looking at Xiong Ba.

Xiong Ba gulped loudly before he said: "I'll have someone see to it immediately!"

Jun Wu Yao nodded in satisfaction and added: "Have them get a warm bath prepared."

"Of course! Immediately! Right away!" Xiong Ba answered almost by conditioned reflex.

Jun Wu Yao then turned to leave, leaving behind Xiong Ba who had been almost frightened into insanity and Qing Yu who stood there stunned for a long while.....

Chapter 1060: “Jun Wu Xie’s Persistence (1)”

Xiong Ba had never ever seen it in his life, a “personal aide” with such an overwhelming aura. With that kind of overpowering presence, what kind of aide would that make, as even the Grand Chieftain of their Thousand Beast City, Qu Wen Hao would not match up to even a microscopic fraction of it. Even Qu Xin Rui had not made Xiong Ba feel so weak before her.

Once Jun Wu Yao opened his mouth, it seemed to be in Xiong Ba’s subconscious mind to want to immediately kneel to receive his orders, a situation that made Xiong Ba feel like crying.

Where was the dignity of a Clan Chief he was supposed to possess! ?

However, Xiong Ba could do nothing but wipe away his tears in humiliation and quickly got people to clean up a room for Jun Wu Yao without daring to tarry in the slightest, the specifications of the room based exactly on Jun Wu Xie’s one.

In what way was that the treatment meant for an aide? It was obviously how they would do it for an ancestor!

Ye Sha and Ye Mei finally managed to clean up the blood stains from in front of Jun Wu Xie’s room completely after much effort and the stones were polished till they were so smooth they shone before the two were willing to stop.

Jun Wu Yao finished washing up and changed out of his clothes before he brought his fresh smelling self to come into Jun Wu Xie’s room once again.

“Now, do I still smell?” He asked, smiling widely at Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head.

Jun Wu Yao sat down next to Jun Wu Xie and was sensitive enough to detect the little one’s emotions, which seemed to be less cold towards him than before.

“The matter with the Thousand Beast City, how does Little Xie intend to deal with it?” Jun Wu Yao asked, bringing the attention back to the main topic at hand. The objective Jun Wu Xie had coming to the Thousand Beast City, had been told to him by Ye Sha, but even Ye Sha was not fully clear on Jun Wu Xie’s full intentions here.

Before the objective was met, what kind of plans Jun Wu Xie had exactly, was not known to anyone.

“Dumb Qiao and the others are already looking into the location that the people have been imprisoned, and when they send back the news, we can then move.” To resolve the crisis the Thousand Beast City was faced with, the solution to it would not be found within the city itself, but outside instead.

“Do you want me to help?” Jun Wu Yao asked, resting his chin on an upturned palm, looking smilingly at Jun Wu Xie.

“No.” Jun Wu Xie said as she looked at Jun Wu Yao. All this time, although he frequently disappeared for periods, but every time whenever she was in need, he would always appear at the opportune time, resolving any teething problems that she was facing. She had to admit that Jun Wu Yao indeed held an immense amount of power, and any of the problems that Jun Wu Xie had faced so far, would before him, seemingly be easily dealt with.

But she did not want to always be dependant on Jun Wu Yao’s might. If she needed his help in everything, then what kind of meaning would there be to her existence?

She was not willing to be the golden canary under the wing of others. She sought to be able to drive back her enemies with her own hands one fine day, to possess the capability to defend herself, and not one who was just a burden and an encumbrance.

This was what Jun Wu Xie persisted in, and the way she held her pride.

She was not willing to append herself under someone's wing.

“Really? Within the Thousand Beast City, there are several people from the Soul Return Palace and although they would not be considered to be the finest fighters in the Soul Return Palace, but their powers are still beyond what you can currently handle. You might have acquired the method to temporarily raise your spirit powers, but those few people are true and proper Purple Spirits. You should know very clearly how big a gap there is between a true blue Purple Spirit and a temporary Purple Spirit.” Jun Wu Yao said, looking at Jun Wu Xie through narrowed eyes, mercilessly pointing out her inadequacies against the enemy without holding back at all.

“I have never intended to go head on against them.” Jun Wu Xie said. “If might is insufficient, then stratagems are needed to make up for it. If I am unable to even deal with these few people from the Soul Return Palace, would I still dare to say that I would be taking on the Twelve Palaces in future?”

If she chose to seek Jun Wu Yao's help against these enemies right before her, then all that she had promised before would turn to become a joke.

Chapter 1061: “Jun Wu Xie’s Persistence (2)”

If she chose to seek Jun Wu Yao’s help against these enemies right before her, then all that she had promised before would turn to become a joke.

“And if the ploys turn out still insufficient?” Jun Wu Yao’s eyes were fixed on Jun Wu Xie.

“Utilize all that I am able to summon, use all that I am able to make use of. If that still does not work, I will retreat from the vanguard and bide my time as I build my strength, and when the time is ripe, I shall then stride forth to crush the enemy!” Jun Wu Xie’s eyes said, as her eyes flashed with the light of steely determination.

The journey she needed to embark on to go back home, had to be completed by herself, in order for her to gain enough strength to face all her enemies. Only when her own powers grew, would she be able to deter all those powers who sought to snatch her ring spirit from her. That was the only way she would be able to, with her own hands, protect her family she held so dear, from any harm.

She had been the same in her past life, when she escaped from hell, she had only herself to depend on. The only path to survival for her could be carved out only by herself and she was used to fighting her battles all alone, gotten used to facing challenges on her own. Even when the opponent was a hundred times stronger than she was, she had to stake everything she had, and fight with everything she got!

“Retreat from the vanguard..... Bide time to build strength.....” Jun Wu Yao mumbled the words Jun Wu Xie said and he suddenly laughed aloud. “Whatever you want to do, don’t back at all. If you don’t need me to help, I will not make any moves.”

He believed in the little one’s powers and mind. In all the

incidents she had been through, no one had been able to escape from her ploys as yet.

Anyway, he was already by her side and if anything untoward really happened, it still wouldn't be too late for him to make his move at that time.

Truth to be told, Jun Wu Yao hadn't really intended to step forth to completely resolve Jun Wu Xie's predicament for her. He was aware of Jun Wu Xie's persistence and knew that the little one strove to become stronger and that perseverance was not something that he could complete for her on her behalf.

The end of Jun Wu Yao's mouth were turned up in a smile and his eyes were filled up gentleness never seen before in them.

He might not be able to forever accompany her by her side, but if he could just in the time that he was still around, see her gradually walking the path towards greater power, till she gained the power to protect herself, he would be able to set his mind at ease.

There were some things, that Jun Wu Yao would never say to Jun Wu Xie. He would use everything within his power, to provide protection and serve as an escort for Jun Wu Xie, and with the precondition that she would not suffer any critical or mortal harm, to watch her walk towards the pinnacle.

Retreat from the vanguard, bide time to build strength, as Jun Wu Xie had said, was exactly what he was doing at the moment.

Jun Wu Xie raised her head to look at Jun Wu Yao. The time they had spent together wasn't all that long, but she had gradually been able to gain from him a sense of security, as if as long as he was there, she would be able to do everything she wanted without the slightest worry.

"Barring that Dumb Qiao and the others would encounter anything expected, they should be returning in another few days as I am guessing that the place that Qu Xin Rui has hidden those

people isn't too far away from here." Jun Wu Xie said, recomposing herself. Before Qiao Chu and the others sent news back, she still had some time for her preparations.

But, on the other hand, the thing with Qu Xin Rui might not be able to wait much longer.

A deep frown creased up Jun Wu Xie's face. Qu Xin Rui had truly disgusted her this time round. She had initially intended to drag it out with Qu Xin Rui for a period but she was now no longer willing to do it that way!

Even having to cast another glance upon Qu Xin Rui would disgust her.

Seeing Jun Wu Xie frown once more, Jun Wu Yao seemed to have guessed her thoughts. He reached a hand out to smoothen the creases between the brows and said in a gentle voice: "If things disgust you, then don't think of them anymore."

All other things aside, he might not want to interfere. But that Qu Xin Rui's life, he must finish with his own hands!

Chapter 1062: “Jun Wu Xie’s Persistence (3)”

Jun Wu Yao’s words allowed Jun Wu Xie to not go think of what Qu Xin Rui had done and she suddenly remembered something else.

“The seed that you gave me before, what is it actually?” Jun Wu Xie recalled the incident with the Soaring Serpent about the Devious Wyvern and she immediately asked Jun Wu Yao about it.

“Is there anything wrong?” Jun Wu Yao replied with a question instead.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head. “Nothing is wrong, but it’s just something unexpected happened.”

An eyebrow lifted on Jun Wu Yao’s face. That seed was extremely useful towards spirits and would never cause any damage to them, which was why he had dared to let Jun Wu Xie use it. But Jun Wu Xie was now saying that something unexpected had happened and that had really made him pay attention to it.

“What happened?”

“Soaring Serpent, has not disappeared.” Jun Wu Xie said.

“I had previously thought that it had been completely absorbed but some time ago, I encountered a Devious Wyvern in the Thousand Beast City and the Soaring Serpent reacted very strongly towards the Devious Wyvern, where its emotions had even influenced my own emotions. That Devious Wyvern was swallowed up by Lord Meh Meh but it vomited out the spirit stone. The Soaring Serpent had then reacted very intensely towards the Devious Wyvern’s spirit stone. When I placed that spirit stone in my hand, golden tendrils suddenly appeared in my palm which wrapped themselves around the spirit stone and pulled it in to meld into my body. After that, the Soaring Serpent suddenly dragged me into my spirit and that was when I knew it has not

disappeared. It told me that the seed's power repaired its spirit and it wanted me to help it find the Devious Wyvern, to allow it to make a complete recovery." Jun Wu Xie told everything to Jun Wu Yao without hiding anything.

After hearing her out, Jun Wu Yao's eyes narrowed up. "That seed is taken from the Spirit Tree and all spirits in the world are drawn out from the Spirit Tree. Although that seed I gave you has yet to sprout and grow and is unable to reach a level similar to the Spirit Tree itself, but it is still extremely useful towards damaged spirits. The reason I placed it in your body was to let it repair your spirit and the Soaring Serpent had been very crafty to make use of this period to have its own spirit recover as well."

Jun Wu Yao gave a cold laugh. What the Soaring Serpent was thinking, he knew it only too well.

"The Soaring Serpent was just trying to deceive you to make you help it find the Spirit Tree, that would allow it to escape back to the Spirit World. The Devious Wyvern is able to open up a door that leads to the Spirit World but....." A sinister smile suddenly surfaced to show upon Jun Wu Yao's face.

"And it was all due to strong intensity of the Soaring Serpent's consciousness that pressed the Spirit Tree's seed to react. The Spirit Tree's seed is already melded together with your spirit as one and it would naturally act according in your interests and will put a stop to all that is harmful to your spirit, while at the same time..... act when there is anything beneficial to you." Jun Wu Yao said as he lifted Jun Wu Xie's tiny face, his eyes filled with smiles.

"Little Xie, you have unconsciously picked up a real treasure."

Jun Wu Xie blinked her eyes blankly, not really understanding what he meant.

"The Devious Wyvern is able to open up a door that leads to the Spirit World but its spirit stone was absorbed by you instead. That would also mean..... you will be getting your second ring spirit."

Jun Wu Yao said with a wide smile.

Jun Wu Xie was surprised.

“Second ring spirit?”

Jun Wu Yao nodded. “The Soul Return Palace among the Twelve Palaces is the only one that is constantly attempting to use spirits as a medium to elevate their standings. In their hands, they hold many ways to make use of spirits and they even have a method, though with much difficulty, where they are able to absorb spirits, but nothing compared to yours, a little one whose body itself is already equipped with the most perfect method to devour spirits.”

Chapter 1063: “Exploit Its Worth (1)”

“But, I have tried with other spirit stones, but there hasn’t been any similar reactions.” Jun Wu Xie was rather confused with all of this and if it was said that she could really devour spirits through their spirit stones, why did it not work with other spirit stones?

Jun Wu Yao laughed and said: “Although spirit stones contain spirit powers, they are not considered to be true spirit bodies and you will not be able to directly devour spirit stones. Only the seed from the Spirit Tree is able to extract the spirit powers from a spirit stone to be devoured by you. But as the Spirit Tree’s seed is now still too young, its abilities is still extremely limited. If not for the intensity of the Soaring Serpent’s emotions that incited the seed’s innate abilities, the seed usually wouldn’t use its powers upon any spirit stones. Moreover, other Spirit Beasts do not possess such unique powers and the Spirit Tree will only resonate with unique spirits.”

If Jun Wu Xie wanted to devour the spirits of Spirit Beasts through spirit stones, she would first need the Spirit Tree’s seed to transform it but the Spirit Tree’s seed only reacts to spirit stones from certain kinds of Spirit Beasts.

Jun Wu Xie thought about it for a moment, and was able to gain a rudimentary understanding of the meaning behind it.

“The second ring spirit. What would it be?” Jun Wu Xie looked down and stared at her fingers. Even though she was unable to see her spirit ring’s actual form, but she was well aware that it was there on her finger.

“Spirits have their own consciousness and all ring spirits that exists have always been the ones who picks their owners. With Little Xie being so outstanding, your second ring spirit would not be all that bad.” Jun Wu Yao said reassuringly, rubbing Jun Wu Xie on the head.

Jun Wu Xie raised her head and looked at Jun Wu Yao.

“What is your ring spirit like?”

She had never seen Jun Wu Yao use any ring spirits and it might be because he was too powerful himself where he had been able to deal with everything he had faced himself without even needing his ring spirit to act at all.

The smile on Jun Wu Yao’s lips grew slightly lighter as he looked at Jun Wu Xie with his eyes fixed upon her, looking like he was thinking about something.

“I do not possess any ring spirits.” He said slowly.

Jun Wu Xie was slightly shocked. There were some people who existed in this world, whose ring spirits did not even awaken, but..... people without ring spirits, would experience extremely slow growth in their spirit powers, and for them to become someone as powerful as Jun Wu Yao, was virtually impossible.

But Jun Wu Yao had just said that he did not have any ring spirit.....

The gaze that was looking at Jun Wu Xie turned questioning as Jun Wu Yao asked with a smile: “After knowing I do not possess a ring spirit, will Little Xie start to despise me?”

Jun Wu Xie immediately shook her head.

“Even without any ring spirits, Little Xie has to believe that I will still be able to give you protection.” Jun Wu Yao’s eyes were smiling and his words were filled with complete confidence!

Jun Wu Xie lowered her head and did not reply. Seeing Jun Wu Xie looking like that, an indiscernible feeling came over Jun Wu Yao and he gently reached out his hand to envelope Jun Wu Xie into his embrace.

“The Soaring Serpent seeking to escape, is not really all that unreasonable, as for every single day that it remains within your

body, you will continue to devour its power. Even if the Spirit Tree's seed continues to treat it, it will still be unable to free itself from the draining of its power. As long as you make it remain obediently within your body, it will provide you with immeasurable help. Even till the point..... that for all your future spirit level breakthroughs, you will not need to devour any other ring spirits, and just absorb powers solely from it, which would be already sufficient." An evil flame was blazing within Jun Wu Yao's eyes. To think that a mere beast was even thinking of deceiving his little one? She should then do all she could to exploit and squeeze out every single drop of all of it's worth.

"Can I?" Jun Wu Xie looked up. If that was truly the case, it would really be much more convenient.

Chapter 1064: “Exploit Its Worth (2)”

“Sure you can. You will just need your spirit power to reach its peak and you can employ the same method you used previously to tame it by doing it again.” Jun Wu Yao said with a gentle smile, but his words were dripping with venom.

The Soaring Serpent would never have dreamed that by having revealed itself in a moment of anxiety, it would suddenly find itself to have earned the wrath of a certain demonic lord so shortly after.

“I can do the breakthrough right now.” Jun Wu Xie said in all seriousness. She had remained at the peak of the green spirit for a rather long period and she had not advanced to the next level all this time because she had not found a suitable time to do it. But now that Jun Wu Yao was here by her side, her heart had settled down, feeling as secure as she had back when she was at the Lin Palace.

“Alright, I’ll help you keep up the protection.” Jun Wu Yao said as he pinched Jun Wu Xie’s nose. Although her looks were now different after having altered them, but the pair of eyes that shot right into one’s soul, looked just like they had before, and just a single glance from them, was unforgettable for life.

And they worked on it immediately. Jun Wu Xie did not hesitate in the slightest and immediately climbed onto the bed to sit in a half lotus position, preparing herself for the advancement. Jun Wu Yao sat quietly on one side, to stand guard.

Jun Wu Xie sent her consciousness into her spirit and within the vast darkness, she saw the same pair of snake eyes that lit up like flames.

“Kid, you’re here? Did you manage to find the Devious Wyvern?” The Soaring Serpent’s enormous body peeked out within the darkness, its pair of eyes filled with greed and anxiety.

Jun Wu Xie stared at the Soaring Serpent and did not say a word, but just went on to repeat the actions she had done, when she had absorbed the Soaring Serpent's spirit the first time.

Suddenly, the Soaring Serpent felt it. The feeling it had once felt before enshrouding over its spirit! It had just managed to recover some of its spirit powers after so much hardship and it was now being stripped out from it bit by bit!

“Kid! What are you doing! ?”

Its spirit powers was flowing out continuously which greatly startled the Soaring Serpent. It wanted to escape from Jun Wu Xie in horror but being trapped within Jun Wu Xie's spirit, there was nowhere it could run to!

The surrounding darkness was stripping away at its spirit and its strength was decreasing at an alarming rate.

Jun Wu Xie raised her head slightly and stared at the highly flustered Soaring Serpent.

“Apologies, before you make use of me, I have to continue to make use of you.”

The Soaring Serpent's heart jumped and it was feeling highly distressed. It had thought that Jun Wu Xie would continue to use other ring spirits to raise her own powers and had not expected Jun Wu Xie would turn her attention back onto it. Compared to other ring spirits, the Soaring Serpent was without question stronger, and even in its current state where its spirit was incomplete, its powers still surpassed any ring spirit Jun Wu Xie had since devoured after it!

A moment of greed, had thrown the Soaring Serpent into a helpless quandary. It had already been devoured by Jun Wu Xie and its spirit was completely not under its control at that moment. It could be said that in here, Jun Wu Xie would be able to give and take as she chose.

“No! No! How did it become like this! How could it become like this!” The Soaring Serpent twisted its body, trying to shake off the feeling, but it was all in futility.

It had wanted to deceive Jun Wu Xie to achieve its own aims, but it had not thought that it would finally still fail to be a match for this cunning little girl, resulting in it losing everything, even itself in the bargain.

Within the room, Jun Wu Yao had his arms crossed before his chest as he leaned against the bed, his eyes fixed upon Jun Wu Xie who had fallen into the world of her spirit. His gaze was involuntarily drawn to Jun Wu Xie’s red luscious little mouth and a smile flashed within his eyes. He slowly bent his back and went close to Jun Wu Xie’s face.

In a situation where she could not feel anything, he lightly planted a light kiss upon those lips.

Stopping with just a light taste, and not savouring it fully.

Chapter 1065: “Exploit Its Worth (3)”

When Jun Wu Xie regained consciousness, the spirit powers within her body reached new heights. And this time, the time she took to complete the breakthrough compared to the past, was significantly reduced.

The moment she opened her eyes, Jun Wu Yao's handsome looking face showed within her eyes. Jun Wu Xie shifted her gaze slightly. The sky outside the window had turned completely dark and warm candles had been lit within the room, the candlelight shining against the profile of Jun Wu Yao's face, drawing out its perfect contours prominently.

Momentarily dazzled, Jun Wu Xie was suddenly rather distracted.

“Congrats! Little Xie is now one step closer towards the true Purple Spirit.” A low and husky voice sounded beside Jun Wu Xie's ear and Jun Wu Yao reached out a hand, lifting the strands of hair that had fallen down the side of Jun Wu Xie's face.

For no reason, Jun Wu Xie felt an indescribable warmth surge throughout her body and she cringed back subconsciously.

The strands of hair hooked over Jun Wu Yao's finger, had with Jun Wu Xie's retreat, brought traces of chill across Jun Wu Yao's fingertip, plucking at his deep rooted heartstrings.

“Do you feel strange in anyway?” Jun Wu Yao's eyes reflected the candlelight, seemingly not understanding.

“It was much easier than before.” The breakthrough this time, had not only greatly reduced the amount of time it took, but the process of devouring had become strangely easy as well.

Jun Wu Yao said with a smile: “That would naturally be the case. The first time you devoured a spirit was that of a Soaring Serpent and even when the Soaring Serpent's spirit had regained its

strength, but by absorbing from the same spirit again, it would naturally save you a lot of trouble. As the Soaring Serpent will be unable to resist against you devouring it, as long as you want to, it would have no choice but to give up its power.”

A devilish smile arced up at the corners of Jun Wu Yao’s mouth. To be able to provide power to Jun Wu Xie, should be the honour of the Soaring Serpent.

If not for the fact that it still had some use, he would have at the instant upon discovering that the Soaring Serpent intended to make use of Jun Wu Xie, dragged its spirit out from Jun Wu Xie’s body, and crushed its soul to scatter into non existence.

Just a mere beast and it dared to have delusions of using Jun Wu Xie? It really hadn’t seen death.

“Would I then be able to keep using the Soaring Serpent to complete my breakthroughs from now on?” Jun Wu Xie asked, looking at Jun Wu Yao. Breakthroughs to the next level had become extremely easy and she would no longer need to worry about searching for a ring spirit for her breakthroughs in future.

“That depends on how much the Soaring Serpent is able to recover from the Spirit Tree’s seed healing. If the healing is strong enough and the speed of the Soaring Serpent’s recovery is able to keep up with your accumulated spirit energies, then it will work. But if the speed of its recovery is too slow, it does not mean that you have to depend only on it. Continuing to absorb the same kind of ring spirit might be easier, but that will not be the only choice.” Jun Wu Yao said slowly, never taking his eyes off the strands of hair fallen over Jun Wu Xie’s face.

The luxuriant long black hair was draped carelessly over the shoulder, flowing down upon the back towards the hips. Although the little figure before his eyes was dressed in men’s clothes, and her looks altered, but Jun Wu Yao knew deep inside, behind what that hair covered.....

Jun Wu Yao's adam's apple moved and he quickly turned his gaze away. Seeing Jun Wu Xie's face under the candlelight, though with the countenance changed, but that pair of eyes would never ever change.

“You just completed your breakthrough and would be drained. I've gotten someone to prepare dinner and asked them bring it over.” Jun Wu Yao said and he very naturally stretched out his hands to carry Jun Wu Xie off the bed.

His words have barely fallen when Ye Sha and Ye Mei had pushed open the door, their hands filled with steaming hot dishes and rice.

The two men were conscientious enough to not lift the eyes, but just quietly placed the food down and scrambled off like a bolt.

Chapter 1066: “You’re Kidding (1)”

Jun Wu Xie was really hungry. The spirit level breakthrough had drained her out and when she saw the table filled with so much food, she picked up her chopsticks immediately. Seeing her enjoy the food so much, Jun Wu Yao picked up his chopsticks smilingly and tasted a mouthful of it. The taste that filled his mouth made the demon lord immediately spit the food out.

“.....” Jun Wu Xie was sipping at her porridge when she saw Jun Wu Yao spitting out the prawn he had just put into his mouth and she blinked her eyes blankly.

“Ye Sha.” Jun Wu Yao lifted up the napkin from the table gracefully and dapped it against the corner of his mouth and said.

Ye Sha immediately appeared within the room and knelt before Jun Wu Yao.

“Your subordinate is present!”

“Remove all these dishes and you go prepare another table of food with Ye Mei.” Jun Wu Yao ordered.

“Yes!” Ye Sha immediately lowered his head and brought out the whole table of food, removing even the rice bowl from before Jun Wu Xie, leaving her only with the mouthful of porridge she had left in the spoon she was still holding in her hand.

She had only taken two mouthful and why had Jun Wu Yao ordered for all the food to be removed?

Jun Wu Xie was feeling ravenous and the eyes she was looking at Jun Wu Yao with were involuntarily tinged with a faint trace of complaint.

Jun Wu Yao stroked her head good naturedly and said: “How can I allow such horrible food to taint your mouth?”

He had asked Xiong Ba to get people to prepare all that food and

it had all turned out to be completely unpalatable.

Jun Wu Xie was stunned for a moment before she understood what Jun Wu Yao meant.

The little black cat at the side silently raised its paw and covered it over its eyes. Although the food that Xiong Ba had provided was not comparable to the gourmet dishes from the big restaurants, but it was still not that bad. Even then, when it was put into Jun Wu Yao's mouth, it had become something he found extremely hard to swallow.....

To the point that if he allowed Jun Wu Xie to eat it, he felt that it would taint Jun Wu Xie's tongue!

Towards a certain demon lord's actions of crazed lunacy, the little black cat found that it could not bear to watch any further!

That demon lord's taste buds must have been spoilt and overly indulged by Ye Sha and Ye Mei!

The pair's culinary skills were superb and there could be no qualms about that. But..... come on! That didn't mean that any random personal aide in this world one dragged out could become an emissary of the God of Cookery!

Jun Wu Xie was still stunned and Jun Wu Yao reached his hand over to take the spoon from her hand to carelessly toss out the window.....

"Wait just awhile more, before you eat." Jun Wu Yao said with a smile.

Jun Wu Xie was speechless as she saw her last mouthful of porridge being thrown out together with the spoon. At that moment, her stomach growled fittingly with how she was feeling, seemingly protesting against Jun Wu Yao's "absolute tyranny".

"I did not think that they tasted bad." Jun Wu Xie said as she looked at Jun Wu Yao. Great taste to her was not something she pursued, but as long as the food could ensured her body could

function and provide sufficient calories, all other aspects did not make much of a difference to her.

“Why make yourself suffer?” Jun Wu Yao asked with a smile.

“.....” She did not think she was suffering at all!

Ye Sha and Ye Mei threw the entire table full of food in the kitchen of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall. When the workers in the kitchen saw the two towering figures suddenly appear in their kitchen, their faces were filled with shocked and before they could even react, they were all thrown out of the kitchen by Ye Sha and Ye Mei.

The workers immediately flew and charged to Xiong Ba, in tearful complaint.

Xiong Ba’s hand was still throbbing in pain and when he heard that two overbearing men had taken over their kitchen in the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, a twitch began to pull at his mouth.

“Clan Chief! Are you really not going to bother with it?” Qing Yu asked, staring at Xiong Ba’s fully darkened face.

Xiong Ba raised his splintered hand still wearing a cast and waved it right before Qing Yu’s eyes.

“I have to be able to do anything about it in the first place!”

Chapter 1067: “You’re Kidding (2)”

Ye Sha and Ye Mei sent in the food very quickly into Jun Wu Xie’s room. Compared to that pair’s culinary skills, the food brought in earlier from the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall’s kitchen could really only be described as totally unpalatable.

Finally being able to eat, Jun Wu Xie did not say a single word.

Jun Wu Yao looked at Jun Wu Xie’s profile as she enjoyed the feast and even before picking up his chopsticks, he already felt full.

Before they had even finished the meal, a knock sounded on Jun Wu Xie’s door and Jun Wu Yao got up to open the door.

Qing Yu who was standing outside, had upon seeing Jun Wu Yao’s attractive looking face which had a smile plastered upon it, immediately shivered involuntarily.

“Is anything the matter?” Jun Wu Yao’s face was smiling, but the gaze from that pair of eyes seemed to be telling Qing Yu, [Report if there’s something, scram if nothing.]

Qing Yu gulped noisily and said: “People from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers are here, saying they would like to invite Jun Xie to go over for dinner.”

Qing Yu’s voice had barely dropped when Jun Wu Yao’s eyes suddenly flashed brightly with intense murder!

The murderous aura caused Qing Yu to instantly hold his breath, and his face immediately turned white.

From inside the room, Jun Wu Xie had heard Qing Yu’s words clearly. The words “Heavenly Cloud Chambers” had completely ruined her appetite.

“I refuse.” Jun Wu Xie said coldly. She didn’t feel like seeing Qu Xin Rui in the slightest at that moment.

“Heard that?” Jun Wu Yao said, looking at Qing Yu with an

eyebrow raised. Qing Yu immediately nodded his head and did not dare protest in the least as he ran away as if in escape.

Jun Wu Yao closed the door shut and looked at Jun Wu Xie who had lost her appetite.

“Dumb Qiao and the others have not sent back news which should mean they are already on their tail. It won’t be much longer before they will find out where those people have been imprisoned and there is no need for me to go deal with Qu Xin Rui now.” Jun Wu Xie said expressionlessly, as if she was explaining to Jun Wu Yao why she had suddenly refused Qu Xin Rui’s invitation.

“Don’t go if you don’t want to. Looking at that face will only spoil your appetite. You should rather look at me, it will make the food go down easier.” Jun Wu Yao said smilingly, the flash of murder in his eyes earlier seemingly just an illusion.

Jun Wu Xie glanced at Jun Wu Yao and then silently lowered her head to continue eating.

Outside the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, Shen Chi’s face was smiling as he waited to escort Jun Xie to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. But after waiting for a while, he saw only Qing Yu coming out from the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall alone.

“Apologies, Young Master Jun just had his dinner and I’m afraid he would not be able to dine with the Great Aunt today.” Qing Yu said regretfully as he looked at Shen Chi.

The smile on Shen Chi’s face immediately turned into one of displeasure as he looked inside the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall and the corners of his mouth curled up into a sneer. “Since that is the case, I shall then be making my way back.”

“I’ll see you out.” Qing Yu said politely.

Shen Chi turned around and left before Qing Yu heaved a sigh of relief, but a growing worry rose within his heart at the same time. Shen Chi’s expression had not been pretty when he left just now

and if even Shen Chi had such a reaction, he wondered when Jun Xie's refusal reached Qu Xin Rui's ears, what kind of consequences would that bring about.

In the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, Shen Chen told the news that Jun Wu would not be coming to Qu Xin Rui and sitting at her dressing table as she enjoyed the favoured men combing out her hair, Qu Xin Rui's facial expression immediately turned gloomy.

“She's not coming?”

“Right.” Shen Chen replied.

Qu Xin Rui snorted in disdain and the aura around her body turned highly dangerous. Standing right behind her, the favoured man's hand trembled and broke one strand of Qu Xin Rui's hair by mistake.

Qu Xin Rui immediately shot to her feet and kicked that favoured man onto the ground.

“Useless trash!”

Chapter 1068: “Venomous Woman (1)”

The favoured man clutched at his abdomen with his face turned pale as he fell to the ground, but he did not dare to even let out a single groan despite the pain and just hurried to kneel down pleading for mercy.

“Great Aunt, it’s my mistake. I beg for Great Aunt to spare my life.”

Qu Xin Rui’s face was grave as she stared at the man. The silk scarf that had been looped around her wrist had fallen slowly to the ground and over the smooth and fair skin of her arm, a patch of crinkled and old looking skin had suddenly appeared. Initially, that had only showed somewhere around her wrist but it had now spread up higher her arm. If one was to only look at that joint on her arm, anyone would think the arm to have belonged to an elderly old lady, highly advanced in age.

“Guards, take him away from here.” Qu Xin Rui said coldly.

The favoured man pleaded continuously but he was forcibly dragged out by the guards of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

Qu Xin Rui put down her arm, but the expression on her face was still looking concerned.

Shen Chi’s gaze fell upon the patch of old and wrinkly skin on Qu Xin Rui’s arm, and his brows lifted up slightly.

“The speed you are aging at seems to be get faster and faster.”

Qu Xin Rui was startled and she lowered her gaze to look at the arm exposed to Shen Chi’s gaze. Her face froze and she immediately pulled her sleeve over it, to cover her arm.

“Damn it. What is really happening? I have been using that for the last few days and why is it still like this?” Qu Xin Rui said as her face creased up in a frown, her expression looking highly irritable. Usually after using that, she would regain back her youth

but this time, for some reason, there had been no effect.

“This situation actually started from the day of the birthday banquet. Did Qu Ling Yue enter the Heavenly Cloud Chambers that day?” Qu Xin Rui asked.

Shen Chi shook his head. “That thing cannot get close to any other female besides you, so how would we allow Qu Ling Yue to come in here? She just did the same thing as she had done in previous years, kowtowing outside the doors and leaving after that.”

“In future, don’t even let her kowtow at the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.” Qu Xin Rui said, and after a pause, she continued: “If she needs to offer her well wishes, doing it at the other end of the street will do.”

“And, that thing who didn’t know who he offended, just have him sacrificed. Maybe too little spirits have been offered up in sacrifice recently and that thing’s powers have decreased.” Qu Xin Rui’s tone sounded slightly flustered. Now, it was just her arm that had showed signs of aging, but if this continued on, she didn’t know if the situation would spread throughout her body. If she were to be faced with all that wrinkled up skin, she would not be able to bear it.

“I sacrificed so much before I was able to achieve such youthful beauty. I will never let anyone destroy it.”

“If you want to offer a sacrifice, I’m afraid one person alone might not be enough.” Shen Chi naturally knew what Qu Xin Rui was referring to.

Qu Xin Rui then said: “Just pick out a few more out from the men. You just decide on it your own.”

The men Qu Xin Rui was referring to were those favoured men living in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. Every month, Qu Xin Rui would pick out several youthful and good looking men from the

Thousand Beast City to come into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers to serve her, but the number of favoured men in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers had not grown to become too big a number and from among all those favoured men who were admitted into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, not a single one had left from the place.

Without the explicit permission from Qu Xin Rui, no one was allowed to enter the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and were not allowed to come into any contact with the favoured men of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. Hence, no one outside had the slightest idea what really happened to the men who were admitted into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

“Alright, I’ll make the arrangements in a moment.” Shen Chi said, and his eyes then flashed with a malicious glint.

“One more thing. How do you intend to deal with the matter with Jun Xie? From the way I see it, he does not seem too willing to accept your suggestion.” Shen Chi said with a smile on his face, as he looked at Qu Xin Rui.

Chapter 1069: “Venomous Woman (2)”

Qu Xin Rui had repeatedly extended her invitation for Jun Xie to come to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and Jun Xie had accepted them the first few times. But in regards to Qu Xin Rui’s request for them to collaborate and work together, Jun Xie had not given any indication of a positive reply but had instead dragged it out time and time again. And this time, Jun Xie had just outright refused to come to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. Such an attitude did not seem to be telling Qu Xin Rui that Jun Xie was willing to cooperate with her.

“Seems like your beauty had not been able to move the little Emperor at all and he had even given you such a superfluous reason to reject the invitation. If my guess is correct, I’m afraid he will not be coming here to see you anymore.” Shen Chi said.

Qu Xin Rui clenched her jaw tightly. It wasn’t that she had been oblivious of Jun Xie’s perfunctory responses, but it was just that she had not expected even after she had employed all her charms, there could actually be a male that could still remain so calm, who had not only not been mesmerized, but had even been able to completely disregard her allure!

This was the point, against the high regard and absolute confidence Qu Xin Rui had towards her own beauty, took to be the most serious humiliation.

“Since he refused the politely proffered wine, he will now then be given the wine as punishment.” Qu Xin Rui said with derision in her voice.

Shen Chi looked at Qu Xin Rui’s darkened expression and went on to remind her to say: “People on the Lower Realm are weak and powerless. To make Jun Xie submit wouldn’t be a difficult task at all. But you must think clearly on one point. He is still the Emperor of the Fire Country and if you really come to inflict any harm upon

him, it will not be easy to answer to the people in the Fire Country. The strength behind the Fire Country is of utmost importance to us and if we can convince the Fire Country to mobilise their troops to go down to the Heaven's End Cliff, then our exploration of the Heaven's End Cliff will definitely be much faster than anything we will be able to achieve with the Thousand Beast City."

With just that puny little youth, it was deemed to be beneath Shen Chi to pay him any attention. What really caught his attention was the might of the Fire Country behind Jun Xie!

The biggest country of the Lower Realm, their military might an inestimable number.

"I do not believe that anyone under the Heavens can resist gaining everlasting youth and eternal life! He had refused it so decisively and did not seem too interested in gaining the power of the Purple Spirit. Don't tell me..... other Palaces have already come into contact with him?" Qu Xin Rui was startled by her own sudden realization. There were seven among the Twelve Palaces who held a portion of the Dark Emperor's tomb in their hands and besides the Soul Return Palace, the other palaces who held the maps must also be up to something.

The Fire Country might not be even worth mentioning in the Middle Realm, but as a sacrificial lamb, they would be the best choice in the Lower Realm.

Shen Chi had considered the same worry that Qu Xin Rui had, but he quickly shook his head.

"If it is said that other palaces wanted to make use of the Fire Country, I will not be surprised in the least. But Jun Xie was not from the legitimate and reigning Imperial Family in the Fire Country. He had suddenly taken over the Fire Country's throne and the other palaces are not doing it like we are doing here to remain permanently in the Lower Realm. Jun Xie had not ascended to the Fire Country's throne for long and the previous

ruler was forced to abdicate, so how could he give up his throne willingly? Even if people from the other palaces have contacted the Fire Country's Emperor, it will not be with this little Emperor who had just ascended into the throne, but the previous Emperor, and he surely would not be willing to hand over the benefits the people of the Twelve Palaces were providing to them so readily." Shen Chi said and then paused before he went on.

"What we need to do now is, before any of the other palaces comes into contact with Jun Xie, pull him over to join our camp, and make the Fire Country in her hands work for us. As long as he still remains in the Thousand Beast City, we will stand a better chance than any of the other palaces."

Judging from the timing, Jun Xie would seem to have made his way to the Thousand Beast City on the same day almost immediately after his ascension to the throne. Shen Chi was confident that even if the other palaces have received the news, they would definitely not have enough time to discuss about cooperating with the little Emperor who had just ascended into the throne!

Chapter 1070: “Venomous Woman (3)”

“But he is unwilling to cooperate with us now.” Qu Xin Rui said in a fluster as she bit on her nails. “Jun Xie isn’t Qu Wen Hao and the might of the Fire Country is highly powerful in the Lower Realm. I had heard that the Empress Dowager of the Fire Country holds a group of secret assassins and it seems that their powers are not too far off from the Purple Spirit. When Jun Xie ascended into the throne, the Empress Dowager had been highly supportive and if we are to try to control the Fire Country with the same method we use to control the Thousand Beast City, we stand to meet with failure. Jun Xie came from the Zephyr Academy and I have sent people to look into detailed information about her, but they had not been able to find out anything about her birth, which renders us unable to use her family members to hold her hostage. Even if we succeed in controlling Jun Xie, whether the Fire Country will be willing submit to us for their new little Emperor will be another question as the Fire Country still has an Empress Dowager holding the fort. If that old witch decides to abandon Jun Xie and push another Emperor onto the throne, then we’ll stand to gain nothing from it at all.”

Qu Xin Rui was feeling highly frustrated as she was finding it rather hard to deal with Jun Xie’s refusal.

Without a handhold to use as blackmail against him, they were unable to ascertain if they would be able to use Jun Xie to force the Fire Country to submit to them. It would not be that easy to take on the biggest country in the Lower Realm but at the same time, it was a big fatty piece of meat that they were reluctant to let go of.

Shen Chi fell deep in thought. How to force Jun Xie to submit to them was the most impertinent question they needed an answer to.

Suddenly, Qu Xin Rui seemed to have thought of something and she opened her mouth to say: “Maybe Jun Xie isn’t really without

any weakness that we can exploit.”

“Oh? Have you really thought of a plan?” Shen Chi asked with an eyebrow raised.

Qu Xin Rui’s lips curled up to smile sinisterly as her gaze turned alluringly to Shen Chi to say: “Didn’t Lin Que tell me before, that the Devious Wyvern of mine was swallowed up by Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast?”

“To be able to swallow up the Devious Wyvern, it must be a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. Don’t tell me you are going to target his Spirit Beast?” Shen Chi asked.

Qu Xin Rui laughed aloud. “Why not? Not everybody is able to own a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast and a fully tame one at that. Having come so far away from the Fire Country but he still brought the Spirit Beast to keep by his side, the bond between him and that Spirit Beast must be very strong. To make a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast submit to you, it is impossible if one did not pay an equivalent price. Even though Jun Xie has a very cold and indifferent personality, but I am somewhat inclined to believe that he treasures that Guardian Grade Spirit Beast quite a lot. Since I am unable to locate her family members, just maybe, that Guardian Grade Spirit Beast will be able to give us the help we need.”

Shen Chi’s heart jumped slightly in shock. Seeing the deceitful and cunning smile on Qu Xin Rui, he had to say although Qu Xin Rui was a woman, but when it came to such deep and exploitative scheming, the viciousness and merciless methods, none among the other three of them could compare to her. For a person who climbed up from the Lower Realm, and was still able to remain in the Soul Return Palace to achieve her current position today, it must be said that Qu Xin Rui’s methods, were beyond the average person.

“That is still a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. Even if you and I

were to join forces, taking it down would still pose a certain level of difficulty for us.” Shen Chi said.

Qu Xin Rui looked at Shen Chi with an eyebrow arched high up.

“Have you forgotten, where this place that we are at is?”

Shen Chi was stunned for a moment and a smile of understanding immediately came to show on his face.

“The Spirit Taming Bone Flute is held in the hands of Qu Wen Hao and with that thing, besides the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City, no one will be able to use it. Although Qu Wen Hao could still be considered to be rather obedient these few years, his resentment against you shouldn’t be overlooked. I’m afraid that he might just not be willing to undertake the risks of danger that comes with trying to control a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast.”

Qu Xin Rui then said with a cold laugh: “For his daughter, he will be willing to do anything.”

“You are truly, very cruel.” Shen Chi laughed. To even make use of her own blood kin, Qu Xin Rui was truly vicious!

Chapter 1071: “Venomous Woman (4)”

“When man does not fight for himself to live, the world will come to an end. If I am able to gain a firm standing in the Soul Return Palace, to the Thousand Beast City, wouldn’t it be also a good thing for them?” Qu Xin Rui did not feel that she was being that cruel. To climb from the Lower Realm into the Middle Realm, just how enormous an amount of effort did she expend, how much she had had to sacrifice, and how much had she put out? Nobody would be allowed to impede her. Anyone who stood to obstruct her would have to die!

“To succeed in big things, how could one tie oneself down with such trivialities? Even if I have to tread over the bones of thousands, I will achieve a higher position for myself. Moreover..... when all of you agreed to work together with me, wasn’t this exactly the point that all of you liked in me? When the Elder asked all of you to seek an appropriate power in the Lower Realm but you secretly held on to the map and roped me in to take control the Thousand Beast City. Wasn’t that because you knew that I wouldn’t care in the least about the lives of all these people? Since we have all chosen to do it this way, there is nothing else here that I will find unbearable to exploit. If I succeed here, your own positions in the Soul Return Palace will be elevated exponentially as well!” Qu Xin Rui said, looking coquettishly at Shen Chi.

Shen Chi smiled. “You’re right. Since you are giving it all you’ve got, how could I stand back and not act accordingly? Rest assured. For the sacrificial offering, I will get it all settled tonight and you will be able to regain your youthful beauty tomorrow. As for the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, you will have to deal with it on your own, as it is..... Qu Wen Hao doesn’t like the idea of us getting too close to his Grand Chieftain’s Residence.”

“I will get that done.” Qu Xin Rui said, her eyes narrowing up.

.....

The dark night encompassed the Thousand Beast City and Qu Ling Yue was sitting within her room, holding a brand new handkerchief in her hand. On that pure white handkerchief, two graceful Chinese characters were embroidered beautifully upon it, small and exquisite, but filled with the weighty thoughts and feelings of a girl's heart inside.

Qu Ling Yue's eyes stared at the embroidered characters that read "Jun Xie" on the handkerchief and as she stared, a faint pink flush rose into her cheeks. She bit on her lip and covered her face with the handkerchief. With the handkerchief over her face, she gave out a soft and delight squeal.

The thought of a young girl was always so tenuous and unpredictable. Alone in the room and just by looking at the person's name, she was suddenly overcome with a feeling of bliss, as if the person was currently seen through that layer of thin gauze, smiling at her with a gentleness she had never seen before.

Loss in that moment of bliss, a shadow blocked out the candlelight, shrouding Qu Ling Yue in darkness. Qu Ling Yue was suddenly shocked as she sat up hurriedly!

In her shock, she saw a figure dressed in red, and realised it was the amorous Qu Xin Rui standing before her as the cotton handkerchief slipped off her face onto the floor.

"Great Grand aunt!" Qu Ling Yue immediately fell to a kneel upon the floor in nervousness, the pink tinge on her cheeks fading away instantly.

Qu Xin Rui looked at the pretty faced Qu Ling Yue kneeling on the ground. Qu Ling Yue's features were not considered to be stunning, but when summed up together, it exuded a lively energy that only young girls possessed, where just a slight smile would be able to make people feel the as if the girl was as beautiful as a hundred flowers in full bloom. In terms of looks, Qu Ling Yue

could not compare with Qu Xin Rui's ravishing beauty, but the kind of innocent beauty that a young girl possessed would be beyond Qu Xin Rui's reach for the rest of her life.

Qu Xin Rui narrowed her eyes as her gaze swung over to the handkerchief fallen to the floor. She bent down and picked it up and nervousness flickered in Qu Ling Yue's gaze.

The two characters that read "Jun Xie" fell into Qu Xin Rui's eyes and they immediately flashed with a sharp glint!

She looked up and saw Qu Ling Yue's tiny face looking flustered and so very pitiful and Qu Xin Rui's eyes burned with detest and hatred.

"Ling Yue, you are interested in little Young Master Jun?"

Chapter 1072: “Venomous Woman (5)”

Having had her thoughts seen through with that statement, Qu Ling Yue’s quickly turned fully bright red. She lowered her head and seemed highly embarrassed as her hands tugged nervously at the corners of her clothes.

A young girl’s coy and shy demeanour, was the most beautiful adornment. That slight pink flush of the cheeks, had immediately lent to Qu Xin Rui’s not too exceptionally beautiful face an additional enchanting allure, which only drove the hatred in Qu Xin Rui’s eyes to suddenly turn into pure venom.

“You and little Young Master Jun first met in the Fire Country?”

“Yes.” Qu Ling Yue did not know why Qu Xin Rui had suddenly appeared within her room. Her room door was locked and she had not heard any sound of movements at all.

Although Qu Ling Yue had been trying very hard to avoid Qu Xin Rui all these years, but every time they met, Qu Ling Yue had always felt that Qu Xin Rui detested her in some way. The fact that Qu Xin Rui disliked her was a point Qu Ling Yue was well aware of by now, so why would Qu Xin Rui suddenly come here to seek her out in the middle of the night today?

And does her father know anything about this?

“And you are on very good terms with him?” Qu Xin Rui asked, in a voice that did not allow one to discern her intentions.

Qu Ling Yue’s head sank even lower.

“Young Master Jun..... saved my life then..... He..... he is my benefactor.....”

Qu Ling Yue stuttered softly in a gentle voice, scratching Qu Xin Rui painfully in the ears. Although she had regained back her beauty just like when she was in her twenties, but her demeanor and mannerisms would never once again be as moving and

enchanting as the naive innocence of a little young girl.

“I have wondered why little Young Master Jun had been indifferent and unmoved but it is now clear to me.” Qu Xin Rui said as she gave a disdainful laugh.

Qu Ling Yue was startled by the amount of hatred in Qu Xin Rui’s voice and she looked up questioningly. In that instant, her chin was grabbed by Qu Xin Rui in a tight grip!

Qu Xin Rui’s long nails dug into Qu Ling Yue’s flesh and blood flowed out from the wounds.

“What’s so great about this face? Besides being more youthful, in what other way are you comparable to me? You’re just a immature little girl that’s ignorant and doesn’t know a thing about passion. How could you be so shameless? Is that what your father has taught you? Slut!” Qu Xin Rui spat, with narrowed eyes, venomous words spilling out from her mouth.

She had not been able to comprehend why Jun Xie would spurn her intimate advances. She had such complete confidence in her looks that she was able to mesmerize any man but the very one, Jun Xie, that she wanted to control had treated her like she was plain air, and was completely unaffected.

It wasn’t until she saw Qu Ling Yue’s sickly sweet and godawful handkerchief that she it struck her. Jun Xie’s total disregard towards her could highly possibly be due to him having developed a liking to this immature little girl here!

Having suffered the blows from being snubbed and rejected by Jun Xie repeatedly, it had formed to become a huge sense of humiliation in Qu Xin Rui heart, and when she saw Qu Ling Yue’s shy and alluring demeanor earlier, she had been suddenly overcome with an urge to dig out that endearing looking pair of limpid eyes!

“Great Grand..... aunt..... What..... What are you..... saying.....” A

deeply ominous feeling rose within Qu Ling Yue's heart, as the pain from her chin grew more and more intense.

Qu Xin Rui suddenly laughed almost hysterically, the laughter sounding highly cruel.

“What I said? Don't you like little Young Master Jun a lot? Then for the sake of his future, you should be willing to anything right?”

Qu Ling Yue stared at Qu Xin Rui in terror. She wanted to scream, but was slapped by Qu Xin Rui to fall into a dead faint, and her body crumpled onto the floor in a heap.

Qu Xin Rui's eyes were narrowed into a dangerous slit as she stared at the figure of Qu Ling Yue on the ground, her eyes shining brightly with intense jealousy and rage.

At that moment, she no longer simply wanted to just use Qu Ling Yue to blackmail Qu Wen Hao. As she stared at Qu Ling Yue's unconscious little face, an even more highly venomous and insidious plan formed in her mind.

Chapter 1073: “Lure the Tiger Away from the Mountain (1)”

In the next few days, Qu Xin Rui did not send anyone to go invite Jun Xie over and Jun Wu Xie was able to enjoy a few days' peace.

This day, Jun Wu Xie woke up bright and early and she received news that Qing Yu brought in to her.

“Young Master Jun, the Grand Chieftain would like to invite you to make a trip to the Grand Chieftain's Residence. He said he has something he wants to discuss with you about.” Qing Yu said as he stood in front of the door to Jun Xie's room, but not daring to take a single step inside, as in that room at that moment, a great demon lord sat.

Jun Wu Xie was smoothing out Lord Meh Meh's wool and suddenly hearing Qing Yu's words, she lifted her head and asked: “Qu Wen Hao?”

“That's right.” Qing Yu nodded.

Jun Wu Xie could not help but creased her brows. Although she had privately established an agreement with Qu Wen Hao, but all their conveyance of information and news were only done through Qu Ling Yue and Xiong Ba. Besides that day at the birthday banquet, she had never directly communicated with Qu Wen Hao and all that was done to avoid Qu Xin Rui from becoming suspicious.

That was a point that she knew well, and Qu Wen Hao as well.

But today, Qu Wen Hao had suddenly extended an invitation to her and it was after she had rejected Qu Xin Rui, which made Jun Wu Xie can't help it but to feel that it was all rather strange.

“Is it mentioned what this is about?” Jun Wu Xie asked.

Qing Yu shook his head. “It was not mentioned, but I was told

that it was about something important and he needs to speak to you personally.”

Jun Wu Yao had his chin rested in his upturned palm as he looked at Jun Wu Xie. In regards to the situation in the Thousand Beast City, he had gained a better understanding of everything in the past few days.

“Going?” He asked.

Jun Wu Xie was silent a moment before she nodded her head.

Qu Wen Hao’s invitation was definitely strange but she still had to go find out what it was.

“I’ll go with you.” Jun Wu Yao stood up gracefully. When Qing Yu at the door saw Jun Wu Yao stood up, he was so shocked that he fell back two steps. In the past few days, Jun Wu Yao had not shown up much within the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall but every time that he saw Jun Wu Yao, Qing Yu would always be so terrified to become like a terrified little chick. Xiong Ba had simply decided that he would not even take a single step into this courtyard himself, wishing that he would never ever have to see that devilish demonic lord ever again.

“Alright.” Jun Wu Xie nodded.

Qing Yu then hastily retreated.

Jun Wu Yao saw the room door close before he said: “It’s Qu Xin Rui’s doing?”

Jun Wu Xie put Lord Meh Meh on the floor and then said slowly: “Qu Wen Hao would not initiate such direct contact with me as that would only cause Qu Xin Rui to be alerted. I had just refused Qu Xin Rui’s invitation a few days ago and although things have been calm and uneventful since, I’m thinking there’s still trickery up her sleeve. Today’s invitation must be the work of Qu Xin Rui.”

“If someone is seeking her own path to death, I wouldn’t mind granting her wish.” Jun Wu Yao said as a smile slowly blossomed

at the ends his mouth. He had promised Jun Wu Xie that he would not interfere with this but if Qu Xin Rui was in such a hurry to seek her death, he thought it wouldn't be nice for him to refuse her.

Jun Wu Xie glanced at Jun Wu Yao, but did not comment. They tidied up a little and went out the door.

The guards sent from the Grand Chieftain's Residence were waiting outside the doors of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall. Jun Wu Xie carried the little black cat in her arms and left with the guards with Jun Wu Yao beside her.

Xiong Ba waited till the figures of Jun Xie and Jun Wu Yao had completely disappeared from before the doors of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall before he came out sneakily from inside.

Qing Yu was speechless as he looked at his own Clan Chief, the look on his face showing contempt for the cowardly act.

"Why is the Grand Chieftain suddenly looking for Young Master Jun?" Xiong Ba was feeling rather puzzled. If the person who brought the news to them was not Qu Wen Hao's trusted aide, he really would have assumed that it was just a fake information that Qu Xin Rui had ordered people to come give them.

Qing Yu couldn't understand the rationale behind it as well.

Just as the two of them were still cracking their heads over it, a towering figure suddenly came to the main doors of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall.

Chapter 1074: “Lure the Tiger Away from the Mountain (2)”

While still struggling in his mind, Xiong Ba had upon getting a clear view of the person who just came in, immediately stared with his eyes so wide, they almost popped out of his head. He then said in utter disbelief: “Grand Chieftain? Why..... Why are you here.....”

Coming towards the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, was not anyone else, but the one who should be at the Grand Chieftain’s Residence waiting for Jun Xie, the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City, Qu Wen Hao!

Qu Wen Hao’s complexion was rather pale and his demeanour seems rather different from usual. He came walking with his face dark and gloomy to stand right before Xiong Ba.

Xiong Ba immediately exclaimed: “Didn’t you invite Jun Xie..... Argh! It’s Qu Xin Rui! That Qu Xin Rui sent fake news! Quick! Send someone quickly to bring them back!”

If Qu Wen Hao was here, then the news they received earlier must have been fake and Xiong Ba had immediately thought that all of this could very possibly be a ploy by Qu Xin Rui.

Qing Yu was just about to go chase them back but Qu Wen Hao suddenly raised up a hand to block Qing Yu’s way forward.

“Grand Chieftain?” Qing Yu asked, looking in great puzzlement at Qu Wen Hao.

Qu Wen Hao’s eyes were dark ringed and his demeanor felt strange.

“No need to go.” He said softly.

“Wh..... Why?”

Qu Wen Hao lifted his eyes and looked at Xiong Ba’s and Qing

Yu's puzzled faces. "I was the one who sent people here to invite Young Master Jun to go to the Grand Chieftain's Residence."

Qing Yu and Xiong Ba were immediately stunned.

Qu Wen Hao had really invited Jun Xie to go to the Grand Chieftain's Residence, but..... why had Jun Xie just barely left the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall and Qu Wen Hao had appeared here? Shouldn't he be waiting at the Grand Chieftain's Residence for Jun Xie to arrive?

The two men were suddenly feeling highly confused.

"Where is Jun Xie's room?" Qu Wen Hao asked suddenly.

Xiong Ba was further shocked as he replied: "The eastern little yard."

"Did he bring along her Spirit Beast when he left?" Qu Wen Hao asked again.

Xiong Ba scratched his head and said: "Only the little black cat. For the other two Spirit Beasts, I don't often see her bring them out." [This is strange, why does it feel like something is wrong with the Grand Chieftain today?]

Qu Wen Hao did not say another word but just walked off on his own towards the inside of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall.

Xiong Ba stared at the back of Qu Wen Hao and he was still feeling rather confused.

"What is the Grand Chieftain trying to do? Why am I getting more confused as I watch him?"

Qing Yu was still evaluating the situation and when his eyes fell upon the back of Qu Wen Hao, the blood completely drained out of his face in an instant!

An ominous premonition rose up in Qing Yu's heart as he asked with his lips trembling: "Didn't the Grand Chieftain ask just now whether Young Master Jun brought his Spirit Beasts out?"

“That’s right.” Xiong Ba replied nonchalantly, but suddenly noticed that Qing Yu’s face had taken on a deathly pallor. “What happened to you?”

Qing Yu raised a trembling finger and pointed it at Qu Wen Hao’s back as he said in a hoarse voice: “Do you see what that is.....”

Xiong Ba looked at where Qing Yu was pointing at and he suddenly spotted a silvery white flute that was stuck at Qu Wen Hao’s hip. Throughout the entire Thousand Beast City, nobody would fail to recognise that flute!

It was just an instant, but Xiong Ba’s face turned just as pale!

In the Thousand Beast City, no one would not know what that flute really was. That was the flute that determined the might of the Thousand Beast City, and that was what brought unparalleled glory to the Thousand Beast City!

“The Spirit Taming Bone Flute..... Why would the Grand Chieftain bring the Spirit Taming Bone Flute out.....” Xiong Ba was still highly flustered, dogged by the feeling that something bad was about to happen.

The temperature quickly left Qing Yu body which caused him to shiver slightly.

“Leading Young Master Jun away, and bringing the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to go towards Young Master Jun room..... The Grand Chieftain is thinking to gain control over Young Master Jun’s Guardian Grade Spirit Beast!”

Chapter 1075: “Lure the Tiger Away from the Mountain (3)”

Inside the room, Lord Meh Meh was lying prone upon the bed. It stuck out its little hoof to nudge at the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit continuously, attempting to dislodge the scheming rabbit who had invaded the space upon the bed. The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit dug its front paws stubbornly into the blanket, seemingly as if it would rather die than submit to the tyranny.

Before Jun Wu Xie had left, she had knocked it into the heads of the two dumb beasts, warning them if they were to stir up any trouble, when she came back, they could forget about getting anything to eat!

Under the allure of food, the two dumb beasts were a lot more settled down and they did not dare to create any big damage on the surface, but these little instances of friction between the two of them happened continuously.

Lord Meh Meh’s little hoof had already left a series of tiny hoof marks on the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit’s big ears, and it continued on happily almost like it was going to purr with delight.

The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit was still young and only when its fur changed colour would it be possible for it to battle Lord Meh Meh. But now.....

The scheming rabbit could only allow itself to have its whole face covered in hoof marks!

While the dumb sheep happily tried to nudge the scheming rabbit off the bed, it shifted its body to try to occupy more space for itself, driving the scheming rabbit so mad it really felt like leaping over and driving its pair of rabbit teeth into that insanely annoying hoof.

Just as the two dumb beasts were nudging and pushing at each

other, the tightly shut door was suddenly pushed open by someone!

Lord Meh Meh and the scheming rabbit immediately ceased with their battle and as they had immediately assumed the person who pushed the door and came in was Jun Wu Xie, they quickly scooted onto separate sides, wiggling their tails as they put forth their most innocent faces.

However.....

The person who appeared through the door was not Jun Wu Xie, but a tall middle aged man they have never seen before.

“Puu?” The scheming rabbit tilted its head and looked at Qu Wen Hao standing in front of the door. The dumb sheep took the opportunity to kick the scheming rabbit off the bed with one swing of its hoof!

It saw the furry little rabbit tumble off the bed entirely and fall onto the floor with a splat!

Lord Meh Meh wiggled its tail delightedly and turned itself in circles with all four of its hooves, bundling up the blanket together in a coil, before finding the softest spot within it and snuggling into it!

[Lord Meh Meh is the cleverest one! Humph!]

Qu Wen Hao’s face was dark as he stared at the two Spirit Beasts in the room. His gaze passed right over the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit fallen onto the floor and was hopping mad in indignation to fix onto the highly pleased looking Lord Meh Meh.

A trace of an inner struggle appeared in his eyes as his hands reached behind his back stiffly. His hands could feel the cold smooth surface of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, that slight icy chill, quickly driving out all the warmth from those hands.

“Grand Chieftain!” Xiong Ba rushed in puffing and wheezing as his horrified gaze stared at Qu Wen Hao’s hands upon the Spirit

Taming Bone Flute.

Qu Wen Hao's body froze suddenly but he did not turn back, and just ordered in a deep voice: "Get out!"

Qu Wen Hao acting like this, was a sight that Xiong Ba had never seen before, gloomy and repressed. Even when the Thousand Beast City had been going through its most difficult times, Qu Wen Hao had never exhibited such gloominess. Faced with such a strange Qu Wen Hao, Xiong Ba was suddenly feeling highly nervous.

"Grand Chieftain, that is Jun Xie's Spirit Beast..... What..... are you really going to do?" Xiong Ba was feeling torn as he stared at Qu Wen Hao. He believed in the Grand Chieftain and was willing to devote his whole life to the Thousand Beast City because Qu Wen Hao was worth his unwavering loyalty. But with what Qing Yu had earlier hinted, and he began to realise what Qu Wen Hao might possibly do here, he found himself refusing to believe it as fact.

Although Qu Wen Hao did not have much direct contact with Jun Xie, but the cooperation between the two people was already in progress, and every action that Jun Xie carried out within the Thousand Beast City had been tacitly accepted by Qu Wen Hao.

Chapter 1076: “Spirit Taming Bone Flute (1)”

From what the facts were at that time, Jun Wu Xie was already an ally of the Thousand Beast City.

No matter what, Xiong Ba could not make himself believe that Qu Wen Hao would act against his own ally.

“I asked you to get out!” Qu Wen Hao bellowed in a deep voice angrily, his tone revealing a tinge of impatience.

“Chieftain! What are you really going to do? Young Master Jun is a friend of ours!” Xiong Ba was unwilling to leave and he just remained there to stare at Qu Wen Hao’s back, his fists clenched up tightly.

Qu Wen Hao was silent and the hand clasped over the Spirit Taming Bone Flute still did not pull it out, looking like he was struggling within, deeply hesitant.

“Chieftain, Young Master Jun’s companions are already investigating into where Madam and the others have been imprisoned and it won’t be much longer that Madam and the others will be rescued back here, and we’ll all be finally free from Qu Xin Rui’s blackmail. The freedom we have all longed for for so many years, the reunion that everyone will enjoy uninterrupted, is about to be realised.....” Xiong Ba pleaded, starting at Qu Wen Hao. He could not understand why Qu Wen Hao was suddenly doing something like this but he was not going to stand back and allow Qu Wen Hao to continue to err like this.

Qu Wen Hao’s body rocked once and the fingers locked over the Spirit Taming Bone Flute moved slightly.

Xiong Ba’s alerted senses detected the movement and regardless of the reason why Qu Wen Hao would do such commit such indiscretions, he still firmly believed that the Grand Chieftain he had pledged allegiance to, was never one who goes back on his

word, or a hypocrite who sets up his allies.

“It will all happen very soon. Just wait a little....

Wait for just a few days and it'll all work out, and Madam will come back to be reunited with you and Young Miss.” Xiong Ba persuaded gently, without anyone knowing how tightly tensed up every single muscle on his body was at that moment.

But, just at the moment that Xiong Ba's voice dropped, Qu Wen Hao who had initially still been highly hesitant suddenly pulled out the Spirit Taming Bone Flute from his hip!

“Grand Chieftain!” Xiong Ba slightly jumped in shock.

Qu Wen Hao then said loudly in rage: “As the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City, I hereby order you! Get out!”

Qu Wen Hao did not turn around, unwilling to, and not daring to at the same time.

From Xiong Ba's voice, he had been able to detect the shock and utter disbelief under the undying loyalty Xiong Ba held towards him.

But.....

He had been left with no other choice.

Qu Wen Hao raised the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to his lips, his narrowed eyes staring at the befuddled looking Lord Meh Meh lying upon the bed.

“Chieftain ! ! !” Xiong Ba shouted out in shock. No matter how much he refused to believe it, Qu Wen Hao's actions had clearly revealed his intentions!

He was really thinking to use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute on Lord Meh Meh! !

Lord Meh Meh was Jun Xie's Spirit Beast and what Qu Wen Hao was doing was as good as turning hostile against Jun Xie!

The mellifluous sound of the flute suddenly rose from within the room, the free and highly natural notes unlike the sound made by any other flutes, sounding so surreal it did not seem that it was possible to have been produced from any instrument. The melodious sound was heard within one's ears, but it felt like it came from the soul, every note tugging at the spirit, to dance in tandem to its tune.

With flute melody, to tame the thousand beasts!

In the instant the flute played, Lord Meh Meh who had been lying upon the bed suddenly gave out a wail of agony!

Its four hooves curled in and its entire body began to twitch incessantly, fallen onto the bed. Its pair of round limpid eyes were shut in pain as a heart wrenching wail spilled out from its mouth!

The Spirit Taming Bone Flute, made use of its melody to twist and warp spirits, draining Spirit Beasts of their will, to make all Spirit Beasts under the Heavens, forcefully subjugate them against their will, to bow and submit themselves, to the holder of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute!

Chapter 1077: “Spirit Taming Bone Flute (2)”

To activate the power of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, Qu Wen Hao needed to employ his own spirit power. Forcibly twisting the Spirit Beast’s will was not that tough a task but when the target was such an immensely powerful Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, then to the manipulator, it would pose to become a highly dangerous endeavour.

Although Qu Wen Hao was able to use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute as a medium to twist and manipulate the Spirit Beast’s thoughts, but the more powerful the Spirit Beast was, the stronger the willpower and spiritual consciousness would be, resulting in the amount of spirit power that would be required to influence its mind to increase! And even after successfully manipulating the Spirit Beast, the slightest carelessness would have the beast turning back on him instead.

Looking back on the many decades since the founding of the Thousand Beast City, throughout the many generations of Grand Chieftains who held the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, less than few have dared to antagonize a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. They would rather expend more time to gain control over several high grade Spirit Beasts, than go head on to face a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast.

Because, once a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast resisted to its death, it would also bring indelible damage to the manipulators as well!

“Grand Chieftain! You can’t do this!” Xiong Ba called out as he looked at Lord Meh Meh wailing in agony upon the bed, his heart immediately leaping into his throat, and he really felt like jumping on Qu Wen Hao at that instant to stop him from carrying on any further.

But just as he was about to move closer, two other figures suddenly appeared on both his left and right sides. They were not

just anybody but the other two Clan Chiefs besides him and Lin Que!

In the Thousand Beast City, besides Lin Que who had already aligned himself with Qu Xin Rui, the other Clan Chiefs held the same thoughts as Xiong Ba, and were fiercely loyal to Qu Wen Hao. In order to save the Thousand Beast City, they had stood on the same line with Xiong Ba and Xiong Ba had never thought that the day would come that he would be grabbed and held down by them!

As Xiong Ba swung his head to look outside from out of the corners of his eyes, he was shocked to see that Qing Yu had already been captured by the Deputy Clan Chiefs of the other two clans as well, unable to move an inch just like him.

“Xiong Ba, do not try to meddle with this any further. The Grand Chieftain..... To do this, he would naturally have his reasons.” One of the Clan Chiefs said to Xiong Ba, the expression on his face highly pained.

“Damn it! Let me go! Chieftain! You cannot do that to Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast! We are allies! Jun Xie is a friend that we specially invited here to help us!” However dense he was, he realised that Qu Wen Hao came here well prepared, having made the Clan Chiefs and their deputies from the other two clans to restrict the movements of him and Qing Yu.

The mellifluous sounds of the flute in the room did not stop, and meshed within the sounds of the flute, was Lord Meh Meh’s pitiful wails and Xiong Ba’s heart rending shouts.

Qing Yu and Xiong Ba wanted to put a stop to all of this, but they were held down by both their arms and legs, and even gagged, where they could only look on helplessly as Lord Meh Meh’s struggles between its wails slowly grew less and less frequent.

Qu Wen Hao’s forehead was already dripping with sweat as his face turned from red to white. From the time he became the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City, this was the first time he was

faced against a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, and the level of danger and pressure he was facing could not be imagined by just any one.

The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit stood on the floor completely stunned as it stared at Lord Meh Meh who had always kicked it with those little hooves currently wailing in pain. It was still very young and it did not understand what was happening, but it knew that Lord Meh Meh was in agony.

It leapt up onto the bed it had completely forgotten all about the constant bullying from Lord Meh Meh. It stretched out its tiny paw and stroked Lord Meh Meh's body continuously, wanting Lord Meh Meh to feel better. From its mouth, worried little breaths could be heard, like it was feeling very worried about Lord Meh Meh's condition.

Chapter 1078: “Spirit Taming Bone Flute (3)”

Xiong Ba was fighting with all his might to break free from his captors but it was no use.

Lord Meh Meh’s response was getting weaker and weaker and the stones at Qu Wen Hao’s feet was covered with a layer of sweat. His clothes were soaked with his perspiration and it was continuing to drip onto the floor.

Finally, Lord Meh Meh fell into a faint on the bed, not moving an inch. Qu Wen Hao had at the same time ceased with the flute and when he put down the hand that held the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, his body fell back weakly a step, and fortunately for the Clan Chief at the side who rushed to prop him up.

Qu Wen Hao pushed the man away from him and stood panting as he stared towards the bed.

“Bring it with us.” Qu Wen Hao said.

One of the Clan Chiefs immediately walked to the bedside, thinking to carry the comatose Lord Meh Meh from the bed.

Xiong Ba fell back onto the floor, as he stared at Qu Wen Hao in despair.

He could not believe that the Grand Chieftain he had always respected the most, would use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to take Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast away from the youth.....

Qing Yu had even shut his eyes from the deep pain he was feeling in his heart, unwilling to watch anymore of it.

Qu Wen Hao did not dare to look away, and did not dare look in the direction of Xiong Ba. He could just vividly imagine, the kind of disappointment showing in Xiong Ba’s eyes. He drew in a deep breath and forced himself to steel his heart.

The Clan Chief who had come to the side of the bed carried up

Lord Meh Meh who was lying upon the bed and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit who had laid beside Lord Meh Meh stared anxiously with its naively ignorant pair of eyes as the man picked Lord Meh Meh up, hopping a couple of times, wanting to follow them.

The Clan Chief was seemingly at a loss for a moment as he looked at the “big eared rabbit” with several scars across its body before he turned hesitantly to look at Qu Wen Hao.

“Grand Chieftain, this big eared rabbit.....”

“No need to bring that.” Qu Wen Hao said coldly.

The Clan Chief had no choice but to brush the big eared rabbit away.

Being pushed away on the bed, the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit quickly leapt right back up and hopped several times, wanting to continue to hop to Lord Meh Meh’s side.

The Clan Chief was getting rather impatient and it raised a foot to kick the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit away!

The tiny Sacrificial Blood Rabbit fell heavily onto the ground, and it gave out a low groan.

The Clan Chief carried Lord Meh Meh in his arms and immediately turned to leave, with Qu Wen Hao drawing in another deep breath before turning to leave as well.

But at the moment Qu Wen Hao had just stepped out through the room’s door, from behind him, a powerful wave of Spirit Beastial energy aura suddenly surged!

A sudden scream sounded out from behind him and he turned around in puzzlement, where he immediately saw the Clan Chief who had been carrying Lord Meh Meh had fallen to the ground!

A blood red rabbit was bent over his neck, its mouth still biting on a chunk of well bloodied neck bone!

The pair of blood red eyes were staring directly at Qu Wen Hao

and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit which was now bathed in blood stepped on the thick sticky pool of freshly flowed blood, as it spat out the neck bone it had just torn out from the man's throat. It then picked the comatose Lord Meh Meh off the dead corpse as its sharp gaze remained fixed upon Qu Wen Hao!

Qu Wen Hao stared at the blood red rabbit in astoundment and three words suddenly rose clearly within his mind, Sacrificial Blood Rabbit!

As the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City, how could Qu Wen Hao not know about this Guardian Grade Spirit that only existed in their legends!

He had previously heard from Qing Yu that Jun Xie had saved a severely injured big eared rabbit from the Spirit Beast Arena but he had not paid much attention to it, and he had not given the big eared rabbit much thought when he saw it in the room earlier.

But, what was right before his eyes at that moment was not the entirely helpless big eared rabbit!

But a Spirit Beast with the power of the Guardian Grade..... Sacrificial Blood Rabbit!

Chapter 1079: “Wails of Despair (1)”

At that moment, everyone there were stunned into unmoving statues!

None of them would ever have thought that the unremarkable looking big eared rabbit would actually with two shakes of a rabbit's tail, suddenly transform into the Spirit Beast that drove fear into people's hearts, the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit!

In Jun Xie's possession, were actually two Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts! How could that even be possible !!!

The appearance of the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit had torn everyone's consciousness to shreds.

Just how rare and precious was a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast was to them and throughout the entire lives of most people, one might not even be able to meet one, but Jun Xie actually had two of them here!

It was impossible!

The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit's aura had already encompassed the entire room and its gaze no longer showed ignorance or panic, but were filled with malicious murder and enmity!

It was a Spirit Beast whose powers awoke from fresh blood itself and its innate sense for bloodthirsty slaughter could never be erased. The deep red blood eyes stared at Qu Wen Hao which sent a spine tingling chill to rise up through Qu Wen Hao from the soles of his feet when he found his entire being caught within an intense murderous aura!

.....

Within the Grand Chieftain's Residence, Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao was led by the servants within the residence to come to the main hall, seated within their chairs. The servant had merely told them that the Grand Chieftain still had some business to attend to

and asked Jun Xie and Jun Wu Yao to wait in the main hall for awhile before he departed.

Jun Wu Xie sat within the chair, as a tiny sliver of suspicion rose in her heart. Qu Wen Hao's invitation to her had been deemed to have arrived rather suddenly and now that she was here, he had given the excuse that he was still busy to avoid seeing them, and that was a point that gave the suspicion in Jun Wu Xie's heart more clarity.

"Go check and see if Qu Wen Hao is within the residence." Jun Wu Xie mumbled in a soft voice, and within the main hall, hidden in the shadowy corners, Ye Sha and Ye Mei immediately disappeared without a trace.

Jun Wu Yao rested his chin in one hand and looked at Jun Wu Xie's face from the side.

"What are you suspecting?"

Jun Wu Xie replied: "There's a problem with Qu Wen Hao."

Jun Wu Yao raised an eyebrow.

"Even if he wanted to see me, he wouldn't have sent people to come to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall to invite me over so blatantly and when I come here, he is suddenly trying to avoid seeing me. Doesn't that just seem to be highly suspicious?" Jun Wu Xie replied indifferently, her gaze looking at the several servants outside the main hall.

The expressions on those people were rather strange, as if they were trying very hard to maintain a facade of calm, but in their eyes, it was obvious to see that they were hiding an intense unease.

"Something must have happened here." Jun Wu Xie concluded, her eyes narrowing as she spoke. She had noticed earlier, that the servant who led them in had seemed to be rather tensed up and his gaze had been rather shifty, unable to look at her in the eyes.

"What could it be? Would Little Xie like to take a guess?" Jun Wu

Yao asked with a smile. In regards to the reactions of those people, he had not noticed them in the least, as they were all not worth him giving his attention to.

“I am still not sure at the moment. I need to wait for the news from Ye Sha and Ye Mei.” Jun Wu Xie answered.

Very soon, Ye Sha and Ye Mei rushed back silently. They remained hidden within the shadows and said in a low voice: “Reporting to Young Miss, I have searched through the Grand Chieftain’s Residence with Ye Mei and have found no sign of Qu Wen Hao. Even Qu Ling Yue does not seem to be within the residence.”

Jun Wu Xie’s brows creased up together and she suddenly shot to her feet, immediately walking straight out of the Grand Chieftain’s Residence! Jun Wu Yao’s brow arched up and got up to follow behind her.

The servants standing guard outside had upon seeing that Jun Xie was going to leave, immediately blocked Jun Xie’s way forward in a flustered panic.

“Young Master Jun..... The Grand Chieftain will be coming very soon, and I beg for Young Master Jun to wait for a moment more and the Grand Chieftain will be coming right away.” A servant said hurriedly, his head lowered respectfully.

Jun Wu Xie stared chillingly at that man and said: “Scram.”

Chapter 1080: “Wails of Despair (2)”

The servant was so terrified that he fell, his knees hitting the ground with a loud thud as he pleaded in a panick: “Young Master Jun, wait a.....”

In an instant, a curtain of blood blossomed right before Jun Wu Xie’s eyes, as the several servants blocking her way in front of her suddenly had all their heads sliced off in the blink of an eye!

The garish blood sprayed into the air, and at the moment they were just about to fall, Jun Wu Xie was suddenly in Jun Wu Yao’s embrace, and with a light tap of his feet, they sailed up into the air!

“Whatever Little Xie wants to do, just go do it. There’s no need to waste your breath on those people.” Jun Wu Yao said, looking smilingly at Jun Wu Xie. Whoever dares stand before her and gets in her way, he wouldn’t mind sending them all to hell.

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed up and she said: “Back to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall!”

“Alright.” Jun Wu Yao replied, his voice highly indulgent.

When Jun Wu Yao arrived back at the main doors of the Fiery Blaze Spirit Hall with Jun Wu Xie in his arms, before Jun Wu Xie had even stepped into the clan hall, she could already smell the faint stench of blood.

There wasn’t a single guard outside the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall. The two Fiery Blaze Clan disciples who usually stood guard at the doors were nowhere in sight and the doors into the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall were wide open, but not a single shadow of a person could be seen within.

Jun Wu Xie lifted her foot and stepped inside, and the blood stench grew more and more pungent!

Her steps quickened subconsciously as she followed the stench of blood to come to the eastern little courtyard!

A series of terrified screams suddenly reached Jun Wu Xie's ears. She had just stepped into the eastern little courtyard when she was met with a scene filled with blood and chaos, that encompassed her entire vision!

She saw a whole group of men, having fully surrounded the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit who was completely bathed in blood, holding Lord Meh Meh in its mouth while standing atop a high ledge at the edge of the room. Its paws were fully covered in sticky blood stains, and its originally blood red fur, having gotten soaked in blood, to now appear a brilliant bright red!

The disciples of the Fiery Blaze Clan were all standing outside Jun Wu Xie's room door, swords gripped in their hands, pointed at the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit at the top of the room. Many among them have been gravely injured and their blood flowed all over, the entire little yard shrouded with the heavy nauseating stench of blood.

And among that group of people, Qu Wen Hao stood with his face deathly pale, an arm broken by the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit as it hung limply by his side. Xiong Ba and Qing Yu were standing nervously beside him, their heads raised up to look at the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit.

The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit was surrounded by a mass of people from the Fiery Blaze Clan, its mouth still holding the completely unconscious Lord Meh Meh. Faced with the countless number of swords and blades before it, it did not exhibit the slightest fear, its incisive murderous aura, truly reflective of its resplendent fame as a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast!

When the portrait of that scene burned into Jun Wu Xie's eyes, an unexplainable fire immediately lit up in her heart!

"What are all of you doing." She asked, her eyes scanning over them in a dangerous slit, looking at the bunch of disciples of the Fiery Blaze Clan pointing their swords and knives at the Sacrificial

Blood Rabbit and Lord Meh Meh.

Jun Wu Xie's voice was just like sudden thunder, which crushed out all the shouts of alarm and wails of pain in the chaotic courtyard, as everyone instantly shut their mouths, their heads turning in pure and utter shock, to look at Jun Xie and Jun Wu Yao standing at the entrance into the little courtyard.

In regards to Jun Xie, he was no stranger to the disciples of the Fiery Blaze Clan and since Jun Xie had first arrived at the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, they had all been warned by Xiong Ba to treat this esteemed guest cordially. Added to the fact that Jun Xie had never once given them any trouble and had never asked for anything from them, even though they had not interacted much with Jun Xie all this while, the disciples of the Fiery Blaze Clan were rather fond of this undemanding and unpretentious guest.

But now.....

They had let Jun Xie see, this scene where they had all surrounded the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit to kill it.....

Chapter 1081: “Wails of Despair (3)”

Almost every single disciple of the Fiery Blaze Clan immediately felt a sense of guilt rise within their heart the moment they saw Jun Xie and they all subconsciously tried to hide their weapons they held in their hands behind their backs, unable to look Jun Xie straight in the eye.

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu raised their heads in astonishment as they turned to look at Jun Xie.

But with that one look, it made their hearts chill by half!

Although they knew Jun Xie had a cold personality, but the gaze he looked at them with had never held any animosity. Though that had never let them feel like they were very close, but it had not made them feel Jun Xie to be distant or callous.

But this time!

They could see the intense enmity in Jun Xie’s eyes, and the icy chill that made one turn cold.

That gaze, was one they had never seen in the eyes of Jun Xie before.....

At that moment, they knew. The cold personality that Jun Xie truly had, was never like anything he had shown to them before. In that one instant, a feeling of despair immediately crept into the hearts of the two of them. They were almost certain, from the moment Jun Xie stepped into the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall that day, all the harmonious relationship they had with Jun Xie before, had been completely and irrecoverable severed!

“Jun Xie..... You..... You should let me explain.” Xiong Ba’s voice was trembling as he opened his mouth to speak to Jun Xie.

But Jun Wu Xie turned to glare at him coldly instead, and her gaze then went past Xiong Ba, to look at Qu Wen Hao.

In the instant that Qu Wen Hao saw Jun Xie, his heart jumped, highly startled. According to his calculations, for Jun Xie to discover all that was happening, and to come back to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, it should have taken at least another hour or two, and he had not once thought that Jun Xie would manage to rush back here so quickly!

That pair of eyes that send chills into people, made the already thoroughly exhausted Qu Wen Hao feel even more drained. If not for Qing Yu holding him up beside him, he really wouldn't be able to even stand.

Jun Wu Xie's gaze fell onto the Spirit Taming Bone Flute in Qu Wen Hao's face, and the icy glint in her eyes flashed at that moment.

"Come here." Jun Wu Xie did not look at Qu Wen Hao or anyone else among them another time but just raised her head, to look at the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit who had been heavily surrounded and attacked, and made to suffer endless panic and hurt.

The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit which had been highly murderous suddenly lost quite a bit of its malicious aura in its eyes immediately upon seeing Jun Wu Xie. It stared warily at the disciples of the Fiery Blaze Clan below before it hunched its feet and leapt, its blood red body suddenly drawing a blood red arc in the air, to land into Jun Wu Xie's arms in a blink, and throughout the entire process, it had not released Lord Meh Meh from its mouth!

Jun Wu Xie caught both the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit and Lord Meh Meh firmly in her arms.

Jun Wu Yao at the side raised an eyebrow and snapped his fingers once. Ye Sha and Ye Mei immediately appeared behind the two of them in an instant.

"Leave them to Ye Sha and Ye Mei first." Jun Wu Yao said, looking at Jun Wu Xie. From deep within that pair of clear and cold eyes, he had been able to detect the rage and murder that she

was trying very hard to hold down at that moment.

Jun Wu Xie did not move, as she had felt several wounds on the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit that had split open. The wounds that the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit had sustained before it awoken had not yet fully healed. Although it had awakened, but it's Guardian Grade Spirit Beast state had yet to completely stabilise and it could not be considered to be a fully matured and true Sacrificial Blood Rabbit. Hence, the speed of its healing was relatively slower. It had in order to protect Lord Meh Meh, split up several of the wounds that had not fully healed, and the blood that covered all over its fur, was not all just from the enemy, but some of it had been its own mixed together within!

“Puu.” The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit put Lord Meh Meh it held in its mouth within Jun Wu Xie's arms and it raised its tiny head to look anxiously at Jun Wu Xie.

Chapter 1082: “Wails of Despair (4)”

Jun Wu Xie’s clear gaze slowly fell upon the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit. Looking into that pair of blood red eyes, she saw great fear and helplessness as the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit continuously used the tip of its nose to nudge Lord Meh Meh deeper into Jun Wu Xie’s embrace.

Lord Meh Meh however looked as if it had fallen into a dead faint and did not give the slightest reaction.

Jun Wu Xie did not speak a single word, but the air surrounding her turned to feel extremely strange, which made people not dare to take a single step forward in approach.

Xiong Ba stared at Jun Xie who suddenly felt strangely unfamiliar to him and he subconsciously gulped.

“Jun Xie..... Let me explain..... This matter..... isn’t like what you are thinking.” When Xiong Ba spoke, he felt his hands began to tremble.

Jun Xie at that moment, made him feel great fear.

“Speak.” Jun Wu Xie slowly raised her head, her eyes now replaced with a composed calm, but for some unknown reason, Xiong Ba and all the other people there were feeling more flustered by that.

Jun Xie was obviously looking cold and calm, just like the youth had all this time, but he was however making all of them feel a chill creep right into their bones.

Xiong Ba was struggling to find the words as he opened his mouth, but he did not know what to say at all.

In this matter, no matter how you said it, they were in the wrong.....

Although they had a reason that gave them no choice but to do

this, but..... what did all of that have to do with Jun Xie? Jun Xie had initially come to the Thousand Beast City to help them all but what had they done instead? In order to save one of their own people, they chose to sacrifice Jun Xie's Spirit Beast? Even to the extent that, they even reneged on their earlier agreement, betraying that trust and abandoning righteousness.....

The words were at the tip of his tongue, but Xiong Ba found them all stuck around his neck, and he could not make himself say them.

All those words, he could not speak, and did not dare to say.....

At the end of it all, they were the ones who let down Jun Xie.

Jun Wu Xie stared coldly at Xiong Ba, and Jun Wu Yao at her side did not take his eyes off the side of Jun Wu Xie's face at all, seemingly looking like if Jun Wu Xie were to so much as just lift an eyebrow, he would immediately wash the entire Fiery Blaze Clan Hall with blood!

Xiong Ba could not say anything, and Qing Yu was too ashamed to even open his mouth. To the two of them, what they did here was just too despicable for words!

Qu Wen Hao looked at Jun Wu Xie and suddenly walked out from among the crowd of people. Before the eyes of everyone, he fell with a loud thud to his knees before Jun Xie, completely disregarding the excruciating pain in his arm, as he looked pleadingly at Jun Xie.

"Young Master Jun! I know you are someone no ordinary person can compare with. Today's incident, all started from me. I know that I do not deserve to even ask for your forgiveness, but I have no other choice but to still beg you. Can you hand that Spirit Beast of yours to me! Qu Xin Rui..... Qu Xin Rui captured Ling Yue. She threatened me..... to use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to steal your Spirit Beast from you, and if I do not do as she says, she will kill Ling Yue! Young Master Jun! I am aware that a person as despicable as me, as a person who betrayed your trust and went

back on his word is not even qualified to discuss terms with you. But I only have Ling Yue as my only daughter, and she is innocent. I beg you. Hand your Spirit Beast to me and let me save my daughter! As long as Ling Yue is able to return safely, this life of mine will be yours to take or severe as you wish!”

The Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City knelt right before Jun Xie, wailing and pleading.

[He had betrayed Jun Xie’s trust and abandoned righteousness. And he had also repaid kindness with deceit not because he was vicious and malevolent, but because the only thing his entire world revolved around under the heavens, his daughter, was being held in the hands of others, and he had had no other choice but to submit to them, forced to commit a deed so dirty that even he found himself to be nauseating!]

[He had only his daughter left. He can give up on everything else. As long as it can bring his daughter back safely, there was nothing he wouldn’t be unwilling to do!]

Chapter 1083: “Severing All Ties (1)”

Qu Wen Hao wept as he begged. There was nothing else he could depend on. His face was deathly pale, his eye bloodshot, looking not a single bit as steady and refined as Jun Wu Xie had seen on that day outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. Strands of hair around his temple had come loose and hung down loosely, making him look more worn and wretched, his always straightened back now bent over, all for his daughter.

Jun Wu Xie stared coldly at the sorry looking figure of Qu Wen Hao, and not a ripple of emotion showed within her eyes.

“I beg you, help me..... As long as you are willing to help, you can have whatever you want..... My own life, everything that I own, I can hand them all to you.” Qu Wen Hao cried out aloud, his hand covering his face.

He knew after all that he had done today, he would never be able to gain the forgiveness of Jun Xie. But for Qu Ling Yue, he could not give up on fighting for this one last sliver of hope.

Qu Wen Hao’s crying plea, did not receive a reply from Jun Xie. Qu Wen Hao knelt there in helplessness, in hopeless abandonment.

Xiong Ba clenched up his fists, and his face creased up in a frown. Forlorn sadness and fierce struggle filled his eyes, but he could not make himself speak.

“From now onwards, I sever all ties with the Thousand Beast City, and whether you die or leave, is no concern of mine.” Jun Wu Xie said coldly. Her voice had just dropped and she immediately turned to leave while carrying Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit in her arms, unwilling to see anymore of the courtyard that was filled with betrayal.

She might not have ever seen Xiong Ba and the others as her own companions, but even though that was the case, she had still given

to them a certain level of trust.

But after today, that had been completely obliterated.

Jun Wu Yao's gaze turned slightly, sweeping a quick glance over the crowd of people from the Fiery Blaze Clan, and he stepped away to follow behind Jun Wu Xie's steps. When he reached her side, he looked at the side of Jun Wu Xie's face with that cold expression and he asked: "Little Xie's personality, is becoming softer and softer?"

If he had not earlier promised Jun Wu Xie that he would not stick his hand into the affairs in the Thousand Beast City, that whole courtyard full of people earlier would all already be dead by now.

Jun Wu Xie replied coldly: "They have nothing to do with me, what's there to talk about?"

The only relationship she had with the Thousand Beast City had only been for them to work together with her and now that Qu Wen Hao had reneged on that agreement, that layer of relationship no longer existed.

Jun Wu Yao looked at Jun Wu Xie, and an eyebrow arched up on his face, but he did not say anything more.

The two of them departed side by side, leaving Qu Wen Hao only their cold and chilly backs to gaze after.

Qu Wen Hao watched Jun Xie's back and in a flustered panic, he could not help but yell: "Young Master Jun! You cannot....."

Jun Wu Xie's steps halted. She did not turn back, but only spoke in a highly icy tone.

"There is nothing here, to tell me I cannot." Upon saying that, she walked away, without stopping in the slightest.

Qu Wen Hao fell forlornly onto the ground, every ounce of his strength drained out of him. But in the next instant, his eyes suddenly exploded with a gaze, looking highly insane and twisted!

He suddenly stood up, and charged right towards Jun Xie!

“Grand Chieftain!” Xiong Ba’s heart jumped in shock. He had never thought that Qu Wen Hao had already lost his mind to such an extent, that he would even think of attacking Jun Xie!

In the instant just as Qu Wen Hao was about to get close to Jun Xie, Jun Wu Xie suddenly lifted a leg, and executed a roundhouse kick behind, to send Qu Wen Hao flying away!

And that one kick that had been like a wild gale that passed, showed a trail of glittering blue spirit power energy, that spread as they dissipated in mid air!

Qu Wen Hao cried out as he slammed against the wall, falling limply to the ground in a heap, continuing to groan in pain.

At that moment, the entire Fiery Blaze Clan Hall fell incredibly silent, as everyone stared wide eyed in disbelief, their gazes fixed upon the seemingly still undispersed glowing blue spirit energy.....

Chapter 1084: “Severing All Ties (2)”

[Blue spirit..... How is it possible.....]

The person who had released that blue spirit energy, was actually a thin youth who looked to be fourteen or fifteen. That was just too unbelievable!

Xiong Ba was even more surprised, his gaze in shock as he gaped at Jun Xie. He remembered when they were in the Fire Country's Capital City, Jun Xie had only had powers of the green spirit. But in less than a month since then, the youth had become a blue spirit?

Such speed for spirit power level breakthroughs, was truly unprecedented from ancient times and won't be replicated in the future, which smashed the perception of everything all the people in the crowd had ever known!

At this current time where the Purple Spirit was almost extinct, the indigo spirit was considered to be the most powerful existence, and just one step below the indigo, was the blue spirit.....

Casting their eyes to see throughout the world, had there ever been a blue spirit as young as this?

Qu Wen Hao clutched at his chest, as he stared at the back of Jun Xie's determined back, his heart filling up with hopeless despair.

The other Clan Chief of the Thousand Beast City suddenly stood forward and against the back of Jun Xie, he shouted: “Jun Xie! With you being so powerful! Why are you unwilling to help the Young Miss! Don't you and the Young Miss know each other? The Young Miss had been captured by Qu Xin Rui and whether she is dead or alive now is not even known. You have two Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts in your hands. Why can't you sacrifice one to save a person's life? If you are willing..... you will forever be the Thousand Beast City's benefactor!”

Jun Wu Xie turned her head back slightly, and she looked coldly at the Clan Chief who spoke.

“Just because you are weak, it makes you right?”

The Clan Chief was immediately stumped.

As things stood, Jun Wu Xie and the Thousand Beast City were initially not linked to each other in any way and the reason she had come here was because of her agreement with Qu Ling Yue to cooperate. Besides that, Jun Wu Xie was not bound by anything to give up anything for the Thousand Beast City at all.

This was obviously a matter that concerned only the people of the Thousand Beast City themselves, but they were asking her to give up her things to resolve it.....

If this was made known to people outside, they would only be despised and laughed at by the world!

She couldn't be bothered to waste her breath with those people anymore and Jun Wu Xie lifted her foot to walk out of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, and throughout her entire life, she would never set foot within this place ever again!

The figures of Jun Xie and Jun Wu Yao disappeared at the main doors of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall. Qu Wen Hao struggled to stand up, refusing the help offered by the Clan Chief.

“Grand Chieftain.....” Xiong Ba looked at the haggard looking Qu Wen Hao. In regards to this matter, he had objected to it from the beginning but.....

“Grand Chieftain..... You have really done wrong.....” Qing Yu said as he gave an extremely heavy sigh. Although Jun Xie had not exploded in rage this time, but from the look in the youth's eyes, Qing Yu had understood that their relationship as cooperating partners had broken up, the youth they had personally invited here to save the Thousand Beast City from its crisis had been pushed away from them with their own hands.

Qing Yu would never be able to forget, that cold, chilling gaze he had seen from Jun Xie.

Qu Wen Hao's face was deathly white, not saying a single word. He stepped falteringly towards the outside of the doors, his hand gripping the Spirit Taming Bone Flute tightly.

Xiong Ba and the others only felt helplessness in their hearts. They did not know anymore, just who in the world would be able to save them from this muck, after they had broken this last sliver of hope they had, with their very own hands.....

Qu Wen Hao left the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, and walked on his own to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. That one kick from Jun Xie before he left, had struck him right in the breast, which hurt his internal organs with the impact. He was feeling an agonizing pain as if fire was baking his insides but he could give afford to give the slightest attention to it, but just plodded heavily along with every single step towards the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, as he dragged his heavy hand up, to pound on the tightly locked doors.

Chapter 1085: “Severing All Ties (3)”

The main doors of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers were slowly opened. Shen Chi stood behind the doors and loomed at the flustered and anxious Qu Wen Hao.

Qu Wen Hao did not even give Shen Chi a single glance and just pushed past him, bracing himself to remain upright, as he strode towards the inside of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

Qu Xin Rui was lying down sideways upon the long lounge as the favoured men carefully served her.

Qu Wen Hao came rushing up and just as he just stepped onto the top floor, his weakened body made his legs give way and he fell onto the ground in a wretched heap. He struggled to his feet and laboured with every step, shifting himself slowly to come before Qu Xin Rui.

“The matter I asked you to do, has it been done?” Qu Xin Rui’s eyebrow arched up as she looked at Qu Wen Hao, her lips curling up into a cruel smile.

Qu Wen Hao’s eyes were malevolent as he glared at Qu Xin Rui, looking like he wanted to tear her to shreds, his heart filled with heaven damning hatred.

Qu Xin Rui looked straight into his hate filled eyes and she laughed lightly.

“There’s no need for you to glare so fiercely at me. I’m doing all this for the sake of the Thousand Beast City’s future. The might of the Fire Country is so much stronger than the Thousand Beast City and if we can ally ourselves with the Fire Country, to the Thousand Beast City, it would naturally bring us more benefits than drawbacks and this was what you as their Grand Chieftain must have longed for as well.”

“Where is Ling Yue! ?” Qu Wen Hao asked through gritted teeth

as he glared at Qu Xin Rui.

Qu Xin Rui raised her hand and shooed the group of fawning favoured men back as she sat up slowly.

“I’ve said it before. If you want to see your daughter, then bring Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast here in exchange.”

Qu Wen Hao suddenly gripped the Spirit Taming Bone Flute that symbolised the pinnacle of authority and power in the Thousand Beast City and threw it at Qu Xin Rui’s feet!

Qu Xin Rui’s eyebrow lifted up as she looked at Qu Wen Hao.

“I’ve already used the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to control Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast. Where is Ling Yue! !” Qu Wen Hao roared, his body shaking from fear.

Qu Xin Rui gestured with her hand and one of the favoured men kneeling by her foot obediently picked up the Spirit Taming Bone Flute and wiped it clean on his sleeve before carefully presenting it to Qu Xin Rui.

“Oh? Then where is that Spirit Beast now?” Qu Xin Rui asked as she toyed with the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, her eyes narrowed up.

“Jun Xie came back in a rush midway and brought it away. I wasn’t a match for Jun Xie and could not stop him. But the Spirit Taming Bone Flute has already gained control of that Spirit Beast’s consciousness and once it awakens, it will listen to my commands and it will come back here on its own. Now, you must honour your end of the bargain and return Ling Yue back to me!” Qu Wen Hao shouted with his fists tightly clenched.

“Hahaha.” Qu Xin Rui laughed aloud in curious delight. She looked on with pity at the wretched looking Qu Wen Hao, laughing as she shook her head and said: “Why are you being so anxious? No matter what, the Qu Family’s blood flows within Ling Yue and how would I, as a member of the Qu’s bloodline treat her badly? You

just rest assured. when she is here with me, I will naturally look after her properly. When that Spirit Beast comes back to look for you, I will then return Ling Yue back to you.”

Qu Wen Hao heart panicked and he did not care about anything else but just charged straight at Qu Xin Rui. Qu Xin Rui’s face creased up into a frown and with a palm strike, she sent Qu Wen Hao flying!

Qu Wen Hao crashed onto the floor and a mouthful of blood spewed out. His hair had fallen into a mess and his eyes were red and bloodshot as he glared angrily at Qu Xin Rui.

The pair of eyes were like those of a demon and Qu Xin Rui was feeling rather displeased with the staring as she asked with a frown: “What’s your hurry? Or are you worried that in a few months, you will have a few additional grandchildren?” As she spoke, Qu Xin Rui suddenly laughed loudly.

“Don’t worry. Those I sent over, are the most good looking men I have carefully picked. Even if she becomes with child, I believe it will be a beautiful baby.”

Chapter 1086: “Severing All Ties (4)”

“Argh! ! ! !” Qu Wen Hao knelt on the floor, his hands clutching onto the fox skins in agony, his eyes brimming with tears, his wail deeply heart wrenching to people!

Desolate, rage, despair.....

Qu Xin Rui’s laughter, accompanied by Qu Wen Hao’s anguished wail, reverberated within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

The weaving of the tears and laughter, clash of despair and cruelty, made the made in the entire Heavenly Cloud Chambers, fill with a suffocating oppression.

.....

Jun Wu Xie left the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall with Jun Wu Yao. They did not immediately leave the Thousand Beast City but had instead settled themselves in an inn within the Thousand Beast City.

Jun Wu Xie put the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit and Lord Meh Meh on the bed. It had been the first time the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit had experienced battle after its powers awoke and although its Guardian Grade Spirit Beast powers had allowed it to save Lord Meh Meh to remain with them, it had nevertheless drained out its strength. It lay on the bed, looking up at Jun Wu Xie with exhausted eyes, allowing Jun Wu Xie to treat its wounds, so obedient that it pained people even more to look at it.

“Are you going to just forget about the matter like this?” Jun Wu Yao asked, his arms crossed before his chest as he stood at the side, watching as Jun Wu Xie tended to the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit’s wounds, the traces of blood falling from the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit’s flesh and fur onto the clean bedsheets, scattering red blooms of blood upon it.

The actions by Jun Wu Xie’s hands did not stop and not a ripple of emotion showed upon her face as she just used a strangely calm

tone of voice to say: “Things I should take, I will not give up. Vengeance that is due, I will neither forget.”

The cooperation with Qu Wen Hao had been terminated but that did not mean that she would be giving up on the human skin map in the Thousand Beast City. Without help from the Thousand Beast City, she would just have to use other methods to get what she sought to have.

“I had thought that you would have annihilated everyone back at the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall.” Jun Wu Yao said with an eyebrow raised. Jun Wu Xie’s personality was one that hid a trait where she exacted revenge for all grievances suffered and for anyone who showed her kindness, she would return with ten times in reciprocation, but if anyone thought to harm her in the slightest, she would definitely crush their bones and scatter the dust.

But this time, Jun Wu Xie had only just given Qu Wen Hao one kick, and did not take any other actions in revenge. From what Jun Wu Yao could see, that wasn’t any kind of revenge to him.

To Jun Wu Yao, even if she didn’t beat him into having his soul scattered, he should be at least be killed to end up without a place to bury him. (*This sentence contains chinese proverb translation)

As Jun Wu Xie sewed up the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit’s wounds, she said: “Qu Wen Hao is merely a pawn, and even if I want to settle the scores, I will not take it out on a mere pawn. Whoever is responsible for all this, will be the one to bear the consequences.”

The reason Qu Wen Hao would suddenly turn to become like this, was all due to Qu Xin Rui’s instructions. Although Qu Wen Hao wasn’t really seen to be an extraordinarily brilliant or wise Grand Chieftain, he was at least considered to be dutiful and fair. Seek vengeance upon the source and for debts at the head, a single Qu Wen Hao would not be adequate to appease Jun Wu Xie’s rage. The one who had harboured designs on Lord Meh Meh was Qu Xin Rui!

“Oh? Then what do you intend to do?” Jun Wu Yao asked as he looked at Jun Wu Xie. Although she was seemingly calm on the surface, but he had already detected her rage from the tone of voice she was speaking with.

What Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit had suffered today had completely infuriated Jun Wu Xie!

Jun Wu Xie gaze turned to the side and looked at the unconscious Lord Meh Meh on the bed. From the moment she returned till now, Lord Meh Meh had been in a state of unconsciousness throughout and when Jun Wu Xie saw the Spirit Taming Bone Flute in Qu Wen Hao’s hand, she already knew what they had done to Lord Meh Meh, immediately realizing clearly what Qu Xin Rui sought with her hidden hand in it.

“When someone so eagerly seeks death, I will naturally grant it to her.” Jun Wu Xie said, her eyes narrowing up. Old debts and new scores, Qu Xin Rui, you wait and see!

Chapter 1087: “Belief of a Spirit Beast (1)”

In the next few days after, Jun Wu Xie seemed like she had completely evaporated from within the Thousand Beast City. The men that Qu Xin Rui sent out within the city to seek for any signs of Jun Xie did not come back with any news. Having initially thought that her plan would continue to play out but suddenly finding the most important link broken, it had inevitably made Qu Xin Rui rather anxious.

Not knowing.....

Within an inn in the Thousand Beast City, Jun Wu Xie was seated within a guest room, checking on Lord Meh Meh’s condition.

Jun Wu Yao sat by the window, looking outside the window to stare at the bustling crowd on the street, his jet black eyes tinged with a strange look.

A series of knocks sounded on the door and Jun Wu Yao got up, walking over to open the door.

Several guards from the Thousand Beast City stood outside with stern faces.

Jun Wu Yao looked at the guards with an eyebrow slightly raised as a finger resting upon the door wiggled and several black shadows soundlessly slipped inside the foreheads of the guards, quickly vanishing under their skin.

The bodies of the guards suddenly stiffened and their eyes turned dark and lacklustre, but they had all seemingly quickly recovered with a shock as they swung their gazes past Jun Wu Yao and Jun Wu Xie within the room, their eyes not pausing in the slightest as they turned, as if they had not noticed the existence of those two people, quickly turning their bodies away to leave.

“There’s nobody in this room. Continue searching.” The lead guard said carelessly, quickly proceeding to the next room to

investigate.

Jun Wu Yao closed the door, already highly familiar with what he just did.

That was already the third batch of guards who had come in search of them in the past few days but all of them had without exception cleanly forgotten what they had seen there. The black shadows that had entered their brains made them disregard Jun Wu Yao and Jun Wu Xie's existence and even when Jun Wu Xie was standing before them, the guards had all acted like they had not seen them at all.

From the first day that Jun Wu Xie and walked into this inn, everyone within the inn had received Jun Wu Yao's "brainwashing" and would unconsciously turn a blind eye to them.

"Still no improvement?" Jun Wu Yao asked as he closed the room door, leaning lazily against the door, as he looked at Jun Wu Xie sitting by the bed.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head, her hands resting lightly upon Lord Meh Meh's body.

Lord Meh Meh had been unconscious for many days. Ever since the day it was attacked by the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, it had remained in this deep sleep.

"Xiong Ba once mentioned, that Spirit Beasts who were attacked by the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, would regain their consciousness half a day later and become a puppet of the holder of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, but....." Jun Wu Xie said, biting on her lip. Lord Meh Meh had not shown any signs of awakening at all and had remained looking like it was asleep, lying peacefully upon the bed. No matter how Jun Wu Xie called out to it, she could not elicit the slightest response from it.

The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit's body was still covered in bandages and in the period that Lord Meh Meh had been unconscious, it had

not kicked a fuss nor made a noise, only worriedly leaning itself against Lord Meh Meh as it laid on the bed, using its own body temperature to warm the comatose Lord Meh Meh.

The two dumb beasts who had always been fighting incessantly with each other had actually deemed the other to be a partner they could depend on with their lives.

Jun Wu Yao came to stand beside Jun Wu Xie and reached out a hand to smoothen out the creases between Jun Wu Xie's brows. He carried Jun Wu Xie up in his arms and sat down by the bed himself, putting Jun Wu Xie on his lap before saying in a gentle voice: "It might be true that the Spirit Taming Bone Flute is able to manipulate the consciousness of a Spirit Beast, but a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast's consciousness is much stronger than that of common Spirit Beasts. Moreover, if there is an impregnable belief in its heart, even when it has fallen under the control of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, it would not submit itself willingly and on its own volition."

Chapter 1088: “Belief of a Spirit Beast (2)”

Jun Wu Yao’s gaze fixed upon the tiny body of Lord Meh Meh. Towards Spirit Beasts, he did not hold much interest. Even when Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit were Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts, they had not drawn the slightest interest from him. But from what Ye Mei told him, Jun Wu Yao knew one thing.

When they had been below the Heaven’s End Cliff, one such Spirit Beast had at the most critical moment saved Jun Wu Xie’s life.

“It is struggling.”

“What?” Jun Wu Xie asked as she raised her head slightly.

Jun Wu Yao said with a smile: “It must have known that it’s consciousness had been warped but the belief its spirit holds has not been obliterated and its spirit is resisting against the power of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, unwilling to become a puppet under the control of others. Hence, it had forcibly put itself into a state of unconsciousness, unwilling to awaken, only to become a mindless puppet strung.”

The consciousness of a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast is extremely strong and they possess enough awareness to formulate their own thoughts, and are capable of knowing what they really want.

Lord Meh Meh’s coma was done on its own volition as it was not willing to regain consciousness and be in a position where it would be forced to betray Jun Wu Xie, betray its own belief, and instead chosen to seal its own consciousness.

Jun Wu Xie’s lips stiffened as she stared at Lord Meh Meh.

This was one who in the beginning had secretly doggedly followed behind her tail, a dumb sheep only seeking to satisfy its desire for fresher greens, but at the most critical junctures, it would always show its stubborn streak and steely determination.

It had been like this at the bottom of the Heaven's End Cliff and it was the same case now.

A wincing ache tugged deep in Jun Wu Xie's heart, that sharp pain clearing up her mind of fogginess.

She had not treated Lord Meh Meh that well all this time but the dumb and gluttonous beast had been protecting her through its own ways.

"You will recover from this. I promise." Jun Wu Xie stretched out her hand, and carried Lord Meh Meh into her arms. She had not really given Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit that much care and concern in the past but these two simple minded Spirit Beasts had made her icy chilled heart feel this most pure form of trust and loyalty.

"I am your feedstress. You have got to believe that you have not chosen the wrong person to follow. Leave the rest of this to me..... I will definitely snatch you back from them, so you do not have to force yourself so much." Jun Wu Xie stroked Lord Meh Meh's wool gently as she said in a gentle voice. Having the spirit resist against an invasive power was a highly dangerous condition as if it went on for extended periods, Lord Meh Meh's nerves in its brain might be severely damaged and it might never be able to regain consciousness again.

Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit had their parts well and the rest would be carried on by her.

"I will not let down the trust you two have in me. I am your Mistress, and I will prove this through my own hands." Jun Wu Xie's eyes said as her eyes glinted with determination.

The unconscious Lord Meh Meh seemed to have been able to sense Jun Wu Xie's emotions when its body moved slightly in Jun Wu Xie's arms.

Jun Wu Yao rested his chin on Jun Wu Xie's shoulder. The little

one was intending to awaken Lord Meh Meh to not have it continue to struggle, and submit itself to the manipulation of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute.

In just moments, Lord Meh Meh finally opened its eyes. But the pair of big limpid eyes did not show its usual neediness as it immediately jumped out from Jun Wu Xie's arms without a moment's hesitation, and leaped out of the open window at the side!

"Puu!" The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit stared as the figure of Lord Meh Meh grew distant and it was anxious to go after it but found itself held tightly within Jun Wu Xie's arms.

"It will come back. I will personally bring Lord Meh Meh back." Jun Wu Xie crooned soothingly in a soft voice, her lowered eyes brewing with an unbridled glint of massacre.

Chapter 1089: “Hell Hath No Fury Like a Woman Spurned (1)”

Just as Wu Xin Rui was feeling perplexed by Jun Xie’s disappearance, Lord Meh Meh suddenly charged into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers!

That tiny little figure was filled with incredible power as it sent the guards standing outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers into hell immediately, treading over blood as it stepped into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, while Qu Xin Rui surprised gaze saw it walking over to a corner of the long lounge chair, to plop down in rest, its tiny hooves leaving behind red blossoms of blood upon the snow white fox skins, a bright and garish shade of red.

“This is.....” Shen Chi came in after hearing the news, as he stared at Lord Meh Meh whose eyes were closed in rest as it laid upon the floor, a bemused expression showing upon his face.

A trace of a smile had bloomed upon Qu Xin Rui’s face as she picked up the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, which had been left on the side of the long lounge chair, and held it in her hand. The moment the Spirit Taming Bone Flute had been picked up, Lord Meh Meh’s eyes had opened up slightly a tiny slit, to glance once at Qu Xin Rui, before it shut its eyes again to rest.

“It’s Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast!” Qu Xin Rui’s heart was filled with delight. Lin Que had previously described to her what Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast had looked like and from Lord Meh Meh’s appearance and its reaction to the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, that should be right!

“Hadn’t Jun Xie disappeared for a long time already? Why..... would this Spirit Beast suddenly appear?” Shen Chi asked with a frown forming on his face.

Qu Xin Rui replied nonchalantly as she said: “The Spirit Taming

Bone Flute had never failed before. When Qu Wen Hao used the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, Jun Xie had come crashing into the scene. Jun Xie must have known that he would not be able to take back his own Spirit Beast and had immediately taken the Spirit Beast away from here. But a pity it was for nought.... Even if he had escaped to the ends of the Earth, any Spirit Beast that the Spirit Taming Bone Flute had gained control over, would use any means it could to come seek the Spirit Taming Bone Flute. Hence, even if Jun Xie had left the Thousand Beast City, this Spirit Beast will still find its own way back here in the end.” The past days of frustration and perplexity evaporated into nothing in just mere moments, as Qu Xin Rui’s face shone with a wide gleeful smile.

The past few days where Jun Xie had disappeared must have been the youth’s last and final struggles but the Spirit Beast had finally still ended up within her hands.

“Since the Spirit Beast has now come here, that means that your request had been fulfilled. Are you going to honour your end of the agreement, to return Qu Ling Yue to Qu Wen Hao?” Shen Chi asked with an eyebrow raised. In recent days, Qu Wen Hao had been in an extremely wretched state and he would come to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers almost everyday, pleading for Qu Xin Rui to let him see his daughter.

But pitifully, his begging pleas was cruelly rejected every single time and the many days of endless fretting and frantic worry had not allowed Qu Wen Hao to let his injured body find the rest it sorely needed and when he had just barely made it to the doors of the Grand Chieftain’s Residence this morning, he had collapsed where he had to be carried back inside by people.

Qu Xin Rui gave a cold laugh and said: “When did I ever make any kind of a deal with Qu Wen Hao? Why do I not remember it?”

Shen Chi was slightly taken aback, and the corners of his lips curled up into a highly sinister and malicious smile.

“You are truly merciless and cruel.”

Qu Xin Rui was completely unbothered as she said: “I am not being cruel, but it’s just that Qu Wen Hao is just too naive. I had never intended to return Qu Ling Yue to him right from the start. If I let him see the state that showed the kind of utter humiliation that Qu Ling Yue was put through and returned his daughter to him after that, wouldn’t he immediately fight me with everything he has?”

“What? Don’t tell me you’re afraid of him?” Shen Chi said with a laugh.

“What a joke. That I would be afraid of trash like that? The Spirit Taming Bone Flute can only be used by the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City and this Spirit Beast is controlled by him. Although it will move and advance according to the tune of the Spirit Taming Bone Flute, but if Qu Wen Hao dies, then the control the Spirit Taming Bone Flute holds over the Spirit Beast will disappear as well, and it will no longer be under our control.”

Chapter 1090: “Hell Hath No Fury Like a Woman Scorned (2)”

“Oh? Then from what you’re saying, you do not really need this Spirit Beast to obey your orders?” Shen Chi asked as he looked at Lord Meh Meh who was lying on the floor with its eyes closed. He had just been thinking that it was rather strange that the Spirit Beast was being a little cold towards Qu Xin Rui.

Now, it seemed that there was an explanation for that.

The reason why Lord Meh Meh would suddenly appear here was only due to the Spirit Taming Bone Flute but the person who was really able to use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute was Qu Wen Hao, and the only person that would be able to make the Spirit Beast adhere to orders was just Qu Wen Hao alone.

But Qu Wen Hao had thrown the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to Qu Xin Rui on the very first day which showed that he was unwilling to do anything further than that.

“Although Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts are rare, but if they would not submit themselves to use as I wish, why should I force the issue? I only wanted the Spirit Beast to use it to coerce Jun Xie to accept my suggestion and as long as it remains here in my hands, Jun Xie will be sure to turn up once again. As long as I am able to make him submit and allow me to mobilize the might of the Fire Country to accomplish my goals, that would be enough.” Qu Xin Rui said with a laugh, pretending to have unconsciously knocked the Spirit Taming Bone Flute a few times upon the side of the lounge chair, the crisp knocks sounding clearly within Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

As the sound rang out repetitively, Lord Meh Meh opened its eyes as if it was slightly put off by the sounds.

Qu Xin Rui instead found it rather amusing and repeatedly used

that to try to agitate Lord Meh Meh.

Shen Chi observed Qu Xin Rui's wicked sense of humour and said: "I'm afraid you do not seem to mean what you said. With a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast right before your eyes, are you really completely unmoved?"

Qu Xin Rui stopped her hands' actions and turned to look at Shen Chi.

[How could she not be tempted?]

[If not for the fact that the Spirit Taming Bone Flute could only be used by the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City, she would already have snatched it away. It was because she had no way of making the Spirit Beast obey her orders that she had said those pompous words of indifference.]

"What's most important is the Fire Country and all other things are not as critical." Qu Xin Rui said, her eyes narrowing up. She had suddenly lost the interest in teasing Lord Meh Meh with what Shen Chi had said and she put the Spirit Taming Bone Flute aside. Without the disturbance, Lord Meh Meh was finally able to close its eyes again to rest.

"About this Spirit Beast, Qu Wen Hao would find out about it very soon and he will surely kick up another big fuss about it." Shen Chi reasoned.

Qu Xin Rui replied: "What's there to worry about? You just have to cut off a finger from that slut and send it straight to Qu Wen Hao and tell him to be good and obedient. If he dares to kick up a fuss, then it will not be as simple as giving him a few additional grandkids. I can jolly well make mincemeat out of his daughter and if he really wishes for that to happen, he is welcome to stir things up."

Shen Chi gave a low chuckle. Towards Qu Xin Rui's highly cruel and extreme methods, he was not going to discourage her in any

way but was in fact more than happy to agree with it.

“Alright. I’ll go do it now.” Upon saying that, Shen Chi immediately turned and left.

In the basement level of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, Shen Chi’s hands were held behind his back as attendants behind him held up fire torches, to throw light into the dark dungeon cell.

Within a metal cage, faint sounds of metal chains dragging against the floor reached them and under that harsh dragging noise, pitiful wails of utter despair were mixed inside, a wail squeezed right from deep inside the soul, extremely horrifying to hear.

Shen Chi’s steps stopped in front of a metal door and the door was slowly opened. The inside of the cell was very dim and the muffled wails came from within the dim darkness. Several men in various states of undress at at the moment that the door was opened, hugged a clump of their clothes and walked out from the cell. They saw Shen Chi and they immediately nodded their heads reverently, their eyes tinged with fearful respect.

Shen Chi cast a glance at them and the sides of his mouth lifted in a cruel smirk.

“The taste of the Young Miss of the Thousand Beast City, should be rather good right?”

Chapter 1091: “The Despicable Got Their Way (1)”

In the Thousand Beast City, two youths clad in dark cloaks infiltrated into the city under the darkness of the night. Their movements were nimble as they avoided detection from the city’s guards, silently slipping into the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall.

Standing before the main doors of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, a youth pulled out a crude and simple map from his robes and said to his companion beside him: “This should be the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall right? Little Xie told us previously to look for her here after we come into the city, this couldn’t be wrong, could it?”

The dim moonlight shone upon the other youth beside him and the mole of beauty at the corner of the youth’s eye was especially eye grabbing.

“It won’t.”

The youth holding the map immediately stuffed the map into his robes and whispered in a soft voice: “We had really done well on this job and if Xiong Ba doesn’t treat me to a good jar, I will not tell him where the people of the Thousand Beast City have been imprisoned.”

His companions threw him a glance but did not say anything more.

The two slender figures then disappeared in an instant under the pale moonlight.

Inside the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, Xiong Ba was seated beside the table, as several wine jars lay haphazardly around his feet. His face was all red from drink, but the wine in his cup had not been able to ease his sorrows in the slightest, the deep frown on his face had not relaxed at all.

Qing Yu sat opposite Xiong Ba, his complexion pale, dark rings

showing under his eyes.

The stench of wine filled the interior of the room, the oppressive air within making it hard to breathe.

“Sigh..... What is happening here? That the Thousand Beast City..... the Thousand Beast City..... would actually be reduced to such a sorry state. To think that for so many years, we were seen to be so mighty in the eyes of the people throughout the world, but now..... Ha! Betrayal of trust, abandonment of morals, repaying kindness with ingratitude..... Actions of completely despicable minions.....” Xiong Ba was drunk enough that his awareness was already slightly fuzzy. He lifted the wine jar in his hand and took a long draw with a bitter laugh, the cold wine spilling over his clothes, but failing to awaken him from his depression.

Qing Yu stared at Xiong Ba with a complicated expression on his face.

[How many days has it been.....]

Ever since Jun Xie left, the entire Fiery Blaze Clan from top to bottom had seemingly fallen into great misfortune. From the disciples all the way up to Xiong Ba, they had all seemingly collapsed and fallen into ruin, unable to pick themselves up. The things that had happened in the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall that day, had been like a pair of blood stained hands, shredding apart the pride and fierce loyalty of the Fiery Blaze Clan, throwing them all into the deep abyss of having betrayed and abandoned an ally.

“Qing Yu..... How many years have I been the Clan Chief of the Fiery Blaze Clan?” Xiong Ba asked, his head lowered, and he asked in a fuzzy voice as his forehead rested upon the edge of the wine jar.

“I can’t remember clearly.” Qing Yu replied.

“Ha..... I can’t remember either. All I remember is that our Old Chief, when he was dragged before the Grand Chieftain’s

Residence by Qu Xin Rui, just before he was executed, he said..... Rather be broken than bent..... Our Old Chief had such strong backbone, and I am just trash instead. Now that the Thousand Beast City had fallen into such a state and I am still helpless to do anything about it. I can't help the people, can't help the Grand Chieftain, can't save the Young Miss..... I am now so useless that I had not even been able to protect a single Spirit Beast! HAHAHA! WHAT A CLAN CHIEF! WHAT BULLSHIT! I AM JUST A SPINELESS PIECE OF TRASH! HAHAHA!..... AN INGRATE WHO'S JUST A SELF SERVING USELESS TRASH! COMPARED TO LIN QUE, HOW DIFFERENT AM I TO HIM! ?" Xiong ba suddenly sat up straight backed, his laughter so filled with despair and hopelessness.

"We were the ones who invited Jun Xie to come. We were the ones who asked him to lend a hand against the predicament the Thousand Beast City was facing. And now? In order to save our own people, we had actually taken his Spirit Beast and sent it into the hands of that old hag! Qing Yu! In my chest..... I feel so infuriated..... it's choking me..... choking me so bad....." Xiong Ba lifted his head to look up, to stare up at the roof bathed in the candlelight, and two trails of hot tears, flowed down from the corners of his eyes.

Qing Yu clenched his jaw tight, not daring to say a word, but just downed the wine in his cup silently, seeking to use the alcohol to dispel the guilt and shame that wrenched at his heart.

Chapter 1092: “The Despicable Got Their Way (1)”

“If that old hag had not committed a deed so vile and demented..... I will not have let the Grand Chieftain do this..... I really won't.....” Xiong Ba suddenly started weeping, the deep struggle within his heart and the guilt he felt towards Jun Xie that ate at him, made this almost eight foot towering giant crumble and falter.

“Qing Yu, I really do not know what I should do..... I've watched the Young Miss grow up to become such a big girl..... the Grand Chieftain..... the Grand Chieftain was forced to witness her being brutally humiliated by those beasts..... I really..... really cannot bear it.....”

No one knew what had really happened in Jun Xie's room that day.

Although Qu Wen Hao was the Grand Chieftain that Xiong Ba had sworn undying allegiance to, but in the face of that loyalty, Xiong Ba's unbending character was such that he would not be able to submit himself to anyone.

And when Qu Wen Hao had suddenly told them with his face in a deathly pallor, all that he had experienced, Xiong Ba's heart was not able to remain as steadfastly resolute.

Although Qu Wen Hao's character wasn't considered to be stalwart and unwavering, but he still held his own principles firmly. Even when his wife had been captured, and he had to submit himself under others, he still did everything he could to protect the people in the city. But the extent of Qu Xin Rui's viciousness had exceeded anything all of them had expected.

In this world, where would you find a Father who could bear to tolerate witnessing his own daughter being humiliated like that.....

Xiong Ba did not dare imagine what Qu Wen Hao must have been forced to go through, just how horrifying and traumatic it could be to cause such a steadfast man to bend his back and submit, surrendering up his conscience.

Qing Yu downed the wine one cup after another in quick succession, not saying even one word. The biting wine burned his throat as it went down, bringing about a throbbing pain, not enjoying the wine one bit, but more like a form of punishment.

Self inflicted punishment.

“Oh? Enjoying yourselves on such a great night, it just so happens that I am feeling really thirsty!” The clear voice of a youth rang out candidly within the room suddenly.

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu turned their heads in confusion to look, and saw Qiao Chu leaping into the room through the window, with Hua Yao’s face appearing right behind him.

“Hurry up, I am dying of thirst here.” Qiao Chu said with a guffaw as he walked over, while utter shock showed upon the faces of Xiong Ba and Qing Yu. They watched as Qiao Chu nonchalantly picked up a jar of wine from the side, to tear the seal open and tilting it back with his head to pour its contents into his mouth.

Hua Yao walked over in an unhurried manner as his gaze swept over the faces of Xiong Ba and Qing Yu, but did not find anything suspicious.

“That really hit the spot!” Qiao Chu exclaimed with a laugh as he wiped his mouth, looking at Xiong Ba and Qing Yu.

“You don’t need to be so alarmed. We were afraid that the people of the city would discover us and that was why we sneaked ourselves in here. We have really tired ourselves out really badly throughout this period. In order to tail those people, we have not been able to get any shuteye at all for the past few days, so you wouldn’t mind it if we grab a couple of sips of your wine, would

you?” Qiao Chu teased, winking his eyes meaningfully at the completely stunned Xiong Ba.

Xiong Ba’s mouth gaped open, and did not know what to say at that moment.

Jun Xie had stationed Qiao Chu and her other companions outside the city previously in order to find out the location where Qu Xin Rui had imprisoned the people of the Thousand Beast City, and with Qiao Chu appearing here now, that would mean that they have already determined the exact location!

“Your Fiery Blaze Clan Hall isn’t really that large a place, but why is it that after looking an entire round through the place, I still do not see Little Xie? Where have you guys hidden him? Have someone bring him here quickly as we have traveled both day and night just to bring the news here.” Qiao Chu said as he moistened his parched throat with another swig of the jar, a faint red flush creeping up onto his face, his eyes shining with anxiety and joyous delight.

The words Little Xie struck at Xiong Ba’s mind like a mighty bolt and the tipsiness that filled him immediately dissipated without a trace at that instant, all colour quickly draining out from his face completely!

Chapter 1093: “The Despicable Got Their Way (3)”

Xiong Ba’s strange reaction was noticed by Hua Yao and Qiao Chu and Qiao Chu slowly retracted the wide smile on his face, as he asked cautiously.

“What’s wrong..... Don’t tell me something has happened?”

Xiong Ba clenched his fists up tight unable to look at Qiao Chu straight in his eye.

Qing Yu’s lips trembled slightly and opened his mouth slightly. From Qiao Chu’s words earlier, it had held within them a message in no uncertain terms.

They had already found the place their people had been imprisoned.

Although Qiao Chu and Hua Yao were still highly energetic, but judging from their dust filled clothes and the mess their hair was in, it was not hard to see that they had not gotten any rest through the period. As they had just said, in order to track down the whereabouts of the imprisoned people of the Thousand Beast City, they really had not even been able to shut their eyes at all for the past few days and nights but they had still rushed all the way here to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall in the first instance just to deliver the news into their hands.....

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu could not even meet the eyes of Qiao Chu and Hua Yao as the clear eyes of the two youths would just reflect the deep shame the two men were feeling at that moment.

“Can’t you just say something? What exactly happened?” Qiao Chu asked in confusion as he looked at Xiong Ba and Qing Yu who were avoiding his gaze and a sense of unease rose within his heart, the hand holding the wine jar slowly lowered.

“Young Master Qiao..... We..... We have let all of you down.....”

Qing Yu squeezed out those few words in a trembling voice, sounding like every single word took all his courage to say.

The confusion in Qiao Chu's eyes deepened and he was about to ask more about it when Hua Yao at his side suddenly raised a hand and stopped him from asking.

“Little Xie is not at the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall?” Hua Yao asked, his eyes narrowing up. Xiong Ba and Qing Yu were reacting strangely and that had given rise to an uneasy guess to creep into his mind.

Qing Yu nodded his head solemnly.

“Where is Little Xie now?” Hua Yao asked in a chilling tone.

“We..... We..... don't know.....”

“Why did he leave?” Hua Yao's voice was turning icy.

Qing Yu fell silent and hung his head, his hand holding the wine cup tightening its grip, and a clear crack sounded, a line suddenly appearing upon the wine cup in his hand.....

“Brother Hua.....” Qiao Chu was feeling rather nervous as he stared at the side of Hua Yao's face. The two of them have been close for many years and he could see the rage currently brewing deep within Hua Yao's eyes.

Qing Yue clenched his jaw tight and did not know what to say. While Xiong Ba, after a momentary struggle within his heart, finally spoke: “We've let down Young Master Jun. The Thousand Beast City owes him just too much..... Qu XIn Rui abducted our Young Miss and forced the Grand Chieftain to use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to snatch Young Master Jun's Spirit Beast away from him.....”

*(A form of swearing) “Your uncle!” With a loud crash, Qiao Chu smashed the wine jar in his hand by Xiong Ba's feet and his attractive countenance immediately twisted up with a surge of unbridled rage!

The clear and crystalline wine exploded with the smashing of the wine jar, splashing all over Xiong Ba, but he did not react in the slightest.

“It was you guys who had so persistently begged Little Xie to help you! In the end, without batting an eyelid, you have sold us out! What does this thing that happened in the Thousand Beast City have anything to do with all of us! ? Just because all of you are unable to save the person, what right do you have to make Little Xie sacrifice his own Spirit Beast! ! !” Qiao Chu shot forward to come before Xiong Ba and picked up the towering Xiong Ba in his hand, his face contorted with rage!

“This is what you mean by cooperation? Selling out your ally without the slightest hesitation? If we had known that the Thousand Beast City was like this, we shouldn’t have agreed to come help you right from the beginning!”

Chapter 1094: “The Despicable Got Their Way (4)”

Qiao Chu was exploding with rage. He never would have dreamed, that when they came here into the Thousand Beast City, what greeted them would be a result like this!

“All this time we have been risking our lives out there for your people and you have proven yourselves to be so vicious! Because of your very own Young Miss and all of you forced Little Xie to give up his Spirit Beast? When we were spending sleepless night out there trying to resolve the Thousand Beast City’s crisis, what were all of you doing? This is the goddamned reward you are giving back to us! ?” Qiao Chu slammed his fist onto Xiong Ba’s face, a mighty big one, that made Xiong Ba immediately see stars!

Although it was true they needed the human skin map, but if Xiong Ba and his group had not invited them here, they would still seek other avenues to get what they wanted in their hands and Xiong Ba wasn’t the only route they could take. They had chosen to trust Xiong Ba, but what had they gotten in return?

When they had been outside toiling for the sake of the Thousand Beast City, these people from the Thousand Beast City had instead pushed Jun Wu Xie right into the fire!

What kind of an ally was that! ?

Qiao Chu’s heart was filled with regret. They shouldn’t have agreed to collaborate with the Thousand Beast City right from the start. With just Jun Wu Xie’s ploys, to get the human skin map, they wouldn’t have needed any outside help. They had done all this just because Xiong Ba and Qu Ling Yue had pleaded with them.

Qiao Chu’s fist rained down upon Xiong Ba’s face but it did not reduce any of the rage he had pent up inside.

That feeling of being betrayed was completely unacceptable.

Xiong Ba did not resist in the slightest, but allowed Qiao Chu to give vent, and even when he was coughing out blood, he did not utter a single sound of complaint.

Hua Yao suddenly pulled back on Qiao Chu next punch he was about to deliver and Qiao Chu's fist froze in mid air, his entire body fully tensed up from the rage within.

"Enough." Hua Yao said.

"Brother Hua, let go of me! I want to kill this treacherous betraying scoundrel!" Qiao Chu said through tightly clenched teeth.

"I said it's enough." Hua Yao said coldly. "Finding Little Xie should be the key."

All the strength seeped out of Qiao Chu at that moment, as he tossed Xiong Ba to the side.

Hua Yao chilling gaze fell upon the wretched looking Xiong Ba, and there wasn't the slightest trace of sympathy in those eyes.

"From now onwards, whether the Thousand Beast City lives or dies, it does not concern us. Our cooperation is henceforth terminated." Hua Yao said icily, immediately turning to walk out the doors.

Qiao Chu glared at Xiong Ba and Qing Yu and quickly followed.

Xiong Ba remained lying weakly upon the ground, the pain all over his body seemingly reminding him of his incompetence and shame.

Hua Yao and Qiao Chu came out of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, and they stood on the main street under the night sky. The street was cold and cheerless, the pale moonlight shone upon it, showing its emptiness.

"Brother Hua, where..... could Little Xie have gone?" Qiao Chu was seemingly a little perplexed.

“She would still be within city.” Hua Yao said with absolute certainty.

The night air was cool, but Qiao Chu and Hua Yao could not calm their hearts. They had rushed all the way here but had been met with such a result, which wouldn’t be acceptable in anyone’s mind.

Suddenly, a black shadow appeared right before the two youths. When the two torn and perplexed youths saw the face of the person, their eyes immediately lit up in joy.

“Ye Sha!” Qiao Chu stared in surprise at Ye Sha who had appeared so suddenly in front of him.

Ye Sha nodded slightly.

“Did Little Xie ask you to come look for us? Where is she now?” Qiao Chu asked excitedly, as under the heavens, the only person besides Jun Wu Yao who was able to give orders to Ye Sha, would only be Jun Wu Xie!

Ye Sha answered: “The Young Miss had ordered for me to wait for the two of you here. I will now bring you to go see her.”

Chapter 1095: “The Despicable Got Their Way (5)”

Under Ye Sha guidance, Qiao Chu and Hua Yao came to the inn that Jun Wu Xie was staying at.

When Qiao Chu pushed the door open to enter, his face was still slightly tinged with resentment against the Thousand Beast City’s betrayal. And as the door opened and he saw the person inside the room, he was completely stunned.

Jun Wu Yao sat gracefully upon a chair by the window, the moonlight spilling over his body that streamed in through the window. He was supporting his chin in one hand as he watched Jun Wu Xie at the side, a faint smile playing across his lips, a sight so beautiful it looked as if it was from a painting.

The moment Qiao Chu saw Jun Wu Yao, his mind went completely blank.

“Big..... Big Brother Wu Yao.....”

Jun Wu Yao lifted his head slightly to look at Qiao Chu and Hua Yao at the door and smiled at them.

“You’re back already.” Qiao Chu said, scratching at his head. He had not thought that he would see Jun Wu Yao here. He had been worried that Jun Wu Xie would be suffering after the matter with the Thousand Beast City, but at the moment he saw Jun Wu Yao, he immediately felt relieved.

With Jun Wu Yao here, he will not allow Jun Wu Xie to suffer any injustice.

“That’s right.” Jun Wu Yao said with a smile.

Hua Yao glanced at Qiao Chu who was standing at the door gaping stupidly and he raised a foot to kick Qiao Chu inside.

Almost having fallen onto the ground, Qiao Chu turned his head

towards Hua Yao with an aggrieved look but Hua Yao was too stingy to even spare him a glance out of the corner of his eyes and had turned to Jun Wu Xie instead.

“What actually happened?” Hua Yao asked, his brows creasing up together.

Jun Wu Xie looked up and asked nonchalantly: “You guys went to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall?”

“Yes.” Hua Yao nodded.

“The you should already know what has happened.” Jun Wu Xie had not gone to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall again since that day but she still remembered what she said to Qiao Chu and the others previously. Once Qiao Chu and the others found out the exact location that those people have been imprisoned, they were to immediately make their way to the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall to tell her the news. Hence Jun Wu Xie had asked Ye Sha to keep a lookout at the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall and once he saw Qiao Chu and Hua Yao coming out from the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, he had led them straight here.

The expression on Qiao Chu’s face when he had pushed to door in to enter had already given Jun Wu Xie enough hints to the information.

To have been able to make Qiao Chu so resentful, Xiong Ba and his people must have already revealed to him all that had happened previously.

“The Thousand Beast City are an absolute disgrace! If we had known earlier, we shouldn’t have agreed to their request in the first place and leave them to meet their own demise.” When Qiao Chu recalled what he had heard earlier, the ball of fiery rage within immediately reignited to burn strongly.

Jun Wu Xie had never been one who liked to meddle into the affairs of others. Although her personality was rather cold, but she

would never initiate any provocation against others. As long as people do not poke at her inverted scale, she seldom struck viciously. This matter regarding the Thousand Beast City, had been initiated by Xiong Ba and the others themselves, and now that they were bitten by their betrayal, not even a saint could be expected to tolerate such two faced treachery!

Jun Wu Xie looked calmly at the seething Qiao Chu, whose eyes had turned calm.

Hua Yao gaze swept across the room and he was silent a moment before he asked: “Where is Lord Meh Meh?”

Hua Yao’s words caused Qiao Chu to be taken aback in surprise. When they were at the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, Xiong Ba had said that Qu Xin Rui had her eye on Jun Wu Xie’s Spirit Beast but they had thought that with Jun Wu Xie’s resourcefulness, she would never let that happen. But now that they did not see any signs of Lord Meh Meh within the room, Qiao Chu’s heart dropped with a thud.

Jun Wu Xie raised her head to look at the bright moon outside the window, her voice calm as she said: “In Qu Xin Rui’s hands.”

Qiao Chu’s eyes widened in shock, his face filled with incredulity, unable to believe his own ears.

Chapter 1096: “The Show is About to Start (1)”

Jun Wu Xie was calm as she looked at Qiao Chu’s shocked expression.

“Damn it..... We will now just go and torment that old witch to death!” Qiao Chu said, rubbing his fists, all ready to stir up a big storm. If they had known that Jun Wu Xie would be put through all these in the Thousand Beast City, they wouldn’t have let Jun Wu Xie come here alone even if you beat them to death.

“No rush.” Jun Wu Xie said, shaking her head. She turned to Hua Yao at the side and said: “Have you guys managed to find out where those people have been imprisoned?”

Hua Yao nodded. “The place they have been imprisoned is not too far away. It is an underground dungeon and the people guarding the place are not exceptionally powerful. But as most of the prisoners are weak and helpless ladies, so they were not able to resist against the guards much.”

The guards that Qu Xin Rui sent there were not too wary and alert, and it was thought that it might have been because this had gone on for many a number of years and they have never encountered anyone who dared to resist them, which made them complacent and relaxed their guard.

Jun Wu Xie nodded.

Qiao Chu’s eyes widened. “That scoundrel of a Grand Chieftain had already done something so treacherous and you are still thinking of helping him to save his people? Have you gone mad?”

Qiao Chu was of the thinking that after Qu Wen Hao had committed such a blunder, the fact that Jun Wu Xie had not killed him was already being very merciful, and continuing to help him save those abducted ladies who were from the Thousand Beast City

was something completely unthinkable.

“I’m doing this not for the sake of the Thousand Beast City.” Jun Wu Xie said expressionlessly. “I would naturally have my own reasons for doing this.”

The cooperation with the Thousand Beast City had already been terminated and all that she was doing now was only for the sake of getting the map as soon as possible.

“The plan has already come to this stage. Regardless of what Qu Wen Hao and his people wants to do, I will not discontinue with my plan. Since we are unable to continue with the cooperation, then I will just let them move according to my plan.” Jun Wu Xie said, her eyes narrowing up.

Qiao Chu was rather astounded and he asked: “What do you intend to do?”

Jun Wu Xie answered: “Get the map, take back Lord Meh Meh, and send Qu Xin Rui..... on her way to Hell.”

“Where are Fei Yan and the others now?” Jun Wu Xie then asked.

“Keeping watch at the place, in case anything unexpected happens.” Hua Yao said.

“Tell them to act as soon as possible. I want to push Qu Xin Rui over into the abyss little by little.” Jun Wu Xie said with a chilling smile. She had initially only sought to get the map. But as Qu Xin Rui had chosen to take Lord Meh Meh, she wasn’t about to be nice about it.

“Alright!”

After some discussion, Jun Wu Xie asked Hua Yao and Qiao Chu to first go get some rest but because of what happened within the Thousand Beast City, the two of them refused to rest and took advantage of the cover of night to slip out of the city, to bring the news to their other companions.

Watching the night sky, Jun Wu Xie stared at the darkness that enveloped the Thousand Beast City, her eyes chilled with an icy glint.

.....

At the beginning of the month, a new batch of hostages from the Thousand Beast City was sent back into the city to be reunited with their family. Bright and early, the people were already gathered at the gates of the Thousand Beast City, watching in anticipation to see whether their family members were among those who returned this time.

In the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, Qu Xin Rui was highly agitated as she sat in front of her dressing table. The transformation had spread to her entire right arm and the originally smooth and fair skin had now been replaced with one that was old, aged and wrinkled. The affliction had only been about the size of a palm previously and it had now spread throughout her entire arm, slowly going towards her shoulder.

“What is really happening? Shen Chi! Haven’t you already completed the sacrifice? Why do I not feel anything at all?” Qu Xin Rui asked in exasperation as she threw the bronze mirror onto the floor.

Chapter 1097: “The Show is About to Start (2)”

Seeing the traces left from the passage of time showing up and becoming more and more obvious upon her skin, Qu Xin Rui was getting more and more agitated. The predicament one was cornered into by the changes that came with time's passing, was one thing she did not want to experience again.

Shen Chi's brows creased together slightly and said: “I have completed the offering and its power has been fully restored. Why are you still afflicted with this condition?”

According to reason, Qu Xin Rui should now be able to retain her youthful looks that would not fade. But for some unknown reason, ever since the birthday banquet, the speed of her body's aging had suddenly been highly accelerated, making it seem as if that the young and youthful skin on her body was slowly being peeled off bit by bit.

“You are sure that having that slut Qu Ling Yue locked up within the dungeon will not affect me in any way?” Qu Xin Rui asked.

Shen Chi shook his head.

“The underground dungeon and the Heavenly Cloud Chambers are not linked directly, so that should not affect you at all.”

Qu Xin Rui gritted her teeth and said: “Once the matter with the Fire Country is confirmed, I will be making a trip back, to ask the Elder to help me see what is happening. I have not gone back for many years and could it be that the effects from that thing is losing its efficacy on me.....”

Shen Chi said: “Maybe, but it has already been quite a few days and Jun Xie still has not appeared. Are you really confident that he will accept your terms for the sake of one Spirit Beast?” Upon saying that, Shen Chi's gaze fell upon the figure of Lord Meh Meh

at the side.

Ever since that day when Lord Meh Meh had come to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, it had just quietly laid at that spot. Not eating nor drinking, and not making a single sound. If not for the aura still emanating from the beast, one would really think that it had fallen into a deep sleep.

Qu Xin Rui had firmly believed that with Lord Meh Meh in their hands, they would be able to force Jun Xie to submit. But they have waited a few days and they had still not seen any sign of Jun Xie, which inadvertently caused her to develop a sense of unease.

“Wait a while more..... If he still doesn’t appear, I will come up with another plan.”

Shen Chi shrugged and did not say anything more.

Very soon, a guard of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers came running over.

Qu Xin Rui was already in a foul mood and when she saw the flustered guard, she asked with a frown on her face: “Why are you being so flustered? Don’t tell me you saw a ghost.”

The guard started to stammer: “Reporting to Great Aunt. Today..... The batch of people have been sent back.....”

Qu Xin Rui’s lips stiffened and she said impatiently: “So what if they have been sent back. Let those fools be happy for a few days and when the end of the month comes, just send them out again. What is there to be so flustered about?”

The monthly exchange of hostages had never been a thing she cared about.

But the guard continued to stammer: “But..... but.....”

.....

Inside the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, Xiong Ba was suffering from a splitting headache as he sat in his room. He had consecutively

drunk himself into unconsciousness the past few days and he was finding himself unable to differentiate between reality and his dreams. Everything before his eyes seemed to be moving which brought about bouts of nausea.

The disciple who came in with hangover tea just set it down and did not dare say anything but just threw Xiong Ba a worried glance before retreating out from the room.

These days, the atmosphere within the entire Fiery Blaze Clan Hall had become extremely strange and although no one dared to bring up the incident that happened on that day, that incident had been burned and branded into their hearts, an indelible memory. Although the disciples did not know everything about the matter, but from the conversation between Jun Xie and Qu Wen Hao that day, they were able to roughly feel something from it.

They, the Thousand Beast City, must have done something that let Young Master Jun down greatly.....

“Clan Chief!” Qing Yu was panicky and highly flustered as he came rushing into Xiong Ba’s room.

Chapter 1098: “The Show is About to Start (3)”

Xiong Ba held his head in agony as he looked at Qing Yu. “What’s wrong?”

“Go quickly to the city’s gates and see!” Qing Yu said as he stepped forward to pull Xiong Ba up. Xiong Ba was still feeling rather woozy and when Qing Yu dragged him to his feet, his steps were rather unsteady.

At the Thousand Beast City’s gates, the mass of people congregated there had fully filled several of the main streets. Qing Yu dragged Xiong Ba along as they squeezed past the crowd and when they reached the front of crowd of people, what he saw before him made his eyes widen up in shock!

Outside the city’s gates, thousands of womenfolk were gathered there. Their eyes brimming with tears, their figures thinned and frail looking, as they held their hands together nervously before their chests.

The Thousand Beast City had more than a thousand of their people in total abducted by Qu Xin Rui, and they were standing right before their eyes!

Xiong Ba’s mind exploded with that realisation!

All those people who had been captured by Qu Xin Rui had actually returned!

That was just something outright impossible!

Those women who have been separated for so long with their families were all crying at the same time, shrouding the Thousand Beast City in a sorrow that made people’s hearts wince to hear.

Many people have upon hearing the news rushed to the scene and saw their wives and mothers. They could not be bothered with

anything else and just rushed forward to wrap their loved ones into their arms.

The Thousand Beast City's gate broke out in a clamour of wails and sobs, the people weeping in tight embrace not even able to ponder upon what was really happening.

Qu Xin Rui would bring a batch of people back every month but the numbers were always few. But this time, all the people she had abducted have been released and that had been highly shocking to everyone!

Xiong Ba stared with his eyes widened, and looking at the womenfolk who have returned, his mind was a complete blank.

Qu Xin Rui would never be so kind, to release everybody all at once.

And behind all the highly emotional women, at the foot of the city wall, Xiong Ba suddenly spotted a familiar figure. He recognized it to be Qiao Chu who had just come rushing back to the Thousand Beast City several days ago!

"It's Jun Xie..... Jun Xie rescued all of them....." Like a bolt of lightning had struck him, Xiong Ba fell back in a stagger as Qing Yu rushed to hold him up, his eyes filled with the same shame and guilt.

The return of all their womenfolk, was definitely not due to Qu Xin Rui being merciful. When Qiao Chu and Hua Yao had come to them a few days ago, telling them that they had found the location where their people have been imprisoned, Xiong Ba and Qing Yu had wanted so much to ask them for the exact location, but were too ashamed to open their mouths then. They had then thought that Jun Xie had totally abandoned them after that and would not help them any further.

But today, they were looking at all these people returned to them.

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu immediately felt their faces begin to burn

with a stinging pain!

Jun Xie had still saved all these people held hostage. Even after they had betrayed the youth, he had not let the rage in his heart implicate these innocent hostages.

The return of the hostages had inadvertently delivered one tight slap onto Xiong Ba and his people. The deep shame and the prick to their conscience made them suddenly find it hard to breathe.

Compared to Jun Xie, they were all just a bunch of ungrateful beasts!

Standing within the joyous and highly emotional atmosphere surrounding them, Xiong Ba and Qing Yu hung their heads in shame. They had noticed, among the crowd, a flustered Qu Wen Hao was staring blankly at everything before him.....

Qu Wen Hao's gaze was lifeless, his originally dashing looks had seemingly aged more than ten years over the past few days. His shoulders were trembling slightly, like he was trying to hold back the emotions he held suppressed within.

Other people in the Thousand Beast City were not aware of the reason why their family members were able to return safely.

Chapter 1099: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (1)”

But for Xiong Ba, Qing Yu and Qu Wen Hao, it couldn't have been more clear. The return of their people, was all due to the credit of the youth they had all betrayed.

Endless guilt and shame coupled with self admonishment wrecked at their hearts, like an enormous rock that crushed upon them, making it hard for them to breathe.

Qu Wen Hao was in a daze, the past few days a fuzzy memory to him like he had been living in a dream. He walked staggeringly, searching anxiously among the women who had returned, yearning to see that one familiar figure that he had missed and had always been on his mind for so many years.

But as his gaze swept over the crowd of people again and again, he still did not see his wife.....

“Did anyone..... anyone see my wife.....” Terror and unease swam within Qu Wen Hao's heart, as he stood helplessly among the crowd swimming around him, his voice all choked up.

The women who just returned wiped the tears from their faces and they turned to look sorrowfully at Qu Wen Hao.

Their gazes made the sense of unease within Qu Wen Hao grew stronger and his highly nervous hands began to shake.

[No, it can't.....]

[His wife will be fine. Those people who have returned every month had all said she was still fine..... Nothing could have happened.....]

“Madam she.....” The rescued women bit on their lip and lowered their heads. They had all been captured by Qu Xin Rui at the same time and imprisoned together at the same place. What really

happened then, they all knew clearly.

“Where is she? Why did she not come back?” Qu Wen Hao was acting like he had lost his mind as he clutched at a woman’s shoulders, asking anxiously for information whether his wife was still safe and sound.

The woman could not bear to look at him and turned her head away, avoiding Qu Wen Hao’s eyes.

None of them wanted to tell Qu Wen Hao what really happened to Madam and they were all avoiding his eyes.

“What are all of you doing here! Who allowed you to come back!” Suddenly, a shrill voice rang out from behind the crowd!

That ear piercing voice tore through all the sounds of weeping and everyone turned their heads at the same time.

Qu Xin Rui had brought Shen Chi and his men and they were now standing at the back of the crowd!

Where she stood, everyone stepped back in fear and parted to open up a path before her.

Qu Xin Rui clenched her jaw as she stared at the chaos before her. She could not believe what her own eyes were seeing. All the sluts she had imprisoned in the dungeon had all been released to return here!

When she had received the news from the guard, Qu Xin Rui had not believed that it was true. But when she saw all of this before her eyes, she finally realised..... something had gone wrong!

These people had been imprisoned in a place out of the Thousand Beast City, why had they all suddenly appeared here? Qu Xin Rui did not see the guards she had stationed to take charge of watching these people among the crowd and a shadow of unease began to grow within her heart.

Qu Xin Rui’s appearance had forced all the people who had been

immersed in the joy of their sudden reunion to immediately wake up. All the women who had finally been able to reunite with their family after so long hid in terror behind their family members, their pale hands gripping tightly the hands of their family, not daring to let go for a single moment. Their faces were filled with fear towards Qu Xin Rui, staring at Qu Xin Rui as if they were looking at the devil. The family members standing at their sides were their very last hope to save them and they did not dare to let go of it a single instant.

“Damn it! Bring all these people back now! Just who was it that dared to do something like this? Who allowed all of you to come back here? All the rest of you leave immediately! Get the hell out of here obediently or I am sure all of you know what the consequences will be!” Qu Xin Rui screamed in rage.

Chapter 1100: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (2)”

With Qu Xin Rui roaring scream, the women were overtaken with fear and terror. They were shaking uncontrollably as they subconsciously pressed themselves against their family members.

The citizens at the city’s gate moved to shield the womenfolk behind them, an obvious sign that they were not going to hand their women over again.

Qu Xin Rui stared at the stance the citizens were taking and her face grew dark and ominous. She swung her eyes over to the haggard looking Qu Wen Hao and shouted at him coldly: “Qu Wen Hao! Aren’t you going to gather up the prisoners! ? Don’t you want to see your daughter and wife anymore! ?”

Qu Wen Hao’s mind was suddenly shaken as he looked up in realization. He walked to go in front of Qu Xin Rui looking highly panicked and flustered and asked: “Where is my wife..... Where is she..... Why do I not see her..... Everyone else came back, why isn’t she here.....”

Qu Xin Rui sneered coldly and said: “I would naturally take extra good care of the Thousand Beast City’s Madam and if you still want to see your wife, then get the guards to capture all the women!” With the bargaining she held in her hand, Qu Xin Rui wasn’t about to give it up. Before she gains control of the Fire Country through Jun Xie, the people of the Thousand Beast City must remain within her control.

Qu Wen Hao turned his head around looking dazed as he looked at the citizens of the Thousand Beast City. On those faces, he saw the grief and struggle within the people themselves. He saw the backbone that the people of the Thousand Beast City had lost slowly being recovered. Those people who had been deeply fearful of Qu Xin Rui no longer acted as cowardly as they did before. Their

eyes filled with steely determination as they pushed their womenfolk behind them, their chests puffed up, showing their defiance.

Qu Wen Hao's gaze swung from the faces of the people onto the terrified women behind them. Those women were also the citizens of the Thousand Beast City but they had been captured by Qu Xin Rui many years ago, to be imprisoned within a dungeon where they did not see the light of day. Having not been exposed to the sun for long periods, their skin had taken on an extraordinary pale sheen. Their eyes were wide with horror as they stared unblinkingly at Qu Wen Hao, their Grand Chieftain, as their eyes pleaded soundlessly.

Qu Wen Hao felt as if something had stuck in his throat as he looked at the countless pairs of eyes filled with despair, and he found that he could not make himself give the order.

"Qu Wen Hao! Do you really want your family broken apart! ?" Qu Xin Rui saw that Qu Wen Hao was still not moving after so long and she screamed out impatiently.

Qu Wen Hao's entire body was shaken awake once more as unbearable images flashed through his mind, surging with a ferocity that was like a needle, that was stabbed into his consciousness.

"Grand Chieftain..... She is lying..... She is lying! The Madam is long gone....." One of the women suddenly screamed out from among the crowd. The voice tore through the air and reached Qu Wen Hao's ears, which hit him so hard he staggered back several steps, as the blood completely drained out from his face!

"What nonsense are you spouting! Guards! Have that slut executed right now!" Qu Xin Rui's eyes suddenly flashed with nervousness, and she screamed out in exasperation. Shen Chi who was standing right behind her immediately stepped forward, wanting to silence the woman who had spoken up.

But Qu Wen Hao suddenly stood before Shen Chi, blocking his way forward. He lifted his head and looked at Qu Xin Rui, his eyes wide with rage.

“WHERE IS MY WIFE!”

Qu Xin Rui was startled, and she fought to suppress the frantic panic that threatened to rise in her heart as she said in mock displeasure: “Qu Wen Hao! Who do you think you are talking to! ?”

“WHERE IS MY WIFE!” Qu Wen Hao roared, his eyes red and bloodshot.

Qu Xin Rui cursed under her breath and said: “Your wife is still alive and I have her imprisoned separately. Do not listen to the nonsense that that slut is spouting!”

Chapter 1101: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (3)”

“I want to see her! Right now!” Qu Wen Hao was not going to back down, as he stared at Qu Xin Rui with rage in her eyes.

Qu Xin Rui narrowed up her eyes sinisterly but did not say anything.

“I WANT TO SEE HER!” Qu Wen Hao roared another time.

“The Madam has already died.....” The woman said again as she wept.

As if he was struck heavily, blood spurted out from Qu Wen Hao’s mouth!

From a time much earlier, when Qu Xin Rui had always been unwilling to let him see his wife, Qu Wen Hao had already made a similar guess then. Everyone else had been able to return for short periods but just his wife had been denied it. Qu Xin Rui always had an excuse to brush it off and he had had no other choice but to choose to believe.

From the mouths of those who returned, he had more or less been able to hear a little news about his wife and that was what comforted him the most.

With that middle aged woman having taken the lead, those other women who have previously brought news about the Madam back finally summoned up their courage and spoke the truth.

In the first few years after the Madam had been captured, she had suddenly fallen gravely ill in the dark and dank dungeon. And as Qu Xin Rui had refused to arrange for anyone to come treat her, but had instead thrown her into the filthiest of the cells, and left her there to die, without even bothering to send food to her in the final stages.

Deprived of food and water, and afflicted with a grave illness, the Madam could only live on whatever dirty water she found within the dungeon cell, unable to hold out for long.

When she died, she was already reduced to skin and bones from hunger and the torment from the illness had caused her corpse to no longer even look human. Qu Xin Rui finally disposed of her body in the wild, allowing the wild and ferocious beasts to tear and chew upon her corpse.....

Qu Wen Hao was stunned with shock as the women's weeping cries reached his ears, where they felt like sharp blades, cutting to shreds, the tiny sliver of hope he had held in his heart for so many years.

His wife had been his first love from childhood and they had been in love all that time, finally having a daughter, the fruit from their love. But that perfect dream had shattered from the moment Qu Xin Rui had come to the Thousand Beast City.....

He had yearned for countless days and night, living a humiliating life for many years, accepted compromise and made sacrifices, all for the hope that his family would be reunited once again.

But for so many years, all that he had heard, were just lies that Qu Xin Rui had weaved and ordered for him to be told.....

“HA HA HA! HA HA HA!” Qu Wen Hao suddenly threw his head back and laughed hysterically. That laughter was terrifying to all the people there who heard it. His wife had died with even having her body intact, and his daughter had been forced to undergo unimaginable calamity. What was most laughable through all of that, was that he had been that naive to believe that as long as he did as he was told by Qu Xin Rui, she would release them.....

The heart wrenching laughter echoed within the air above the Thousand Beast City. Blood tears dripped out of the corners of Qu Wen Hao's eyes, like they had spilled out from the very depth of his soul.....

“It turns out..... that I am the world’s..... biggest joke..... Ha ha..... Grand Chieftain..... HA HA HA!” Qu Wen Hao laughed, but that laughter sounded more pitiful than any sound of weeping they have heard.

For the sake of his wife, he had chosen to be a spineless puppet. For his daughter, he had abandoned his conscience, betrayed trust he had been given, and gave up on his morals to become vile and despicable.....

And at the end of all that, he had not been able to protect a single thing. His entire life, had been the biggest joke under the Heavens!

Qu Wen Hao lost his mind. He laughed uncontrollable, laughed till he choked on his own breath, his laughter sounding like a screech as it reached Qu Xin Rui’s ears.

Shen Chi went past Qu Wen Hao and walked towards the terrified women!

Chapter 1102: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (4)”

Under Qu Wen Hao heart wrenching and pitiful laughter, the citizens who have been repressed and bullied for too many years suddenly felt a surge of anger rush into their chests!

Regardless whether among those terrified women, included any of their family members, all the people stepped forward to stand before the women, layers upon layers of a human wall, quickly formed as they blocked the way to the womenfolk behind them, who have suffered endless torture all those years!

Shen Chi's face creased up slightly into a frown, as he stared at the big crowd citizens standing before him, blocking his path, and the smile on his lips faded slowly away, a malicious glint rising within his eyes.

“What are all of you doing?” Shen Chi asked, sneering coldly.

“We will not allow you to capture them back! They are citizens of the Thousand Beast City! We have the duty to protect them, and ensure that they do not suffer any harm!” A tall man summoned up his courage and shouted out in rage.

Shen Chi laughed coldly and sent a fist crashing into the chest of that man, purple coloured spirit power covering his fist. That one heavy strike, was driven right through the chest of the man!

A large bloody hole appeared on the man's body, and the breath suddenly went out of him, his tall frame suddenly falling to the ground in a pool of blood.

“Is there anyone else who wishes to die?” Shen Chi asked, his eyes narrowed up, as his Purple Spirit energy surrounded his entire body. He sharp gaze swept over the people surrounding him, the murder in those eyes highly obvious for all to see.

However.....

Every single person who had stood forward, no longer allowed themselves to be cowered by the power of the Purple Spirit.

They had endured it for so many tears, and what have they achieved? Long years of humiliation had made them unable to continue to remain silent. Qu Xin Rui viciousness had made them all see clearly, that even if they continued to be her mindless puppets, they would still not be able to protect their family.

Before such a cold blooded demon, those people chose to hide no longer!

Those citizens who have finally been reunited with their family members, were adamant that they would not push their wives and mothers back into the fire!

In those years, they had chosen to be silent, chosen to submit. But now, they were not going to persist in that cowardice!

“If you are really that great, then kill us all! Today! We will not allow you to bring a single person away from the Thousand Beast City!” Xiong Ba suddenly walked out from among the crowd. He stood at the front of everyone else, staring straight at Shen Chi.

He had once abandoned his ally, once been a spineless weakling. But today, he refused to continue living in humiliation!

Rather die standing upright, then live on your knees!

Qu Xin Rui’s face was contorted with rage. The rebellion of the entire Thousand Beast City had lit a fiery rage to burn within her heart.

“Very good! All of you want to go against me right? Then all of you will die! Everyone hear me clearly now! Today, I will bury the entire city into the ground. From this day onwards, I want the words, Thousand Beast City to disappear from the face of these lands!”

Exploding in fury, the Purple Spirit’s energy glow rose from Qu Xin Rui’s body. The other two men who were from the Soul Return

Palace behind her released their spirit energies as well. The powerful Purple Spirit caused the air surrounding the area to grow heavy, the unimaginable oppressive aura caused many of the people to find it difficult to even breathe, and pain wrecked at their bodies. But they gritted their teeth and clenched their jaws, unwilling to bend their backs once again!

Having lived so many years without any purpose, they have had enough!

With their last show of pride and dignity, they would rather die fighting, than submit!

The powerful and oppressive aura were like many pairs of hands that clutched at every single one of their throats. Beads of perspiration spilled out from their bodies as everyone within the Thousand Beast City found that they could not breathe!

“Before you annihilate the city, the scores between us, should be cleared up first.” All of a sudden! A chillingly cold and clear voice sounded from atop the wall of the city’s gate!

Chapter 1103: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (5)”

Qu Xin Rui raised her head and looked up!

Atop the wall of the Thousand Beast City’s gate, a tiny figure stood in magnificence, face against the wind,

gaze cold as ice, the jet black hair fluttering behind. It was such a petite sized figure, but it somehow drove a distinct fear into the hearts of people.

“Jun Xie!” Qu Xin Rui stared at Jun Xie standing on top of the city’s wall, slightly startled.

She had waited for Jun Xie to appear for many days and had not thought that Jun Xie would suddenly appear among this chaotic scene before her!

Xiong Ba was greatly surprised to see Jun Xie and he wanted to say something but felt that he did not deserve to be able to call out to the youth. He could only stand there with his fists tightly clenched, deeply ashamed.

Jun Wu Xie’s cold eyes swung over to Qu Xin Rui and did not look at anyone else.

“What a coincidence for you to come here now. I had thought that you didn’t want your Spirit Beast anymore.” Qu Xin Rui said with a laugh. Seeing that Jun Xie had appeared, she wasn’t fearful in the least, but her heart had instead filled with delight. Losing the Thousand Beast City didn’t matter anymore, as long as she still held this line that was linked to the Fire Country, she would be able to command a much stronger force!

“Rest assured, your Spirit Beast is still with me. I have taken very good care of it, and have not allowed it to suffer in any way.” Qu Xin Rui said with a smile. Her gaze then turned to look at the people of the Thousand Beast City and she said: “But today isn’t

really a good day for us to talk. Will little Young Master Jun be willing to wait for me to quickly deal with all these disobedient dogs first before we sit down and have a long chat? We will have all the time in the world then.”

“A pity, I do not wish to waste my breath on such a disgusting woman.” Jun Wu Xie said, laughing coldly.

The smile on Qu Xin Rui’s face immediately disappeared, as her eyes narrowed up in displeasure.

“Jun Xie, I have treated you with courtesy and it will be good for you to know your place. So what if you are the Emperor of the Fire Country? Don’t forget, you are now here in the Thousand Beast City! You do not have your millions of soldiers behind you! If you still do not know what is good for you, anger me any further and I will not show you any mercy. Or are you telling me.....”

Qu Xin Rui’s gaze fell upon the blanked faced Qu Wen Hao.

“You are going to stick your nose into affairs that are of no business of yours?”

Jun Wu Xie said: “Regardless of what I want to do, you are in not in a position to speak.”

Qu Xin Rui suddenly laughed out loud. “Jun Xie, you are being too naive. What has the Thousand Beast City done for you? Do not forget, your Spirit Beast, was personally delivered to me by Qu Wen Hao himself. If not for him, how would I be able to force a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast to stay by my side?”

Qu Xin Rui’s words drew loud gasps of surprise from the crowd. Not many among them have seen Jun Xie, but they have all previously heard that a youth who possessed a Guardian Grade Spirit Beast had appeared in the Spirit Beast Arena and had not thought that the youth was Jun Xie. But they were shocked that their Grand Chieftain would really steal the Spirit Beast from Jun Xie and deliver it into the hands of Qu Xin Rui!

There wasn't a single trace of anger in Jun Wu Xie's eyes, but she just continued to look at Qu Xin Rui with a calm and chilling gaze.

Qu Xin Rui saw that she wasn't getting any reaction from Jun Xie and she gritted her teeth discreetly as she said: "Don't tell me that you are trying to help the Thousand Beast City, forgetting the past injustice they made you suffer, all for the sake of Qu Ling Yue? Then that would be such a great pity. The pure and untainted little girl in your heart, is now just a old and broken shoe that has been used and abused. Do you know why Qu Wen Hao does everything I tell him to do so obediently? That he was even willing to use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to deliver your Spirit Beast into my hands?"

Qu Xin Rui's eyes narrowed up with a highly venomous glint.

"Because I made him personally witness, his own precious daughter, before his own very eyes, to be tainted by a whole group of men! Ha ha ha ha!"

Chapter 1104: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (6)”

“Ha ha! I’m afraid you do not even know this. When I captured that little lass, all that her little heart was thinking was about you! When she was being tainted, she was weeping and crying out your name at the same time! Ha ha, but what a pitiful thing, no one came to save her at all.” Qu Xin Rui’s face was twisted up and tinged with a little bit of madness, as she stared venomously at Jun Xie, feeling unjustly aggrieved.

“Do not blame me for being so hard hearted. Who asked you to reject my advances so callously but was being so friendly with that little slut. Whatever is denied to me, nobody else can dream of getting it.”

Qu Xin Rui seemed like she wanted everyone present to know about what Qu Ling Yue had been put through, as her voice spread to the outside of the Thousand Beast City’s gate.

Everyone who stood there, had all heard of what Qu Ling Yue had gone through, loud and clear!

They all stared wide eyed and incredulous, unable to believe the fact that their Young Miss had been treated in such a manner by Qu Xin Rui!

The chastity that women treasured the most, had just because of one tiny bit of jealousy from Qu Xin Rui, been mercilessly destroyed by her!

Qu Wen Hao had already lost his mind. He did not hear a single word of what Qu Xin Rui was saying, but only silently sat upon the ground, tears of blood flowing down his face, all light faded from his eyes.

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu gritted their teeth and hung their heads.

Previously, when Qu Wen Hao had wanted to use the Spirit

Taming Bone Flute to gain control over Lord Meh Meh, they had been all prepared to protect Lord Meh Meh at all costs, even if they had to run away with Lord Meh Meh, they would not regret it in the slightest.

But when Qu Wen Hao told them about what happened to Qu Ling Yue, after they recovered from the shock, they chose to give in.

They would not have chosen to give in even if Qu Xin Rui had used torture on Qu Ling Yue, but she had used the method that was most intolerable to women throughout the world, crushing a person's dignity and their spirit, bit by bit.

At that time, Qu Wen Hao had been grabbed by Shen Chi to go to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and forced to witness his most precious daughter being tainted by the group of men who were worse than beasts. He had struggled and begged, but was not a match for the power of the Purple Spirit. He couldn't even manage to make himself close his eyes to avoid seeing the heart wrenching scene.

Qu Xin Rui had ordered for men to pry his eyes open, forcing him to witness the entire process.....

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu really could not imagine the kind of trauma that Qu Wen Hao and Qu Ling Yue were made to undergo, and they had no other choice at that time but to succumb.

Hidden within the crowd, Qiao Chu's face showed shock. With the betrayal by the Thousand Beast City, he had lost the confidence he had with this city, and felt that Qu Wen Hao's actions had been unacceptable.....

But he had definitely not thought that Qu Xin Rui would employ such a cruel and disgusting method to force Qu Wen Hao to submit!

Qiao Chu subconsciously looked up at the silent Jun Wu Xie.....

Jun Wu Xie stared, her gaze fixed unwaveringly upon Qu Xin Rui, and her cold eyes seemingly froze in that instant.

She had tried to guess at the reason for Qu Wen Hao's betrayal, and had reasoned that Qu Xin Rui might have used Qu Ling Yue to force Qu Wen Hao to submit. But she had never once ever thought that Qu Xin Rui would actually commit such a maniacal and heinous deed!

And all of that..... had actually been linked to her!

Just because she had rejected Qu Xin Rui, and spoken a few words to Qu Ling Yue, Qu Xin Rui had actually done such a thing that angered both mortals and gods! !

Jun Wu Xie could feel a unidentifiable fire suddenly light up within her heart. She had always despised and abhorred those who bullied and humiliated women. Even against her own enemies, she had never cared to employ method that tainted the chastity of women.

Chapter 1105: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (7)”

But Qu Xin Rui had no qualms about abandoning all sense of scruples, and even to the extent of not being bothered in the least, that the same bloodline flowed within her body and Qu Ling Yue's!

Jun Wu Xie's face had seemingly turned so cold as if it had been covered with a layer of frost, so icily cold that the air around her suddenly became thin.

Qu Xin Rui was smiling gleefully, the cold expression on Jun Xie's face making her feel the pleasure of vengeance more strongly.

“Little Young Master Jun. You asked for all of this to happen. If you had just obediently cooperated with me, I would not have needed to stir up so much trouble. In the end, you are the one who implicated them all into this. But don't worry, I have still kept the little lass alive, although she has now become a wilted flower, but..... at least she still has a breath left in her. If you are willing to work together with me, I can jolly well return her and your Spirit Beast to you.” Qu Xin Rui said, feeling she was making a highly generous offer.

Jun Wu Xie's eyes narrowed.

Qu Xin Rui had put it across very nicely, but in actual fact, it did not matter whether Jun Wu Xie agreed to work with Qu Xin Rui, the Thousand Beast City would still end up annihilated. The various powers within the Lower Realm were just mere pawns the Twelve Palaces held in their hands and the only use they were good for was to locate the Dark Emperor's tomb. Once that was found, no matter who they were, they would be silenced by the Twelve Palaces.

“Do you really think that I am as dumb as you are?” Jun Wu Xie said, laughing coldly.

The smile on Qu Xin Rui's face immediately showed signs of cracking.

"I have absolutely no interest in becoming a dog of the Twelve Palaces." Jun Wu Xie sneered.

The two words, Twelve Palaces, had completely shattered Qu Xin Rui's composure and her eyes suddenly widened as she stared at Jun Wu Xie in shock.

"What are you saying? How did you know.....?" Qu Xin Rui could not believe that she was hearing the words 'Twelve Palaces' coming out from the mouth of a person of the Lower Realm!

It must be known, before she broke through to the Purple Spirit, she had been completely ignorant of the fact that under these Heavens, there existed a place she had never ever heard of before. And Jun Xie was still so young, how could he possibly know about the existence of the Twelve Palaces!

Jun Wu Xie stared coldly at Qu Xin Rui. "The stupid, have no right to question."

Previously, Jun Wu Xie had merely intended to let death be Qu Xin Rui's punishment. But now, she had changed her mind.

The expression on Qu Xin Rui's face was growing darker and darker. She had thought that Jun Xie's appearance was happening just like she had planned, because she had gained control over Lord Meh Meh and Jun Xie would be passive. But the way everything was happening here, was completely different from what she had expected.

Jun Xie had not only failed to show the slightest sign, he was even on the defensive, his mannerisms and demeanor was instead much more highly aggressive than before!

All of this had completely deviated away from any of Qu Xin Rui's plans!

In the Thousand Beast City, it had been a long time since Qu Xin

Rui had met anyone who dared defy her orders. It could be said that she had turned to become a tyrannical dictator over the years in the Thousand Beast City but Jun Xie's appearance had completely broken that state of affairs! It was the first time that Qu Xin Rui had wanted to win someone over and she had been given the cold shoulder. She had then tried all ways and means, in an attempt to force Jun Wu Xie to submit, but things had not gone her way.

“Jun Xie, are you going to refuse the offered wine and choose to drink it as punishment? Since you do know about the Twelve Palaces, then you must surely know if you are to go against the Twelve Palaces, you will definitely come to no good end. No matter you, or the Fire Country behind you, when placed before the Twelve Palaces, is seen to be miniscule, and highly insignificant. I don't think I have to remind you of that fact, do I?” No matter how dumb Qu Xin Rui could be, it was obvious that Jun Xie was not interested in the least to cooperate with her. Regardless whether she used the stick or the carrot, she had not been able to move Jun Xie in the slightest!

Chapter 1106: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (8)”

“Or should I say, that people from the Twelve Palaces have already approached you?” The thought suddenly came to Qu Xin Rui’s mind. It had been mentioned before when she was discussing it with Shen Chi before, but they had brushed off such a possibility at that time.

But now, no matter what kind of threats or benefits she used, she had not been able to shake Jun Xie’s will. And Jun Xie had shown that he knew of the existence of the Twelve Palaces, and that was not possible in the Lower Realm!

The Middle Realm very seldomly initiated contact with people of the Lower Realm and besides to the target leading power they had selected, the only other instance that they would appear was when someone in the Lower Realm broke through to the Purple Spirit. Jun Xie was merely about fourteen or fifteen years old and even if he was incredibly gifted, it was not possible that he was a Purple Spirit. So the only other possibility was before he came to the Thousand Beast City, people from the Twelve Palaces have already approached her!

Faced with Jun Xie’s aggressive defiance, Qu Xin Rui could only come to this conclusion.

“Do you think just by having another palace backing you up, you have nothing to worry about at all? You are just a pawn of the Twelve Palaces and even if I am to kill you, they will not bother to avenge you. What they seek is merely the same thing I am after, the might of the Fire Country behind you and it does not matter whether the Emperor of the Fire Country is you or someone else.” Qu Xin Rui said, her eyes narrowed, a glint of murder brewing within. If Jun Xie had indeed already come in contact with the other palaces, she would then really make her move now, to have

the youth eliminated.

Qu Xin Rui discreetly gave Shen Chi a hidden signal, which was caught by Shen Chi and the other two men from the Middle Realm.

Xiong Ba and his people outside the city's gates were completely clueless about what kind of place the Twelve Palaces was that Jun Xie and Qu Xin Rui were talking about. To them, the name of the place was completely foreign, but from what Qu XIn Rui had said, she both hinted and as good as clearly stated the incredible might of the Twelve Palaces.....

To be able to use the Emperor of the mightiest country across the lands as a pawn..... Just what kind of a place was the Twelve Palaces?

Jun Wu Xie merely looked on coldly at Qu Xin Rui and said: "You've finished what you wanted to say?"

Qu Xin Rui was taken aback with surprise. Jun Wu Xie's expression had not changed the slightest bit, just as if everything she had just said, had not affected Jun Xie at all.

"If you are done talking, then meet your death." Jun Wu Xie said chillingly.

Qu XIn Rui looked at Jun Xie in puzzlement and she suddenly found it so absurd that she started laughing.

"Ha ha! Jun Xie, you are just too conceited. How big do you think you are? What do you even amount to! ? If not for the Fire Country behind you, do you think I will even cast a glance in your direction? In my eyes, you are merely a bug I can squash to death easily! Since you do not know what's good for you, there is no use keeping you alive!"

Suddenly, Qu Xin Rui's entire body flared with purple coloured spirit energy! She morphed into a purple ray of light as she shot straight towards Jun Xie upon the city gate's wall!

Jun Xie's arrogance had incited her rage to burn, and since he

refused to be used, that she would just kill him!

At the same instance, Shen Chi and his men also charged straight at Jun Xie as well!

Four Purple Spirits striking at the same moment, all determined to annihilate Jun Xie on this very spot!

Everyone standing outside the city's gates suddenly grew nervous at the very moment they saw Qu Xin Rui and her people moved to strike. Although many of them did not know what kind of a background Jun Xie possessed, but from his conversation with Qu Xin Rui, they all realised that Jun Xie was of the same stance with all of them. When they saw four Purple Spirits, the very pinnacle of power, charging right at Jun Xie, everyone's hearts suddenly jumped!

Chapter 1107: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (9)”

Xiong Ba and the people in the crowd found themselves suddenly bathed in cold sweat. They wanted to stop the attack but with their measly powers, they were finding it difficult to even see Qu Xin Rui’s movements, and they could forget about wanting to stop her.

However, at the very instant that Qu Xin Rui was just about to reach before Jun Xie!

Several figures had suddenly appeared right in front of Jun Wu Xie! They received the full brunt of the attack from Qu Xin Rui and her men!

Purple coloured spirit power light flashed in midair, and five youths with purple spirit power emanating from their bodies appeared suddenly before everyone’s eyes!

Having five Purple Spirits appear at the same time made the entire Thousand Beast City fall dead silent. Everyone was staring in shock with their mouths wide agape as they looked at the five highly handsome looking youths.

They all looked to be only about seventeen to eighteen years of age but the spirit power glow surrounding their bodies shocked everyone right to their bones!

Qu Xin Rui and Shen Chi, together with his men, were forcefully pushed back. And it was only when they landed back on the ground that they noticed the people who had held them back were actually such young youths!

“How is this possible! ?” Qu Xin Rui’s eyes were wide with disbelief! She was actually seeing the all too familiar purple coloured spirit power light upon these youths! When they had clashed earlier, she had been able to feel the powers of the youths. Their spirit powers could not be considered to be that of a true

Purple Spirit, but they had employed the method that only existed in the Middle Realm to temporarily raise their spirit powers to breakthrough to the Purple Spirit level!

That unique method, Qu Xin Rui had only witnessed it used in the Middle Realm, and absolutely no one in the Lower Realm knew how to use that!

“All of you are from the Middle Realm!” Qu Xin Rui exclaimed as she stared at the handsome looking youths.

“Whether we are or not, you are not in a position to ask.” Qiao Chu replied as he swung his arms to loosen his muscles, a brow lifted up on his face as he stared at Qu Xin Rui. When Qu Xin Rui had revealed the real reason for Qu Wen Hao’s betrayal earlier, he had already longed to be able to tear this venomous woman into a thousand pieces!

Although he wasn’t really on familiar terms with Qu Ling Yue, but to put such a simple and innocent young girl through such a horrendous and terrifying ordeal, he really could not make himself stand back any longer!

Qu Xin Rui stared at them, her eyes filled with intense hatred. Never in her dreams would she have thought that in the Lower Realm, would she see this bunch of youths who possessed the ability to temporarily raise their spirit power levels!

Although Purple Spirits achieved from such a method, were not comparable to true Purple Spirits, but in a all out brawl, wanting to defeat them within a short period of time would still require quite a big amount of effort from them.

“These are the affairs of the Soul Return Palace and if all of you do not want to get tangled up with trouble, you had better not stick your nose into this!” Shen Chi said with his face creased up in a frown, as he stared at Qiao Chu and the others. He did not believe that this bunch of youths were people from the Lower Realm.

“And what if we insist on courting trouble?” Qiao Chu challenged, his eyes narrowed.

“Do you think we are unable to see through the abnormality in your powers? In an all out battle, how can five of you be a match for us! ?” Shen Chi said through narrowed eyes. Things have progressed to such a stage that exceeded all their expectations. They did not know where this bunch of youths had popped out from, and why were they on Jun Xie’s side.

Shen Chi did not know, but it couldn’t be any clearer to Xiong Ba and Qing Yu who were standing among the crowd!

Standing in front of Jun Xie, were the other five disciples the Zephyr Academy had sent to the Fire Country’s Capital City to participate in the Battle Spirit Tournament!

These bunch of youths had come to the Thousand Beast City together with Jun Xie, but had temporarily split ways just before they entered the city. Xiong Ba knew that this bunch of youths held extraordinary powers, but..... even if you beat him to death, he would never have once thought that the powers of the youths had already reached the Purple Spirit level!

Chapter 1108: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (10)”

Five Purple Spirits!

And they were still so young!

Even for Xiong Ba who had had the chance to interact with Qiao Chu and the others for quite a time before, he was suddenly stupefied by the spirit powers the youths had revealed!

At that moment, Xiong Ba’s heart was filled with regret. It was only then that he realized where Jun Xie’s composure had stemmed from. The youth relied not just on his intelligence alone, but also upon this unknown trump card he held within his hands!

When such immense powers are combined with high intelligence, the resulting effect, was something beyond any one of them could imagine.

Looking back now, Qu Wen Hao’s actions from before, was just absolutely laughable. If they had been able to have more trust in Jun Xie, if they had discussed the matter about Qu Xin Rui with Jun Xie right from the start, maybe Jun Xie would have already thought up a plan to rescue Qu Ling Yue, and the things that happened after would not have even occurred!

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu clearly realized their folly then, that had pushed the Thousand Beast City to fall deeper into the terrifying abyss. It was through their own hands, that they had forced their most reliable ally, to sever all ties with them!

Endless regret surged within the chests of Xiong Ba and Qing Yu. But at this point, however much regret they felt would not be able to change any of it.

Because, from the moment Jun Wu Xie had appeared there, her gaze had not once looked upon anyone else. In Jun Wu Xie’s eyes, the Thousand Beast City no longer had any position or standing!

They were merely a bunch of despicable betrayers!

“Haha, I’m sorry to say this. Although we would really like to slaughter you bunch of trash here personally, but this time, it seems someone is even more keen to take the lives of the dogs that all of you are.” Qiao Chu said spitefully, unusually calm in the midst of the chaos, as he looked at Shen Chi, arms crossed before his chest.

Shen Chi lifted up an eyebrow.

All of a sudden!

A tall and slender figure gracefully descended down from the air to come right before Jun Wu Xie.

It was a flawlessly handsome man, his perfectly formed features without a single trace of blemish, as if he was the greatest creation of the Heavens. His entrance graceful, his demeanour elegant and refined, attracting all eyes to turn their gazes upon his magnificent being.

“Little Xie, are you sure you really want me to make my move?” Jun Wu Yao asked gently as he fell gracefully to come beside Jun Wu Xie. As per the agreement he had made with Jun Wu Xie before this, he was supposed to only watch the show from high up in the air, but Jun Wu Xie had suddenly changed her mind.

“I want her alive.” Jun Wu Xie said, her eyes narrowing up dangerously. After Qu Xin Rui revealed the matter about Qu Ling Yue, Jun Wu Xie had immediately wiped all her prior plans clean.

She didn’t want to kill Qu Xin Rui so easily.

“As you wish.” A faint smile came onto Jun Wu Yao’s face, as he gracefully lifted Jun Wu Xie’s tiny hand, and planted a light kiss on her palm. Thereafter, he turned around, and his feet were taking steps like he was walking upon the ground, slowly walking down from the high wall. Every single step that he took, his form was composed, like there was a staircase that nobody could see below

his feet, that stretched down to the ground from the city's wall, his steps slow, suave and debonair.

Qu Xin Rui state in puzzlement at the outrageously good looking man. She had seen a countless number of beautiful men, but never one as handsome and beautiful as this. Before Jun Wu Yao, the entire bunch of favoured men back in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers were instantly reduced to become unbearably filthy mud who wouldn't even be qualified to kneel at the man's feet to compete for glory in any way.

The very instant Shen Chi saw Jun Wu Yao, every single pore on him felt an oppression completely unlike any he had ever felt before.

Jun Wu Yao was only walking down from the city wall and they were already feeling as if a mountainous boulder that weighed many tons was gradually pressing down upon the chests of Shen Chi and his companions!

Chapter 1109: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (11)”

The oppressive aura was so intense that it made them feel as if their chests were going to explode. This was something Shen Chi and his companions had never experienced before!

The man had not even made any moves but they were already so overwhelmed by that intense aura. The fancy that Qu Xin Rui had held in her heart quickly dissipated as cold sweat beaded on her forehead, her face immediately turning ashen!

With just his oppressive aura alone, and it was already able to overwhelm a Purple Spirit. Just how powerful could that man be! ?

They did not even dare to think.

For auras as oppressive as this, they had only experienced from several of the Lords of the Twelve Palaces before, but that situation had happened only after the Lord of the Palace had consciously pushed their auras into an intense flare.

But for this man before their eyes, he had not done a single thing, but just to walk slowly towards them in approach, and there were already feeling it so strongly!

“Who..... Who are you.....” Ever since Qu Xin Rui came back to the Thousand Beast City, this was the first time she felt fear, as she gazed in terror at the man who was a little too outrageously good looking.

A devilish smile was upon Jun Wu Yao’s face as he looked at the ashen faced Qu Xin Rui with a slighted lifted eyebrow.

“It was you.” He seemed to be talking to himself, yet sounding like he was questioning Qu Xin Rui at the same time.

“Wh..... Wha..... What.....” Qu Xin Rui was stunned, not knowing what Jun Wu Yao was talking about.

The smile at the edges of Jun Wu Yao's mouth grew deeper. He raised his right hand lazily, lightly moving the fourth finger on his right hand.

A ray of black shadowy light flashed, like an arrow shot from a bow, flying in an instant straight at Qu Xin Rui's mouth!

“ARRRGH!” A shrill and mournful scream escaped out from Qu Xin Rui's mouth. That black shadow had instantly struck her mouth and a large amount of blood was spurting out from it!

Within the greatly bloodied mouth Qu Xin Rui held open from agony, it could be seen that her tongue was rotting at an alarmingly quick rate!

The rotted chunks of flesh shot out of her mouth together with blood and goo, splattering all over the ground!

Qu Xin Rui only felt as if someone was burning her tongue with a red hot branding iron, the agony of the highly stinging burn wrecking upon her, making her unable to even remain standing as she fell to the ground helplessly, writhing as her entire body rolled around, clutching at her mouth in futility!

The blood and goo, mixed with broken pieces of flesh, continued to flow out through the gaps between her fingers, the red splatters, spilling all around her, a strong stinking bloody stench spreading endlessly from her spot!

All of a sudden, everyone's eyes grew wide with horror and incredulity, as they stared at Qu Xin Rui writhing in agony upon the dirty ground.

Almost everyone present could not react at all, not knowing what had exactly happened.....

Having terrorized and riding roughshod over the entire Thousand Beast City, Qu Xin Rui who called the shots for more than a decade there..... had actually fallen to the ground in less than a blink, writhing like a dying dog, her entire body twisting in

agony as she let out shrill and ear piercing wails!

That unbelievable scene, made everyone in the Thousand Beast City let out a loud gasp!

They knew better than anyone the kind of power Qu Xin Rui possessed. How Qu Xin Rui had washed the Thousand Beast City with blood that fateful year was still fresh in their minds. The mighty Purple Spirit was the nightmare that gripped at all their hearts, and they had never ever thought that anyone could topple that old hag so easily like this.....

But that most highly impossible and unimaginable scene, was at that very moment, playing out right before their eyes.

Jun Wu Yao had merely casually moved a finger, and he had immediately sent Qu Xin Rui into such boundless Hell!

In the entire Thousand Beast City, everything else was silent. Only the lone crying wails of Qu Xin Rui resonated reaching high to the clouds!

Chapter 1110: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (12)”

The nightmare that for many years had gripped the Thousand Beast City was slowly being dispersed bit by bit with that mournful wail!

Shen Chi watched on in horror as Qu Xin Rui fell within a pool of her own blood. Although Qu Xin Rui's powers was the weakest among the four of them, but she still wasn't weaker by all that much where if they were to engage in battle with her, it would still be impossible to take her down in a short period of time.

Not to mention by just moving a single finger.....

If it was said that Shen Chi was in fear of Jun Wu Yao before this, then what gripped at his heart at that moment could only be described as pure and utter terror!

The smile on Jun Wu Yao's face did not reduce in the slightest, but the murderous aura within his eyes was growing more and more intense, incited by the thick stench of blood that hung thickly in the air.

“Although I really want to crush all the bones in your body bit by bit, but since Little Xie wants you kept alive, I will allow you to live a little while longer.” The chilling words spewed out through Jun Wu Yao's sexy lips. Jun Wu Xie wanted her kept alive, so he had let her live. But..... that mouth that dared to defile Jun Wu Xie, he did not want it to exist for another minute more.

Anyway.....

[As long as she doesn't die, it's good enough. Isn't it?]

Jun Wu Yao turned his head slightly, and his gaze was still lusting for slaughter as it fell upon Shen Chi and the two other men behind him.

Shen Chi felt as if all the blood within his body had turned to ice, suddenly so cold that his teeth started chattering uncontrollably!

“Wh..... Who..... Who are you really.....” Shen Chi’s entire body had turned cold. He only knew that the man before his eyes, was scarier than anyone he had ever met in his life!

That absolute and tyrannical power that made one fall into abject despair, which even their Lord of the Palace might not even compare to in the slightest bit!

Shen Chi could not detect a single sliver of spirit power on Jun Wu Yao, but his overwhelming might was undoubtable to say the least!

[Just who could this man really be?]

[With such power, even in the Middle Realm, no one will be able to oppose him!]

Jun Wu Yao narrowed his eyes slightly and raised a hand. A black mist surged out from his palm, gathering together to become a huge black dragon, which then immediately leapt at Shen Chi and the other two men!

In the instant that Shen Chi saw the black dragon, his mind exploded with a realization!

He had once heard in a legend about such a person, who transcended beyond the realm of spirit powers, and possessed might like no one has ever seen, crushing countless scores of the most powerful pugilists!

That power that that man possessed, was not spirit powers, but a black substance, that he could command at will, that had brought endless nightmares to the people!

At the same moment that the black dragon was flying towards Shen Chi, Shen Chi’s eyes saw his own end. The last thing he saw was Jun Wu Yao, with his devilish smile upon his lips, and within that jet black pair of eyes that looked at them, a violet light

flashed!

In an instant, the enormous black dragon completely swallowed up Shen Chi and the other two men!

Bright red blood exploded within the black mist that engulfed them, as loud howls and agonised wails were torn out from the men together with their flesh and blood, sounding together with the crunching of bones, all coming out from within the black mist!

Within that black swirling mist, a faint shade of the blood could be seen, but everything was completely contained within the mist, like a furious tornado, crushing it all bit by bit within the powerful deadly spiral!

Qu Xin Rui was convulsing in agony, as she lay in a heap on the ground, watching on helplessly as she saw Shen Chi and her two other Purple Spirit companions being ground up by the black mist into nothing else but blood.....

Her eyes stared, her heart almost jumping out of her!

Chapter 1111: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (12)”

The last thing that Shen Chi thought of just before he died, now resurfaced within Qu Xin Rui’s mind. She was so terrified that she was being suffocated, as she watched the blood mist slowly being compressed bit by bit, till it turned into a red bead, no bigger than a rice grain, before suddenly exploding in a wide burst, scattering into a bright powdery rain over the land, to disappear into the earth.....

Death..... could actually be so beautiful.....

Three powerful Purple Spirits, finally reduced into blood coloured dust, to provide nourishment to the earth in the Thousand Beast City.

It all ended in an instant. Before the people of the Thousand Beast City realised what had happened, the battle had reached its end.

Except for the one fallen to the ground with blood spewing forth from her mouth, Qu Xin Rui who was still barely alive, Shen Chi and the other two men had disappeared for good from the face of the earth, and not a single trace of them could be found any longer.

From the crowd, all was quiet. Everyone had been driven into stupefied silence by everything they had witnessed.

Xiong Ba’s eyes were wide, as he looked at the man who had claimed himself to be Jun Xie’s “personal aide”.....

He knew..... that Jun Wu Yao was powerful..... but he had never thought..... that his power reached such an incredulous extent!

The Purple Spirit was the pinnacle of power in all their hearts, a power that they had fought to resist against with their lives but had been unable to change anything. But before this flawlessly good looking man, the Purple Spirit was just a bug he could crush

effortlessly..... He had just wriggled a finger, raised a hand, and he had wounded a Purple Spirit enough to incapacitate her, and completely obliterated three other Purple Spirits!

How insanely powerful was that! ?

Everyone did not even dare to imagine!

If not for the still present stench of blood hanging in the air, if not for the sight of Qu Xin Rui still convulsing upon the ground, they might really have thought that they were all still in a dream!

Jun Wu Yao turned himself around, and walked towards Jun Wu Xie. And at the very instant he turned, Ye Sha and Ye Mei suddenly appeared behind Qu Xin Rui, carelessly dragging the fallen Qu Xin Rui up from the pool of blood she had spewed out from herself.

The Qu Xin Rui at that moment, no longer displayed any trace of the earlier arrogance, looking completely unlike the one person who had held the entire Thousand Beast City in oppression for more than a decade.

The clothes on her were soaked with blood and the tongue in her mouth had already rotted to its root, the rot still spreading incessantly, from inside over her entire mouth. Her lips had completely rotted off and her gums a gory rotting mess. As Ye Sha and Ye Mei dragged her along, blood stained teeth fell off one by one from her oral cavity, (Note from Cloud: don't think I can still call it a mouth, hence the clumsy awkward wording used.) in a clinking clatter onto the ground. On her face where her mouth was supposed to be, no more flesh could be seen, and only the white of her bone stained with blood was visible to the entire crowd of people there.....

Qu Xin Rui's mouth, looked as terrifying as if someone had forcibly torn the flesh out from her face.

The excruciating and agonizing pain was driving Qu Xin Rui to almost lose her consciousness, but her attention was not on the

pain wracking at her. Her eyes were filled with terror as she stared at the back view of Jun Wu Yao, that graceful and elegant figure, but had been the one who drove her into utter despair, killing all her hope completely.

[The person in the legend!]

[Was actually still alive!]

“Ugh! Ugh! Ugh! ! !” She tried to say something, but her tongue that had rotted off rendered her incapable of any speech and the sounds squeezed out from her throat was just gibberish.

However.....

There was no one there who wanted to hear what she had to say.

Jun Wu Yao walked leisurely to come stand beside Jun Wu Xie, the smile still on his face.

“As you wished for, alive.” Jun Wu Yao presented, raising his hand slightly, gesturing towards the appalling spectacle that Qu Xin Rui was, his attractive eyes twinkling at Jun Wu Xie.

Chapter 1112: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (14)”

Qu Xin Rui was dragged to come before Jun Wu Xie as she stared wide eyed, her mouth that could no longer be shut still having pieces of flesh mixed with blood falling from it. The thick stench of blood swirled heavily around her as blood continued to soak up into her clothes, and mud caking up all over her. Her carefully groomed hair was a big mess her eyes with their once coquettish gaze had been replaced by terror and lunacy.

If it was said that Qu Xin Rui was thought to be an aloof and alluring female devil before, she was now looking no different from a dirty beggar who lay in a heap on the ground, or even more wretched looking than them.

Jun Wu Xie’s chilly gaze swept over the figure of Qu Xin Rui, cold as steel blades, razor sharp without the slightest bit of sympathy.

“Do you know why I wanted you to live?” Jun Wu Xie’s cold voice slowly rang out.

Qu Xin Rui looked at Jun Xie in terror. She had thought that Jun Xie was just the newly ascended little Emperor of the Fire Country but when she understood the identity Jun Wu Yao truly held, she realised that she had erred..... truly and completely erred!

Jun Xie was not someone she could afford to offend in the slightest!

But now, no amount of regret mattered in the least. Her tongue had rotted off, her lips and teeth had been ground away, thick blood filling up her oral cavity. She wanted to plead, wanted to repent, but there was nothing she could do, but only to hang like a dead dog, as she was dragged by Ye Sha and Ye Mei to go before Jun Xie.

“Sometimes, by being alive, a person will suffer a fate worse than

death.” Jun Wu Xie said, through narrowed eyes. She had initially not intended to inflict torture upon Qu Xin Rui but Qu Xin Rui had repeatedly poked at her inverse scale.

She would not allow Qu Xin Rui to die such an easy death!

“But now, this has saved me a lot of trouble. I don’t even need to get anyone to pry open that mouth of yours.” Jun Wu Xie said as the corners of her mouth curled up into a chilling smile. She took out an elixir from her Cosmos Sack hanging from her hip and when Jun Wu Yao saw the pill, his eyes flashed a brief moment.

That elixir was not unfamiliar to him. Back in the Qi Kingdom, Jun Wu Xie had used that same pill on Mo Xuan Fei and Bai Yun Xian!

Constantly rotting, constantly putting one in despair..... Within that helpless despair, it was an endless cycle of rinse and repeat, a fate impossible to escape from.

Jun Wu Xie took that elixir, the one that had caused the prince Mo Xuan Fei to turn into a revolting pile of rotting flesh, and threw it into Qu Xin Rui’s mouth. Qu Xin Rui had thought to spit it out but Ye Sha had lifted up that chin that was dripping with blood to force the elixir down her throat.

“It has been quite long since I saw you put this elixir to use.” Jun Wu Yao said with a smile. The effects of that elixir, he had witnessed it himself before. Even he could not help but be impressed by the tyrannical effects the elixir had!

Causing one’s flesh to gradually rot, till it reaches the bone, and just as death came near, the flesh grows back. And without Jun Wu Xie’s antidote, that heart splitting and unimaginable agony would repeat in an unending cycle.

You do not die, and you can’t live.....

The one true torment under the Heavens was not death. But to be forced to continue living in despair and pain, without a single

sliver of hope in one's heart, with no chance of redemption.....

Jun Wu Xie used the simplest and most brutal method, to punish Qu Xin Rui. After she saw Qu Xin Rui swallow down the elixir, Jun Wu Xie suddenly looked up, and turned to look at the stupefied Xiong Ba within the crowd.

“I will now hand her over to you. Lock her up properly, and she will live forever. Do not allow her to die.”

Chapter 1113: “Face Slap – Eleventh Form (15)”

Xiong Ba’s heart jumped. He had thought Jun Xie would never speak another word to him throughout his entire life.

Jun Xie’s words puzzled Xiong Ba and shocked him at the same time. He had witnessed for himself Jun Wu Yao’s overwhelming power that had taken down four Purple Spirits in an instant and he was very much aware that Jun Wu Yao’s true power went far beyond the tiny bit they had just seen.

At that moment, Xiong Ba’s heart was gripped in fear, as he suddenly realised just how incredibly fortunate he had been.

Fortunately.....

Fortunately Qu Xin Rui had gone on to antagonize Jun Xie.

Fortunately they had the same people as enemies with Jun Xie, otherwise, the people who would have fallen into the same fate as Qu Xin Rui might very possibly have been all of them instead.

Deeply moved and filled with regret, Xiong Ba strode with wide steps to come to the bottom of the city’s wall. Before everyone’s eyes, he fell to his knees with a loud thud right before Jun Xie.

“The benevolence and mercy that Young Master Jun has shown to the Thousand Beast City would not be forgotten by all our people. The Thousand Beast City has committed deeply shameful deeds against Young Master Jun but we have been fortunate that Young Master Jun does not hold the past deed against us and saved our people from the depths of turmoil. I beg that Young Master Jun will accept a deep bow from my humble self!” Xiong Ba immediately kowtowed before Jun Xie, his quick and deeply resolute action immediately drawing out blood to flow down out from his forehead, but he didn’t have the slightest intention to stop.

They owed Jun Xie way too much, but have been repeatedly saved by this little youth. Jun Xie's manner of returning a grudge with benevolence made him feel as if countless rattan canes, were whipping them upon their hearts, their conscience being tormented under the agony.

Jun Wu Xie's cold gaze swung onto Xiong Ba kneeling upon the ground. Crowded around Xiong Ba, the citizens of the Thousand Beast City finally recovered their senses, suddenly snapping back awake. Qu Xin Rui had been taken down and incapacitated and her subordinates had been completely obliterated. They were finally freed from the more than a decade old nightmare that they had been plagued with!

In an instant, everyone before the Thousand Beast City's gates were all kneeling down in lines before the wall!

"Thank you Young Master Jun for saving our lives!"

"Thank you Young Master Jun for helping us get out of our predicament!"

"Thank you....."

"....."

The grateful voices rang out one after another, filling the skies above the Thousand Beast City. The people had suffered under the torment brought to them under the tyranny of Qu Xin Rui and they were finally freed. They no longer had to fear Qu Xin Rui's cruel viciousness and they no longer had to be parted from their spouses! And they would no longer be forced to go to the Heaven's End Cliff that meant certain doom for all of them!

They could finally live properly like a human under the sun!

Everyone throughout the Thousand Beast City knew very clearly. If not for Jun Xie's timely appearance in the nick of time, even if all of them were fully determined to fight to the death with them, with their paltry powers, it would not be enough to bring down Qu

Xin Rui. What they would finally only be able to achieve in the end, would only be to gain back their lost dignity, at the cost of death and blood as sacrifice!

In the end.....

The Thousand Beast City would have been annihilated by Qu Xin Rui in merciless slaughter.

It was Jun Xie who had saved them, who gave them new hope and a chance to live!

The many voices raised in weeping gratitude, in between intermittent and broken sobbing wails, showed all the accumulated pain and pent up bitterness within their hearts.

With thousands kneeling in obeisance before her, there was not the slightest tinge of glee or expression of glory on her face. She merely frowned slightly, and looked at Jun Wu Yao beside her.

“Bring me to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.”

Jun Wu Yao’s eyes flashed fleetingly, but he did not say anything about it, and only hooked his arm around Jun Wu Xie and carried her up before tapping his foot lightly on the ground, to fly off from the city’s wall!

Xiong Ba looked up, looking at the direction Jun Xie and Jun Wu Yao had left into, and his heart suddenly jolted in shock.

That was, exactly the direction that the Heavenly Cloud Chambers was in!

Jun Xie’s Spirit Beast had been imprisoned there by Qu XIn Rui and locked up together in the basement of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.....

Chapter 1114: “I Came To Bring You Home (1)”

Within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, the many favoured men were putting on pretences of affectionate as they awaited their “Mistress” return, when unexpectedly, the people they saw crashing through the doors of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers were Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao.

“What are you people doing here? The Great Aunt is not here today. If there is something you want to see her about, you can return another day.” An alluring looking favoured man said arrogantly as he turned to look at Jun Xie. At the moment his gaze fell upon Jun Wu Yao, his eyes flashed with a momentary shock but it quickly disappeared.

However, his voice had just dropped when his head was separated from his body and blood gushed out immediately, splattering all over the other favoured men around him.

In an instant.

Howls reverberated within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers. When had these bunch of soft favoured men living in luxury been exposed to such a terrifying scene before?

They had enjoyed Qu Xin Rui’s backing all these time and even before the Thousand Beast City’s Grand Chieftain, they had been smug and highly arrogant. Suddenly seeing themselves being so nonchalantly slaughtered, they were immediately scared out of their wits.

The favoured men who had been so proud and arrogant just a moment before suddenly turned into birds startled by the twang of a bow (Chinese idiom translation), curling up their bodies tightly as they scrambled to hide in a corner, trembling visibly.

Jun Wu Xie was not about to waste her breath of these men

without dignity. She went straight up to the top floor of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and there, she saw the familiar sight of Lord Meh Meh.

Lord Meh Meh was lying upon the snow white fox fur, sleeping peacefully, the Spirit Taming Bone Flute placed just beside it. It did not care about anything else surrounding it and the only thing that could make it react was only the Spirit Taming Bone Flute.

Many a time, Qu Xin Rui had wanted Qu Wen Hao to use the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to control Lord Meh Meh, but Qu Wen Hao had flatly denied her and totally refused to give in to her for this matter, completely giving up all his rights on the Spirit Taming Bone Flute. But besides him, Lord Meh Meh wouldn't heed anyone else's instructions and without any orders given to it, Lord Meh Meh had only instinctively stuck itself close to the Spirit Taming Bone Flute.

In a state of grogginess, Lord Meh Meh sensed that someone was approaching. It subconsciously opened its eyes and saw the tiny petite figure that had appeared before it.

It tilted its head slightly, and looked calmly at the youth approaching it, but did not do anything else.

"I came to bring you home." Jun Wu Xie bent her body over, stretching a hand out towards Lord Meh Meh.

Lord Meh Meh was filled with confusion as it looked at Jun Wu Xie. This person's aura made it feel highly comforted, as its consciousness that was suppressed by the Spirit Taming Bone Flute continued to be assaulted. There seemed to be a tiny voice within its heart that was telling it that the person before its eyes posed no danger to it, and that it should accept her embrace.

"Meh?" The person before its eyes was strangely familiar but no matter how hard it tried to think, it could not remember who she was. But deep within its sea of memories, there was a fuzzy figure, who was replicated by Jun Wu Xie's figure before its eyes.

“Its consciousness is being suppressed and it cannot recognise you.” Jun Wu Yao said gently to Jun Wu Xie, as he observed Lord Meh Meh.

Jun Wu Xie’s gaze fell upon the Spirit Taming Bone Flute at the side and she picked it up. Lord Meh Meh immediately stood up, its eyes highly mystified, but did not show the slightest intent to attack.

The voice deep within its heart was continuously telling it that it must not do anything to harm Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie slipped the Spirit Taming Bone Flute behind her back and reached out to carry Lord Meh Meh within her arms. Initially, Lord Meh Meh was rather squirmish as it twisted its body around, but as the all too familiar scent wafted into its nostrils, it slowly calmed the agitation within its heart. It finally wiggled its tail and found itself a comfortable position before snuggling into the embrace.

Chapter 1115: “I Came To Bring You Home (2)”

Jun Wu Yao’s eyes narrowed slightly.

“Looks like it has not forgotten you completely. Maybe, within its subconsciousness, it still holds an impression of you. You have not kept it with you in vain.” Seeing that even when its consciousness was being controlled, it was still being so obedient, Jun Wu Yao was feeling rather satisfied.

Jun Wu Xie’s head was lowered, as she gently stroked Lord Meh Meh. After a while, Lord Meh Meh actually fell asleep within her arms and a tinge of gentleness flashed within Jun Wu Xie’s eyes that even she herself had not been aware of.

That gentleness in her gaze, slowly melted the icy chill away from her eyes.

“Reporting to the Young Miss! We have discovered Qu Ling Yue.” Ye Sha suddenly appeared and said. Qu Xin Rui had been handed to Ye Mei to guard alone, and he had followed behind Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao to come investigate the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

Jun Wu Xie’s body suddenly stiffened slightly.

“Where?” She asked in a low voice.

“Within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers’ underground dungeon.”

“Bring me there.” Jun Wu Xie said, her eyes narrowing up.

Inside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers’ underground dungeon, the several guards that guarded the place had been disposed off by Ye Sha and blood splattered all over the floor. Under the dim flickering candlelight, it was dark inside the pried open iron door. Jun Wu Xie stood outside the cell, staring into the darkness inside, and no one knew what was going through her mind at that moment.

“Qu Ling Yue is right in there. Her condition..... is rather bad.” Ye Sha said hesitantly.

Qu Ling Yue’s condition, could not in fact be merely described with a singular word like bad. If it had been anyone else, Ye Sha might not have been so careful with his words. But Qu Ling Yue’s predicament was somehow linked to Jun Wu Xie and he really did not dare to be too forthright with his words on the actual situation.

Jun Wu Xie slowly opened her stride to walk towards the dark and dank cell, where the inside of the cell was permeated with the thick stench of blood.

In the moment just as Jun Wu Xie was about to step inside the cell, a hand reached out to hold her back pulling on her arm.

Jun Wu Xie turned her head back calmly, seeing that Jun Wu Yao was staring at her with a strange look in his eyes.

“You can choose not to see her.” Jun Wu Yao said, staring straight at Jun Wu Xie. Although she was trying very hard to suppress the emotions within her heart, but he could somehow feel that Qu Ling Yue’s predicament had left a wound so deep it went right to the bone right across her heart.

“It had been because of me.” Jun Wu Xie said through gritted teeth. If not for Qu Xin Rui’s earlier revelation, how would she have known that Qu Ling Yue had developed feeling for the youth she had crossdressed to become? And she wouldn’t have possibly known, that the reason Qu Ling Yue had to suffer all of this, was just because the youth she portrayed herself as, had been a little more friendly to Qu Ling Yue that had incited the jealousy of Qu Xin Rui.

The smile at the corners of Jun Wu Yao’s lips faded a little and his deep and penetrating eyes stared into Jun Wu Xie’s clear ones.

“Even if it wasn’t for you, as the daughter of the Grand Chieftain

of the Thousand Beast City, the day will come where she will still end up being used to threaten Qu Wen Hao, or else, why had she not been captured together with the others? She had only wanted to leave Qu Wen Hao with a sliver of hope and over the years, Qu Wen Hao's care and concern for his only child had only grown and intensified, inadvertently giving Qu Xin Rui a stronger hold over him."

Whatever that had happened to the Thousand Beast City, Jun Wu Yao was not in the least bit interested. If not for the fact that Jun Wu Xie was here, he wouldn't have appeared here at all. But he had noticed that Jun Wu Xie had developed a certain degree of guilt towards Qu Ling Yue for everything that had happened to the girl.

To a usually cold and indifferent Jun Wu Xie, this was a situation very rarely seen, and Jun Wu Yao did not wish for Jun Wu Xie to be affected by anyone.

Jun Wu Xie's eyes lowered slightly, and she did not refute Jun Wu Yao's words, but merely said softly: "I need to go in and see her."

Chapter 1116: “I Came To Bring You Home (3)”

After saying that, Jun Wu Xie lifted her foot to step inside the dungeon cell!

In the dim and dark cell, a tiny figure huddled wretchedly in a corner. Borrowing from the dim candlelight, Jun Wu Xie got a clear view of the state the figure was in. The figure's fair and smooth skin was exposed and completely uncovered, long chains locked around her four limbs, their clear clinking sounds audible in tandem to her uncontrollable trembling.

Upon that thin slender body, green and purple bruises were visible all over, and her head of beautiful hair that was once the envy of many girls was now matted in knots like dry grass, turning into the only thing that could cover her body.....

Qu Ling Yue, the Young Miss of the Thousand Beast City, a young girl that should have grown up cherished within the palms of the masses, had now turned to be put in such a pitiable state.

Around her, several men in different states of undress had fallen in pools of blood, obviously having been killed by Ye Sha when he had charged in here earlier.

The fact that these men had been here, was telling Jun Wu Xie one thing in no uncertain terms, that till the moment Ye Sha had charged in here, Qu Ling Yue had still be humiliated and helplessly further tainted by these men worse than beasts!

At that moment, Jun Wu Xie felt her stomach start to turn. She could not hold herself back and retched but nothing came out, where she almost dropped Lord Meh Meh onto the ground!

“Don't look!” Jun Wu Yao suddenly pulled Jun Wu Xie into his arms.

The temperature within Jun Wu Xie's body was dropping

alarmingly fast, her hands so chillingly cold like they had just been pulled out from ice, and were shaking faintly.

To Jun Wu Xie who was an extreme clean freak, the trauma that struck at her from something like this was more severe than anything else she could imagine!

That day, Qu Xin Rui had merely kissed her once on her face and she had already wished that she could tear her face off, while Qu Ling Yue's situation had been that much more horrifying!

Jun Wu Xie was held tightly within Jun Wu Yao's embrace, her eyes staring widely, the emotions brewing within those eyes unfathomable.

Maybe Jun Wu Yao's actions had startled Qu Ling Yue huddled in the corner and she suddenly let out growl like a wild animal. She had been quiet and unmoving but she was suddenly struggling wildly. She pulled at the chains restraining her and unintelligible wails escaped from her mouth.

Jun Wu Xie suddenly pushed Jun Wu Yao away, and she drew in several deep breaths, fighting to quell the nausea deep within her stomach. She pushed Lord Meh Meh into Jun Wu Yao's arms and turned to take wide strides to come next to Qu Ling Yue!

At that moment, Qu Ling Yue was like she had completely lost her mind, as she struggled violently, wanting to avoid everything. The blood from the dead men around her stained her fair skinned feet blood red. She did not seem to care that all four of her limbs were bound by thick chains, only using every single ounce of her strength to try to break free from everything at this place!

Jun Wu Xie stood before Qu Ling Yue, looking at the now completely different person she had known, and her heart winced up in pain.

"No..... No....." Qu Ling Yue wailing cries resounded throughout the entire dungeon, trying her hardest to hide herself in the

corner, her terror filled eyes overflowing with tears.

Her hands and feet had obvious wounds showing on them, the skin under the chains broken and her flesh opened up where the whites of her bones could even be seen in some spots.....

Struggling so violently, and with such severe injuries on her, she did not seem to care. Only the Heavens knew what kind of unspeakable torment she had suffered over that period of time.

“Don’t be afraid.” Jun Wu Xie tried her best to make her voice sound gentle, as she approached the terrified Qu Ling Yue a little bit by bit.

Chapter 1117: “I Came To Bring You Home (4)”

Qu Ling Yue however was acting like a startled little beast as she curled up into a ball in terror.

Jun Wu Xie suddenly felt as if her throat had turned dry. She did not know where the highly stifling feeling in her chest had come from but she knew that seeing Qu Ling Yue reduced to such a miserable and wretched state stung her eyes greatly.

As she saw Qu Ling Yue hugging both her arms tightly against herself, seated upon the cold hard floor and her head lifted warily as she looked at her, Jun Wu Xie was suddenly finding it harder and harder to breathe. Jun Wu Xie took off her outer robe and ignoring Qu Ling Yue's struggles, she forcibly draped it around Qu Ling Yue's body, covering her up entirely, and hugged Qu Ling Yue's shaking figure tightly.

“I am Jun Xie. I will not hurt you. Do not be afraid.” Jun Wu Xie crooned in a soft voice, patiently whispering it repeatedly into Qu Ling Yue's ear to try to comfort her.

Qu Ling Yue's struggles gradually calmed down, but the heavily ravaged body was still trembling uncontrollably.

“Jun..... Jun..... Xie.....” Qu Ling Yue tried to repeat those two words with much difficulty.

“Mm.” Jun Wu Xie affirmed gently.

“Jun Xie..... Jun Xie.....” The terror within Qu Ling Yue's eyes gradually faded away, and her eyes slowly turned to look highly aggrieved, where she had just barely calmed down not for too long, she began to struggle violently once again!

“Save me! Jun Xie..... Save me..... Please save me.....” She seemed to be completely oblivious that the person right before her eyes was Jun Xie and continued to struggle in an attempt to escape from

there. The chains fastened upon her clinked loudly from her incessant pulling and the wounds were tearing up once more. Blood flowed over the black iron chains and fell to the floor, mixing together with the blood that had not yet congealed!

Jun Wu Xie's brows immediately creased together. If Qu Ling Yue continued to struggle like this, her hands and legs might very soon be maimed!

Jun Wu Xie made a decision quickly on the spot and gathered her spirit powers into her hands, decisively ripping the chains restraining Qu Ling Yue's limbs apart.

Suddenly freed from her restraints, Qu Ling Yue suddenly fell forward. Without the support from the chains holding her up, she fell onto the ground in a wretched heap, but she did not let out a single yelp of pain and just used her hands which were fully covered with blood to drag herself across the stone floor, towards the exit of the dungeon.

That was when Jun Wu Xie saw that the thumb on Qu Ling Yue's right hand had been neatly cut off and the wound had only been carelessly wrapped with bandages and the bandage had already turned black from dirt and dried blood.....

"Save me..... Save me please....." Qu Ling Yue's desperate plea sounded like it had been squeezed forth from deep within her chest and that was the only thought within her confused and traumatised consciousness. She did not care about the pain upon her body but only thought to escape from this cage, to get away from this living hell.....

"Ye Sha." Jun Wu Xie's voice sounded a little raspy.

Ye Sha immediately appeared within the cell.

"Take her away to get some rest, and don't let her continue to resist." Jun Wu Xie said, drawing a deep breath. Qu Ling Yue's awareness was in complete chaos, the torment in the recent period

had completely crushed the pure and innocent girl's spirit, making her lose her ability to discern what was going on, left with the last vestige of consciousness just before insanity.

If Qu Ling Yue was left to carry on like this, even if Jun Wu Xie were to personally treat her, it would be still be very difficult for Qu Ling Yue to make a full recovery.

Ye Sha nodded and immediately went forward. His approach made Qu Ling Yue cry even louder as she fought furiously to run away from the man's touch, her mouth repeatedly calling out Jun Xie's name.

Chapter 1118: “I Came To Bring You Home (5)”

Maybe Qu Ling Yue at this point when her mind was on the verge of collapse, she was still thinking..... that Jun Xie would come save her.

Jun Wu Xie’s chest felt like a huge rock had been placed upon it, making it hard for her to breathe.

Ye Sha did not dare to handle Qu Ling Yue too roughly but could not allow her to continue to hurt herself. Hence, he had no choice but to knock her unconscious and carried her up. After nodding briefly to Jun Wu Xie, he carried Qu Ling Yue outside.

Within the cell, silence fell. The only sound Jun Wu Xie could hear, was her own breathing.

She had never been a good person herself, and she had dealt with Qu Xin Rui because Qu Xin Rui had been her enemy, not because she sympathised with the Thousand Beast City’s predicament.

But when she saw Qu Ling Yue in such a state, her emotions had gone a little out of control.

The evil and ugly side of the world, she had seen quite a lot, but there was just one thing, no matter what, she had never been able to tolerate!

That was when such acts of humiliation, were done onto women.

Past and present life, that had not changed in the slightest.

“She will be happier dead than continuing to live.” Jun Wu Yao said, his eyes looking at Jun Wu Xie’s countenance.

Qu Ling Yue’s situation had been highly obvious. Her conscious mind had already fallen apart and even if Jun Wu Xie had the ability to cure her, with all that she had gone through, it would only make her continue to live in agony. Those inerasable

memories, would be with her her entire life, tormenting her endlessly.

Jun Wu Xie's lips stiffened and was silent a moment before she asked:

“Why?”

A strange glint flashed in Jun Wu Yao's eyes.

Jun Wu Xie suddenly raised her head.

“When women are put through such unspeakable torment, why must they only choose death? All of this is not her fault and she is merely a victim. Why is it that a victim is instead made to be the one that cannot continue to live? I will not let her die. She has already gone through all this and she has the right to continue to live. There is just no logic in the entire world that wants a girl who has been unfairly treated to seek death to relieve herself from agony and torment.”

Jun Wu Xie still clearly remembered. Before she had joined the organization, while she had still been in that tiny little pet shop, she had at that time, on one morning, witnessed a similar incident. It was a colleague of hers from the pet shop, who had gone home all alone in the middle of the night and was set on by a group of thugs. In the end, that girl had chosen to kill herself with sleeping pills at home.

Jun Wu Xie could not make herself understand it. Why was it when these people were obviously the hapless victims, but they had to suffer treatment harsher than what the culprit was put through. Women must be stronger on their own and no one should be able to decide their fates for them!

“As long as a person still lives, then there is still hope, and there is still a future. Once they are dead, everything is lost.” Jun Wu Xie said looking at Jun Wu Yao.

Jun Wu Yao suddenly smiled. He looked at Jun Wu Xie's bright

and sparkling eyes and his smile became brighter.

“This is what you have believed all this time? So even when you were so severely injured at that time you had still fought so hard to live.” Jun Wu Xie’s words made Jun Wu Yao think back to the time when they had met for the first time. The severity of the injuries that Jun Wu Xie had sustained at that time had reduced her to become not much different from a dead person but she still had not been willing to give up on the slightest opportunity that she would live, and had even released him, a dangerous person with an unknown identity.

“As long as one still holds the will to live, there is nothing that they will be unable to get through. I believe..... Qu Ling Yue will get through this.” Jun Wu Xie said with her eyes narrowed, with unwavering certainty.

“Little Xie, do you know, under these Heavens, to a girl, chastity is sometimes viewed as being more important than life itself?” Jun Wu Yao asked, with an eyebrow raised. Although he did not care in the slightest about this saying, but it couldn’t be denied, that was a belief deeply rooted in the minds of many people.

Chapter 1119: “I Came To Bring You Home (6)”

“You feel the same way?” Jun Wu Xie asked suddenly.

Jun Wu Yao was surprised a moment and he shook his head thereafter.

“That is just an excuse given by the weak. If their will were strong, what difference could one’s physical shell went through change? Who would dare despise you? If it is because of people around them, then all the more they shouldn’t pay any mind to it. A person’s life, should be lived for themselves. If a man would really slight a another person because of such a thing, then that means the man has never truly held his partner within his heart. If he truly loved her, why would he pay any mind to such? Afterall, what the man loved, should be the spirit and soul, on not just the outer shell.”

Jun Wu Yao’s words, was right up Jun Wu Xie’s alley. She had never been one who cared much about what others thought.

Only to live, that was what matters the most!

For the things that happened to Qu Ling Yue, it was still more or less related to her in some way and she could not sit back and do nothing about it.

Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao then left the dungeon.

Qu Ling Yue was temporarily placed in one of the bedrooms within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and Ye Sha triggered Qu Ling Yue’s sleep acupoint to let her temporarily calm down and not do anything to harm herself any further.

Jun Wu Xie ordered for hot water and a towel to be brought in and she tended to all the wounds on Qu Ling Yue’s body.

Lying upon the bed, it was seen Qu Ling Yue had lost a lot of

weight and her body was covered in welts and bruises, her ribs clearly visible under the thin skin. The heavy loss of blood and the prolonged torment had greatly weakened her body but the most serious afflictions were the wounds around her four limbs.

Her lips had badly split and she was seriously dehydrated with many blood wounds upon them.

Jun Wu Xie tended to all her wounds patiently bit by bit, her actions gentle and light, but with much precision. Even though she knew that Qu Ling Yue's sleep acupoint had been triggered and she would not feel the pain, she still habitually applied medicine that numbed the pain on the wounds.

Outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, Xiong Ba and Qing Yu stood outside not daring to approach the place. Ye Mei had handed Qu Xin Rui over to them and Xiong Ba had arranged for people to imprison Qu Xin Rui in the dungeon of the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall. Otherwise, with what Qu Xin Rui had done to the people of the Thousand Beast City, the citizens' hatred for her would be enough for them to tear her into a million pieces.

After having dealt with Qu Xin Rui's matters, Xiong Ba and Qing Yu had immediately hurried themselves to come outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers as they had seen Jun Xie heading in this direction when he left. But having reached outside the door, they suddenly did not dare to take another step forward.

All because Ye Sha was standing before the doors completely stone faced and his attitude towards them was cold and unwelcoming.

As Xiong Ba and Qing Yu were standing outside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers feeling at a complete loss, Qiao Chu and his companions came rushing in. The five youths encountered Xiong Ba and Qing Yu at the doors of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and at the very first moment they met, Xiong Ba and Qing Yu immediately hung their heads low guiltily.

The fact that the Thousand Beast City had been rescued from their crisis had been all due to the actions of Jun Xie and his companions. Compared to the betrayal they themselves had done to Jun Xie, they really could not bring themselves to look at Qiao Chu and the others in the eye.

Qiao Chu swept an angry glance over the speechless Xiong Ba and Qing Yu who had their head lowered in shame and snorted derisively. Turning his head away from them, he strode inside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, unwilling to even say a single word to them at all.

Xiong Ba was bathed in cold sweat. He had lifted his head up before hesitantly trying to say something but stopped himself when he saw the determined backs of the youths, the words right about to come out but stuck within his throat, unable to speak them no matter how hard he tried.

Fan Zhuo was the last one to walk into the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and his foot had just stepped over the Heavenly Cloud Chambers' door threshold when his body paused a slight moment. He turned his head around and stared at Xiong Ba who was looking highly guilt ridden and tormented with worry before he said:

“Little Xie will save your Young Miss.”

.....

Author Bei: If supposedly..... such a thing had happened to erm..... that someone, what would you, Lord Jue do?

Lord Jue: Make those people regret they were ever born and give..... more love, so much love that she would not have any leisurely time to think of anything else. [You dare to even make such a hypothesis, are you seeking death?]

Author Bei: That was just a hypothesis! Note that I said supposedly!

Wu Xie: What was omitted from your sentences?

Author Bei / Lord Jue: Nothing!

Chapter 1120: “Crumble and Fall (1)”

Xiong Ba was stunned for a moment. He did not say anything but just bent his back and bowed deeply to Fan Zhuo.

When Qiao Chu and the others arrived at the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, Jun Wu Xie was tending to Qu Ling Yue's wounds and when the youths saw the thin and pallid girl lying upon the bed, all of them tacitly did not open their mouths at all so that they would not disturb Jun Wu Xie's treatment of Qu Ling Yue's wounds.

They had all thought what Qu Ling Yue was put through really pained the heart but when they really saw how Qu Ling Yue looked now, they realised that what the girl suffered must have been worse than anyone of them could have imagined.

“I think..... I might not hate Qu Wen Hao that much anymore.” Qiao Chu said, rubbing at his nose.

Betrayals were intolerable, but when Qu Wen Hao was forced to witness his own daughter being humiliated in such a manner, he must have completely lost his mind then, and he had only made the only choice a father could have made at that time.

“I hope that she will recover fully.” Rong Ruo said with a frown, her eyes filled with sympathy.

For a full day and night, Jun Wu Xie sat at Qu Ling Yue's bedside, her treatment of Qu Ling Yue's wounds never stopping for a moment. It wasn't till evening the next day, when dusk shone through the window, that the unconscious Qu Ling Yue's eyes finally fluttered open.

What met her eyes was no longer the dim and dark cell, but an elegantly decorated room. Within the room, a faint fragrance of herbs hung in the air and the pain upon her body had seemingly faded away.

[Is this a dream?]

Qu Ling Yue blinked, staring at the smooth silk draped over the top of the bed.

“You’re awake.” A voice tinged with a slight raspiness sounded in Qu Ling Yue’s ear from the side.

Qu Ling Yue’s heart jumped, struggling a little as she turned her head. Jun Wu Xie’s cold countenance appeared within her eyes.

“Jun Xie.....” Qu Ling Yue immediately felt her face turn hot.

[Why had Jun Xie appeared beside her bed?]

In a panic, Qu Ling Yue wanted to bury her head under the blanket but when she lifted her hand and tried to pull the covers, a sharp pain suddenly shot through her from her wrist.

She saw very clearly that her two wrists, were wrapped up with rounds and rounds of bandages, the glaring white a huge contrast against the welts and bruises on the rest of her arms, which was like a sudden bolt of thunder, that woke her up rudely from her beautiful sweet dream!

Those long nights of unimaginable horrors and torment, the memories of those unthinkable scenes, surged like the tide into her mind. Her eyes flared wide open, the terrifying memories that drove her into despair, immediately threw her into a cold and freezing lake!

“Argh! ! !”

[That wasn’t a dream!]

[That had all been real!]

Qu Ling Yue’s emotions fluctuated between the extremes once more and she struggled in a fluster to try sit up, wrapping herself up tightly within the blanket, not willing to give Jun Xie another glance!

“Leave! Just leave!” Like an injured little beast, Qu Ling Yue did not want to see anybody, especially Jun Xie.

She had become like this. So dirty..... So very filthy.....

She did not want Jun Xie to see her in such a miserable state. She would rather that she had died in that cell, then to let her person she treasured so in her heart to see her in her current state.

Jun Wu Xie looked puzzledly at Qu Ling Yue. Initially, Qu Ling Yue's emotions had already recovered to normal but in an instant, she had broken down and crumbled once again, the helpless screams coming out from her, were so pitiful to hear.

Jun Wu Xie's brows creased together as Qu Ling Yue incessant violent struggles had once again split the wounds she had just bandaged up and the blood had seeped through the bandages, showing up as bright red stains.

“Do not look at me..... I beg you..... Do not..... Do not look at me.....” Qu Ling Yue begged tearfully as she buried herself within the blanket, her entire body shaking in fear.

Chapter 1121: “Crumble and Fall (2)”

Qu Ling Yue had never once thought that she would fall into such a state one day. She had carefully protected her chastity and always thought that she would give to her beloved everything that was most precious to her, but that had been cruelly stripped from her, together with her dignity, her spirit, all ground into tiny broken pieces, never to be put back together again.

“I beg you..... Do not look at me..... Can you please leave..... I’m really filthy..... dirty..... I beg you..... go.....” The Qu Ling Yue of the past had yearned so hard to be able to interact with Jun Xie, but now, she felt she wasn’t even qualified to be in the same room as him. She didn’t want Jun Xie to see the such an ugly and hideous her and Jun Xie’s gaze only made her feel unimaginably ashamed of herself.

Jun Wu Xie narrowed her eyes and looked at Qu Ling Yue’s trembling figure.

Suddenly, she knelt down on one knee by the bed, and pulled Qu Ling Yue out from under the blanket with a quick tug!

“No! !” Utter despair filled Qu Ling Yue’s eyes, but as weak as she was, she was unable to resist it. She was dragged out from under the blanket, her face all streaked with tears, her trembling lips revealing how terrified she was feeling.

“Don’t look at me..... Please..... Don’t look at me.....”

Jun Wu Xie ignored Qu Ling Yue’s begging plea and held Qu Ling Yue by the shoulder with one hand, the other lifting Qu Ling Yue’s head by the chin, forcing Qu Ling Yue to look at her in the eyes.

“What are you so afraid of.” Jun Wu Xie said.

Qu Ling Yue’s sight was already blurred by her tears and she wanted to break free, but she did not have the strength, but to only shake her head helplessly.

“I’m just so filthy..... so filthy..... I beg of you..... Do not come again. Will you please just go? I do not want you to see me looking like this.....” Why was she even alive? Why was she not dead instead? Qu Ling Yue already had no will to live and she would rather she had died in that cell than have to face Jun Xie again.

Qu Ling Yue’s eyes were red from crying and she was choking so hard on her sobs that she could only take intermittent breaths in between them.

Jun Xie held on to Qu Ling Yue’s hands and brought them up before her eyes.

The fair tiny hands were filled with many small cuts and wounds. The wounds have been carefully tended to and they have begun to scab.

“Who said you are filthy? I had you all washed and you are all clean now.” Jun Wu Xie said, her eyes fixed on Qu Ling Yue.

Qu Ling Yue turned away, refusing to even look at herself.

“Let me go..... Don’t even bother about me.....” She continued to plead helplessly.

The current her, even felt that her very soul had become absolutely filthy and she wished so much that she was already dead, or completely demented, so she wouldn’t have to face all of this now.

There was nothing, more than having Jun Xie see her in this state, that would drive her to become so traumatised.

“Your mother is dead.” Jun Wu Xie then said.

The struggling Qu Ling Yue suddenly froze completely, her eyes widening as she stared in disbelief at Jun Xie.

“Your mother had been severely ill from the early onset and Qu Xin Rui did not get anyone to give her any treatment and even ordered for her dead body to be disposed in the wild, leaving it

there for wild beasts to feed.” Jun Wu Xie’s voice was so cold it would make people shiver.

Qu Ling Yue was overcome with shock. She sat staring blankly on the bed, tears rolling down her face uncontrollably.

“Your Father has gone mad. If you die, then I will leave him to continue with his madness. If you want me to cure your father, you will have to live on.” Jun Wu Xie said, looking at Qu Ling Yue very seriously, her tone of voice hard and unyielding.

Qu Ling Yue then looked up in shock at Jun Xie.

Chapter 1122: “Crumble and Fall (3)”

Jun Wu Xie released her restraint on Qu Ling Yue and retreated to one side from the bed. There wasn't a single expression on her face and the icy chill in her eyes were terrifying to look at.

“To live or die, you choose on your own.”

Qu Ling Yue was stunned. The news of her mother's death and her father's madness was just too shocking to her and she found that it was impossible for her to digest all of it within such a short period of time. She fell helplessly back to sit upon the bed and hit hard on the corner of the blanket, crying her heart out soundlessly as the grief and despair wrecked at her mercilessly.

Jun Wu Xie turned to walk out of the room and the instant she shut the room door, the sound of stifled crying could be heard behind the closed door.

Standing outside the door, Qiao Chu gulped noiselessly when he heard the crying. Everything that Jun Wu Xie had said to Qu Ling Yue earlier, he had heard every single word clearly.

The fact that Qu Ling Yue would have suicidal thoughts was something they had well expected. But even if you beat him to death, we would never have guessed that Jun Wu Xie would use such methods to stop Qu Ling Yue from killing herself.

Little Xie's method was just too simply brutal by itself!

“Telling all of that to her like that, is that really alright?” Qiao Chu asked, seemingly rather conflicted inside as he looked at Jun Wu Xie. The one inside had just experienced an unimaginable nightmare and without even saying a single gentle comforting word, Jun Wu Xie had instead threatened her!

“If not, then?” Jun Wu Xie asked, looking at Qiao Chu with a frown on her face.

She had absolutely no idea how she was to comfort someone.

Moreover, she did not think that those nice sounding words would have any effect. At this point, Qu Ling Yue completely detested and abhorred herself and no matter what reassuring words she said, Qu Ling Yue would definitely not hear a single word of it. So, she might as well employ a more direct method, to simply prevent her from taking her own life.

“Err.....” Qiao Chu was stumped by Jun Wu Xie’s retort and he did not know what to say. He had not tried comforting others as well and what’s more it was regarding a matter like this.

“You came to look for me for something?” Jun Wu Xie asked as she stared Qiao Chu who was still unable to speak.

Qiao Chu immediately remembered the reason he had come to look for Jun Wu Xie. “Er.... Big Brother Wu Yao discovered something within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and he told me to come ask you to go there. It’s on the sixth level.”

Jun Wu Xie nodded her head and turned to walk away, leaving Qiao Chu to stand by the door alone, to listen to the sounds of crying coming out from inside the room, as he massaged his nose several times in helplessness.

The Heavenly Cloud Chamber, had now become temporary quarters for Jun Wu Xie to reside in. But after she had rescued Qu Ling Yue, she had not taken a single step out from that room and she wasn’t too familiar with her way around the place. All the favoured men who had been in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers had been chased out by Ye Sha and Ye Mei much earlier. Upon laying eyes on Jun Wu Yao’s malicious being, not one among all the timid favoured men dared say one word when given the marching orders and they had wasted no time in packing their things to quickly scramble out from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers in haste.

The sixth level was mainly empty where a wooden door blocked off a major part of the area. When Jun Wu Xie had come to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers for the first time to attend Qu Xin Rui’s

birthday banquet, she had already noticed that door on the sixth floor. Through that wooden door, an indistinct faint scent of blood had been coming out from behind it and that stench was still present now.

Ye Sha and Ye Mei were standing at the door and when they saw Jun Wu Xie approaching they immediately fell on one knee to offer their greetings.

Jun Wu Xie raised a hand to ask them to get up and walked through the doorway on her own.

However, at the moment that Jun Wu Xie stepped over the threshold, a thick bloody stench immediately hit her and what her eyes saw inside made her brows creased up together instantly.

Behind the door, the stone slabs beneath her feet were covered with a thick layer of congealed blood. The blood had filled every corner of the entire floor and as they had already congealed for a rather long period, the blood had already turned slightly black.

Chapter 1123: “Spirit Absorbing Pearl”

In the dimly lit room, Jun Wu Yao stood leisurely in the middle of the room. In his hand, he was holding a crystalline clear blood red gem. Hearing Jun Wu Xie’s footsteps, he turned slowly around and the gem in his hand scintillated with a devilish gleam under the firelight.

“Still remember that Ye Sha once told you that when he came here to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, he discovered something interesting?” Jun Wu Yao asked as he looked at Jun Wu Xie, his head tilted, the corners of his mouth arced up with a devilish charm.

“It’s this thing?” Jun Wu Xie asked, her gaze upon the blood red gem. The gem was obviously translucent but Jun Wu Xie could not help having the feeling that that thing was a ball formed from coalesced fresh blood.

“Among the Twelve Palaces, there is one named the Soul Return Palace, and they are most adept at using spirits to experiment different things. In the Soul Return Palace, there are many magical spiritual artifacts and among them, there is one called the Spirit Absorbing Pearl, that uses a living person’s blood as a medium, to be used as an offering to sacrifice the person’s spirit to the Spirit Absorbing Pearl, which infuses power into the Spirit Absorbing Pearl. With certain limitations, the Spirit Absorbing Pearl will be able to preserve a person’s youthful looks, but its true purpose isn’t just for this.” Jun Wu Yao said as he toyed nonchalantly with the blood filled Spirit Absorbing Pearl.

“This was what Qu Xin Rui used to preserve her youthful looks of a twenty something?” Jun Wu Xie immediately understood. No wonder she had always felt that there was something not quite right with how Qu Xin Rui looked.

“She should have used this. But the true purpose of the Spirit

Absorbing Pearl is meant for a person's spirit and not their looks. To think that there would be someone in the Soul Return Palace that would be so dumb as to waste the use of the Spirit Absorbing Pearl, that's really quite..... interesting. Does Little Xie know, how the sacrifice that this Spirit Absorbing Pearl requires, is carried out?" Jun Wu Yao's eyes narrowed slightly, his devilish gaze sweeping over the blood covered stone slab floor under their feet.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head.

Jun Wu Yao then said with a smile: "It needs the blood of a living human to nourish it, and it has to be the blood of a young male. When making the offering, they need to cut the sacrifice open from the chest to the abdomen, spread open the ribs to expose the chest and place this Spirit Absorbing Pearl into the sacrifice's opened chest, to allow the blood to give it its nourishment, as it slowly absorbs the sacrifice's spirit and life. And throughout the entire process, the sacrifice is still alive, till the Spirit Absorbing Pearl has absorbed all his spirit and life's blood, before he breathes his last."

Jun Wu Xie's heart jumped. Qu Xin Rui had been so highly concerned with her looks and to preserve her youth all these years, she must have made quite a number of men as sacrifices. Within this blood tainted place, how many people have struggled before death claimed them, and how many young men from the Thousand Beast City had their lives taken away from them here?

"In actual fact, this Spirit Absorbing Pearl, is most suitable to be used on unstable spirits or people with spirits which are lacking. To have been used to preserve one's looks, was just such a waste." Jun Wu Yao said with a wide smile, he gaze upon Jun Wu Xie. Seeing the spot between Jun Wu Xie's brows tense up, he asked: "Does Little Xie detest this highly demonic artifact?"

Jun Wu Xie did not say anything but Jun Wu Yao's eyes glinted. He suddenly clutched five fingers together and instantly crushed the Spirit Absorbing Pearl!

The clear sound of an explosion rang out within the room and the broken Spirit Absorbing Pearl turned into a glittery dust that fell from Jun Wu Yao's fingers.

"If Little Xie doesn't like it, then there is no need for this thing to exist."

Jun Wu Xie was a little surprised. She had always felt that Jun Wu Yao's words were a little strange, but she could never put her finger on it.

Jun Wu Yao walked over to stand before Jun Wu Xie and lifted a hand to rub Little Xie on her head.

"You've toiled for so long, you should get some rest now."

Chapter 1124: “Who Dares Say One More Word (1)”

The human skin map was discovered within one of Qu Xin Rui's room and Jun Wu Xie's goal for coming to the Thousand Beast City was finally achieved. But she did not leave the place immediately but had remained behind temporarily.

Qu Ling Yue did not make any attempts to kill herself and she made her final choice showing it through her actions. She lived on, begging Jun Xie to cure her father.

In fact, even if Qu Ling Yue had not requested it, Jun Wu Xie would still have done that all the same.

Qu Wen Hao had used the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to gain control of Lord Meh Meh and only he would be able to remove that, or if he was dead, then would Lord Meh Meh go back to normal.

Jun Wu Xie had obviously no intentions to kill Qu Wen Hao.

But in the subsequent days that came after, although Jun Wu Xie was staying within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, she did not have any chance to once meet Qu Ling Yue. It was as if Qu Ling Yue was hiding from her and even when people brought her food and drinks, she would hide within the room and opened the door just a small crack to receive them. And as for Jun Wu Xie..... the moment Jun Xie comes to Qu Ling Yue's room, Qu Ling Yue would try everything she could to hide herself from the youth.

She did not want to see Jun Xie again, not because of hatred, but because she was too ashamed to see him.

Towards Qu Ling Yue's stubbornness, Jun Wu Xie did not say anything about it, but just stood by her earlier agreement, to treat Qu Wen Hao.

Qu Wen Hao had been put through enormous shock and his

consciousness had completely collapsed and broken down. Such conditions when put even in the hands of Jun Wu Xie, was not something that could be treated in two or three days. Afterall, in the human body, one's consciousness was the most vulnerable.

Xiong Ba and Qing Yu had come to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers a few times but they did not dare meet Jun Xie but had only relayed the gratitude of the Thousand Beast City's citizens to Qiao Chu and the others for them to convey to Jun Xie.

After having suffered under oppression for more than a decade, the Thousand Beast City finally got a new lease of life and their people who had lived under all that hardship were finally able to return back to living a normal life.

But.....

After the crisis was resolved, disharmonious voices rang out within the Thousand Beast City.

Qu Wen Hao as the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City, had gone mad, and according to reason, the position of Grand Chieftain should be temporarily handed over to Qu Ling Yue but in regards to that, voices with differing views rang out.

Qu Xin Rui had revealed everything about the things that Qu Ling Yue had been through before everyone in the Thousand Beast City on that day. It could be said that currently in the Thousand Beast City, everyone was very much aware of the kind of horrifying things that Qu Ling Yue had been put through.

And the people who had done those things to Qu Ling Yue were men who were once favoured men in the Heavenly Cloud Chamber that rode roughshod over the people. After Jun Xie took over the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, those favoured men had run from the place and scattered. But the men had gotten so used to the leisurely and privileged life in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers and asking them to return to the life of a normal person just like that, how would they be able to tolerate that? On top of that, their pompous

ways back when they were in the Heavenly Cloud Chambers were still well remembered by the citizens of the Thousand Beast City.

Now that they have returned, they were made to suffer countless fierce glares and insulting curses and under the incessant and continuous abuse, they had dragged Qu Ling Yue into the picture saying if they were all not to be forgiven, then how could the hopelessly withered flower that Qu Ling Yue had become have any right to take up the mantle of being the Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City?

The words of those people had been highly unpleasant to hear and those citizens who did not know the entire truth began to lose the sympathy they had for Qu Ling Yue under the influence of those rumours. They began to say they did not wish to have a girl who had lost her chastity to become their Grand Chieftain, as that would only make them feel ashamed and humiliated.

Chapter 1125: “Who Dares Say One Word More (2)”

When the several Clan Chiefs convened to discuss about the future situation of the Thousand Beast City, the topic concerning whether Qu Ling Yue would be able to become the Grand Chieftain was debated even more heatedly.

Xiong Ba had banged his fist on the table and quarrelled loudly with the other Clan Chiefs. Under to come to a conclusion, he had left in a raging huff as he made his way towards the Heavenly Cloud Chambers.

“Wow, I see a face there, looks really red with rage.” Qiao Chu was sitting inside the Heavenly Cloud Chambers biting on an apple and when he saw Xiong Ba approaching livid with rage, he could not help himself but to say that sarcastically.

Maybe it was due to Xiong Ba’s and Qing Yu’s deeply apologetic demeanor that had let Qiao Chu and the others feel that they were sincere, which caused the grudges within their hearts to gradually disappear, but..... although the enmity was gone, to want them to accept them back as friends, wouldn’t be possible.

Xiong Ba’s face showed a tinge of embarrassment as he scratched at his head and said: “Young Master Qiao, don’t make fun of me please.”

“What happened? Saw that you have been so highly agitated recently. You all already have Qu Xin Rui imprisoned, how is it? Has that old witch been getting by well over this period?” Qiao Chu asked.

Having been asked by Qiao Chu, Xiong Ba immediately thought of how Qu Xin Rui currently looked. The grotesque memory of seeing a person struggling under the fate of having all her flesh rot off and then growing it back, had completely unnerved even the

stalwart and hardy Xiong Ba where his scalp had tingled with numbness when he saw that. It was then that Xiong Ba finally understood why Jun Xie had wanted Qu Xin Rui to be kept alive. Living like that seemingly neither human nor ghost, was truly an existence more agonizing than death. Within the Fiery Blaze Clan Hall, Qu Xin Rui's screams could be heard everyday, sounding just like a terrifying cry coming from a ferocious ghost deep in the depths of Hell.

Seeing Xiong Ba's reaction, Qiao Chu knew, that Qu Xin Rui's looks must have been rather "exciting and brilliant" to see.

"Speak. What are you here for today?" Qiao Chu asked.

Xiong Ba opened his mouth and said highly awkwardly: "Today.....I have..... come to seek Young Master Jun."

Qiao Chu immediately raised up an eyebrow. He was just about to say something when a cold voice rang out suddenly.

"Why would you be looking for me." Jun Wu Xie said as she came down slowly from upstairs, her chilly gaze sweeping over the figure of Xiong Ba standing frozen at the doors.

Xiong Ba's repeated and persistent appearances at the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, to express his guilt and goodwill, was known to her, but she had never met with him at all.

Xiong Ba looked at Jun Xie, highly flabbergasted. Ever since Qu Xin Rui had been captured, he had not been able to see Jun Xie even once. Seeing her so suddenly like this, his heart had almost jumped out from his throat.

"I..... I..... not me, aish! Young Master Jun, the thing is actually this..... The several Clan Chiefs and Elders had discussed about it. The Thousand Beast City had just gotten over its crisis but the Grand Chieftain had become like that..... Suddenly without a leader among the dragons, so..... they were thinking..... whether they can ask..... ask you to temporarily take up the position of

Grand Chieftain.....” As Xiong Ba spoke, his heart was feeling rather apprehensive. Truth to be told, he had really discarded his face at the door when he came in to see Jun Xie today.

Jun Xie was the Emperor of the Fire Country, and although the Thousand Beast City wasn't all that weak themselves, they would still be nothing before Jun Xie's eyes.

“It was all due to you that the Thousand Beast City was saved this time. Throughout the entire city, everyone sees you as their saviour, and if you are willing to temporarily take on the position of the Grand Chieftain, I believe..... everyone will be convinced.” Xiong Ba said as he looked at Jun Xie nervously. The Thousand Beast City was now in tumult without a leader and they desperately need someone to stand forth to calm the situation.

Jun Wu Xie's eyebrow raised slightly.

Qiao Chu was so surprised his eyes went wide. Even if you beat him to death, he wouldn't have thought that the people of the Thousand Beast City wanted Jun Wu Xie to be their Grand Chieftain!

Chapter 1126: “Who Dares Say One Word More (3)”

Jun Wu Xie did not say anything. Her silence made Xiong Ba even more nervous. But just as Xiong Ba was feeling so nervous that he was about to run out through the doors, another Clan Chief of the Thousand Beast City came in following Xiong Ba's footsteps.

“Young Master Jun!” That Clan Chief was advanced in age and had met Jun Xie before, but that had been when he was with Qu Wen Hao trying to capture Lord Meh Meh.

When Xiong Ba saw that Clan Chief, his chest immediately felt highly stifled and seemed to want to say something, but felt that quarrelling with the man in front of Jun Xie and Qiao Chu might not be appropriate, so he merely gritted his teeth and glared at him.

“Young Master Jun, you are the benefactor of the Thousand Beast City. Now that the Grand Chieftain is of unsound mind, the Thousand Beast City needs someone who is convincing to temporarily take on the position of the Thousand Beast City. Young Master Jun had not taken it against us and saved the entire Thousand Beast City and this old man here has no choice but to come here thick skinned to plead for Young Master Jun to help us all another time, to temporarily become our Grand Chieftain.” The Clan Chief offered his greetings respectfully to Jun Xie, his words uttered out clearly unlike the nervous Xiong Ba.

Xiong Ba glared at the old man discreetly, wishing deeply he could kill that man with a single slap.

Regarding the matter about who was to assume the position of the Grand Chieftain, this old man had been the one who had argued with him the hardest. The man was loyal to the Thousand Beast City but his unbending and one tracked mind had frequently angered Xiong Ba so much that made Xiong Ba always want to get

into a physical fight with him.

“What has it got to do with me?” Jun Wu Xie replied, her eyes narrowing slightly.

The Clan Chief was taken aback. He had been aware that Jun Xie had previously declared he was cutting off ties with the Thousand Beast City but at the Thousand Beast City’s most critical time of crisis, Jun Xie had helped them push back the insurmountable odds, which had let him see a sliver of hope. Hence, he was surprised that Jun Xie had flatly rejected him without even giving his suggestion a single thought.

Qiao Chu watching from the side could not hold himself back anymore. Jun Wu Xie had interfered because she had a bone to pick with Qu Xin Rui and it didn’t have anything to do with the Thousand Beast City. They had been already been saved because of that and that was not enough, they could actually be so shameless and even had the cheek to come as Jun Wu Xie to be their Grand Chieftain! ? What cheek!

“I say, who is this old man here? Are you even fit to speak out here? Your Grand Chieftain of the Thousand Beast City might have lost his mind, but his daughter is still here well and alive. Since you guys are looking for a new Grand Chieftain, by all reasons, the rightful choice should be Qu Ling Yue! Why are you all here seeking our Little Xie to take on the job! ?” Qiao Chu asked, his face immediately darkening.

Towards Xiong Ba, he could still consider to be cordial. But with this thick skinned old Clan Chief, he did not have the slightest inclination to be polite at all.

Who would have known. Once Qu Ling Yue’s name was mentioned, the old Clan Chief’s face immediately creased up.

“With our Thousand Beast City’s stellar reputation at stake, how could we let such an offensive and immoral woman become our Grand Chieftain? If news of it were to spread, we would be seen as

the biggest joke!”

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed up immediately and she stared coldly at the old Clan Chief, all warmth disappearing from her eyes in an instant.

“She is in possession of an unclean body and if she was to become the Thousand Beast City’s Grand Chieftain, how could she convince the people? Such a filthy girl, if keeping her just as a commoner, it can be disregarded. But to let her lead the glory of the entire city.....” The old Clan Chief’s brows knotted together, his eyes with disdain written all over them.

Xiong Ba was so angered by those words his entire body was trembling with rage. In the recent days past, he had heard quite a lot of similar things like this said, and his heart had already been shooting off with anger, driving him to rush forward to give the old Clan Chief a punch on the face.

But someone’s actions had been faster than Xiong Ba!

The old man’s voice had barely fallen when the figure of Jun Wu Xie had suddenly appeared right in front of him in a flash, and with a whip of her leg, the old man had been sent flying out through the doors of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers!

Chapter 1127: “Jealous (1)”

That man was sent flying straight out through the door, to crash heavily to the ground and vomiting out a mouthful of blood. He struggled hard to raise his head and looked at Jun Xie in confusion, puzzlement in his eyes.

“Young Master Jun..... I..... Have I said anything wrong..... Why have you.....”

“Shut up.” Jun Wu Xie shouted in a cold voice.

Xiong Ba who had almost moved to strike was standing stunned on one side, having not expected that Jun Xie would have moved faster than him. It must be said though, seeing the old Clan Chief being kicked outside like this, greatly relieved the pent up rage within his heart!

“Young Mas.....”

“You hear this clearly now.” Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowing up slightly.

“Three day from now, I will be marrying Qu Ling Yue in the Thousand Beast City. If I am to hear anyone say a single disparaging word about her, I will break that person’s neck.” Jun Wu Xie’s tone was frosty, her words infused with rage.

“What! !” Immediately after Jun Wu Xie’s words left her mouth, needless to mention about the old Clan Chief, even Xiong Ba and Qiao Chu were instantly speechless, their eyes bulged almost popping out of their heads.

Xiong Ba was so getting so excited his entire body was trembling. He had known that Qu Ling Yue had developed feelings for Jun Xie, but Jun Xie had not done anything to show reciprocation. After Qu Ling Yue was put through all that, even Xiong Ba felt that it was no longer possible for anything to happen between Qu Ling Yue and Jun Xie. But..... Jun Xie had at this moment suddenly

said, he would be marrying Qu Ling Yue! !

Xiong Ba's mind completely blanked out.

Qiao Chu gasped loudly and stared with wide incredulous eyes.

[Little Xie was going to marry Qu Ling Yue?]

[What the hell was this! ?]

[No doubt that Qu Ling Yue's ordeal was very pitiful, but..... Little Xie, you are a girl you know! You are a pure bred girl through and through! How are you going to marry another girl!]

As everyone there were still overwhelmed in shock, Jun Wu Xie said chillingly to the utterly shocked Clan Chief: "Now scram!"

The Clan Chief immediately picked up his legs and ran away in fright.

It wasn't a till a long while later that Xiong Ba finally managed to regain his senses and was about to say something when his gaze fell upon the back of Jun Xie. He immediately shivered and in that instant turned tail and fled!

"Little Xie, about this, shouldn't you....." Qiao Chu had just opened his mouth to express the immense shock within his heart when he had just turned his head, and he immediately froze in his spot.

"Big Brother Wu Yao! !"

Jun Wu Xie's body stiffened as she turned hesitantly, quickly spotting Jun Wu Yao, not knowing from when he had appeared behind her. His face was showing the devilishly charming smile that she was so familiar with, but that smile did not reach his eyes in the slightest, and within those jet black eyes, it was seen that they were faintly revealing a purplish tinge!

"Little Xie, is going to marry that girl?" Jun Wu Yao asked slowly, his voice light as a feather, brushing past one's heart.

Jun Wu Xie's mouth gaped open. It was originally already

decided, but without knowing why, upon seeing the cold chill in Jun Wu Yao's eyes, she could not make herself say it no matter how hard she tried.

This was also the first time that she had seen Jun Wu Yao look at her with such eyes.

“Big Brother Wu Yao, Little Xie was just kidding. She is a girl, how is it possible for her to marry Qu Ling Yue?” Even the incredibly dense Qiao Chu could sense the strange vibes coming from Jun Wu Yao, and he instinctively tried to make up an excuse for Jun Wu Xie.

“Scram.” Jun Wu Yao spat out just one word that was cold as frost, his gaze not having moved an inch.

Qiao Chu disappeared completely from the room in the same instant.

[Big Brother Wu Yao today, was just too terrifying!]

On the first floor of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, only Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao were left.

Jun Wu Yao walked slowly to come before Jun Wu Xie, his hand reaching out to hold Jun Wu Xie by the chin, and lifted her face up slightly.

“You want to marry her? Hmm?”

.....

Lord Jue: Come out here!

Author Bei: I will not come out even if I die in here! I will lose my life if I go out there!

Lord Jue: You think, by hiding, you will then be able to live?

Author Bei: My Lord! Let me explain first! Qu Ling Yue is a girl! Wu Xie is also a girl! The two of them will not be able to create any disharmonious situations! You must cool down! ! It's just but marrying right! When in school, many girls address other girls as

wifey as well..... Wu Xie! Save me! ARRRGGGHHH! Your Lord Jue is going to kill your birth mum here! For the love of the god, come save me!

Chapter 1128: “Jealous (2)”

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes widened. At that moment, Jun Wu Yao’s demeanor was a little different from before. The corners of his mouth were still arced up in a smile, but Jun Wu Xie could no longer find the mirth that she always saw in those eyes.

“Because you pity her and you are going to marry her? She had been hoping to die all this time, so why don’t I help you kill her and grant her her wish?” Jun Wu Yao’s eyes narrowed up slightly and the hand holding Jun Wu Xie’s chin involuntarily exerted some strength and the skin below his fingertips turned faintly red. The violet light within his eyes fluctuated uncontrollably and green veins popped up upon his greatly tensed up hand. He fought very hard to contain his surging emotions to not allow himself to lose control, by squashing the tiny figure before his eyes.

“I’ll help you kill her, alright?” Having not gotten a reply from Jun Wu Xie, Jun Wu Yao repeated his question in a soft voice, but his words and tone had already betrayed his murderous intent and that he was not joking, and would be true to his word.

Jun Wu Xie stared unwaveringly at somewhat unfamiliar Jun Wu Yao before her eyes, her clear eyes not showing the slightest bit of fear, but was tinged with puzzlement and confusion instead.

Seeing the look of confusion in Jun Wu Xie’s eyes, Jun Wu Yao drew in a deep breath, and suddenly stretched out his hand to hold Jun Wu Xie around the waist, forcefully lifting her body up while at the same time lowering his head to firmly clasp his mouth over that little mouth that was slightly open.

It was an highly invasive and punishing kiss, which drew out all the air from inside Jun Wu Xie’s chest, the strong and powerful arm drawing her petite little body deep into his embrace, where she was stuck closely together to him, without the slightest gap between them.

Feeling like he wanted to mesh her right into his bones, wishing for her to forever belong to him alone, the intense desire to take everything she was assaulted at every cell within Jun Wu Yao, the discontent in his mind pulling the string taut and stretching it to its limits, seemingly like it could possibly snap at any moment, which would then make him lose all control!

Jun Wu Xie pushed against Jun Wu Yao's chest futilely, the feeling of being oppressed had come too suddenly, which put her at a loss at that moment. Moreover, her strength when placed before Jun Wu Yao's, was just so insignificant, and she couldn't budge him in the slightest.

Every inch of her mouth seemed filled with his breath and she did not even have the chance to breathe. Her gradually oxygen deprived brain began to develop a throbbing ache and she subconsciously drew out her needles from her fingertips, only wanting to put an end to the confusing and frenetic situation. But in the instant that those needlepoints were pressed against Jun Wu Yao's vital points, Jun Wu Yao's highly tensed arm suddenly relented, and she wasn't able to stab those silver needles in his acupoints.....

The icy cold sharp points were pressed against Jun Wu Yao's skin, and did not pierce him. But as he moved, it lightly brushed against his skin and the slight pain from that light scratch, had immediately pulled Jun Wu Yao back to his consciousness!

Sensing the slight trembling from the tiny figure within his arms, he suddenly retracted the strength in his arm, and raised his head, pulling himself slightly apart from Jun Wu Xie!

Jun Wu Xie's face was already covered in a pink flush and the air that surged right back into her chest caused her to suddenly choke and cough, making her face turn more rosy, and her clear eyes to lightly mist up, brought about from the choking cough.

Jun Wu Yao looked at Jun Wu Xie's flushed cheeks through half

narrowed eyes, his gaze falling upon her slightly red and swollen lips. He raised up his hand and gently rubbed his finger over those moist lips.

“I do not allow, you to marry her. No matter if it’s Qu Ling Yue or anyone else, whether it’s to take in a wife or marrying yourself off, I will not allow it.”

Chapter 1129: “Jealous (3)”

Jun Wu Yao could not make himself imagine, a scene with Jun Wu Xie dressed in a fiery red wedding dress, and standing next to another person. Just the very thought of it, would make him want to blast the person standing next to her into a million pieces.

“I am not really going to marry her.” Jun Wu Xie said, still panting slightly.

“Oh? Then what is this?” Jun Wu Yao asked, his eyes narrowing up.

“I need to not let her, continue to become the subject of humiliation, coming out from anyone’s mouth. I want to make her to be able to stand before everyone once again, and have no one dare to say another word against her. She needs an identity, and I can give it to her..... Or more accurately, “Jun Xie” can give it to her.” No matter how dense Jun Wu Xie was with such things, she still understood what marriage was. A union mostly between man and woman, and in the eyes of other people now, she was just a young youth. What people saw with their eyes, was merely a cold and indifferent “Jun Xie”, and not the Young Miss of the Lin Palace, Jun Wu Xie.

The murder within Jun Wu Yao’s eyes, gradually faded away. His fingers ran through Jun Wu Xie’s hair, and he said in a highly gentle voice: “So what?”

Jun Wu Xie sighed. Although she hated to explain things to others the most, but a voice deep in her heart was telling her at that moment, that she needed to explain all her intentions to Jun Wu Yao to let him understand everything, or..... Jun Wu Yao would definitely send Qu Ling Yue right down to hell in the next moment.

“Jun Xie needs to become the pillar behind Qu Ling Yue. This is what I owe her. Only when she is free from having others debate

about her, will she be able to pick herself up again. I am a girl myself, so between us, it couldn't possibly result in anything more. I only wish to protect her for a time, till she finds someone she truly loves in the future, she will be free to pursue her own love, and entering into a marriage with another girl like me, will not caused her to have any complications with her future husband at that time."

Jun Wu Xie's thought about the entire thing, was extremely simple. She only wanted to become the pillar behind Qu Ling Yue.

Jun Wu Yao raised up an eyebrow. "What if she doesn't find an ideal man? Wouldn't it mean that you would have to continue to carry on the marriage in name with her?"

Jun Wu Xie shook her head. "I am Jun Wu Xie, not Jun Xie. When the time comes when I am able to openly return home, "Jun Xie" will then cease to exist. And by that time, I believe that Qu Ling Yue would have become strong enough, whereby without needing me to be around, she will still be able to face any challenges that might come her way."

From being a delicate flower kept in the greenhouse, to grow up to become strong willed enough to overcome all obstacles, would require a period of time of grinding. And what Jun Wu Xie wanted to do, was to hold an umbrella over Qu Ling Yue, to allow her to be able to last through this grinding period of time.

Jun Wu Yao looked at Jun Wu Xie, and the rage in his eyes began to slowly subside. This was the first time, that Jun Wu Xie had been willing to be so patient, to explain so much to him. And he had earlier detected, that Jun Wu Xie's silver needles, had been pressed against his neck, but this time, she had not stabbed them into him. When his emotions had almost slipped beyond his control as he raged in madness, she had actually not retaliated. That had gradually diminished the murder that had originally surged within him.

If this had been before, those few silver needles that Jun Wu Xie held in her hand, would have already been completely stuck right into his neck.

“You can go ahead with your plan, but there is one point that you will need to promise me.” Jun Wu Yao said.

“What?”

“The person to carry out the rites for the marriage ceremony cannot be done by you.” Jun Wu Yao said as he tapped his finger upon Jun Wu Xie’s forehead, right between the brows. Even when he knew that everything was not real, he still could not make himself accept that.

Jun Wu Xie blinked blankly and said: “I had intended to have Brother Hua take my place all along.”

Chapter 1130: “Jealous (4)”

Although Jun Wu Xie has never gotten married before, but she had seen the marriage ceremonies take place within the Qi Kingdom in the past and the tedious intricacies involved, was not something that she was able to accept.

In any case, since Hua Yao was most skilled in disguises, these tasks would be best suitable to be left to him.

After hearing those words from Jun Wu Xie, Jun Wu Yao's eyes were finally able to smile.

“Then do what you want.” As long as it was not Little Xie standing there dressed in clothes ready to be wed, all others, Jun Wu Yao did not mind, and there was nothing that was worth his attention.

Jun Wu Xie's wedding partner, can only be him alone, and not anyone else.

Sensing that Jun Wu Yao's emotions had reverted to normal, Jun Wu Xie creased up her brows together, and the two small hands pressed against Jun Wu Yao's chest push slightly.

That was when Jun Wu Yao realized that the strength he exerted earlier, must have hurt Jun Wu Xie somehow.

“Apologies, lost control of my emotions a little there.” Jun Wu Yao smiled and kissed the top of Jun Wu Xie's head, and released his arm around Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie shot Jun Wu Yao a glance, and subconsciously felt her slightly red and swollen lips, and the gaze that was looking at Jun Wu Yao turned slightly strange as well.

Jun Wu Yao still continued to smile. “Does it hurt? I'll help you massage it a little.” He reached out his hand towards Jun Wu Xie little mouth as he spoke, and Jun Wu Xie immediately pulled up her hand and smacked that dishonest paw away.

“The next time, I will not hold my hand back.” Jun Wu Xie tried hard to put on a stern face, as she waved her silver needles in her hand. She did not why she had stayed her hand at the very last second as well.

Jun Wu Yao laughed good naturedly and said: “Alright, if there’s a next time, I’ll let Little Xie make me a porcupine, alright?”

Jun Wu Xie nodded satisfactorily and then kept her needles away. Casting another glance at Jun Wu Yao, she then turned and ran upstairs.

A pity Jun Wu Xie had completely failed to notice that Jun Wu Yao had not promised that he would not commit such deeds in the future. What he had merely agreed to, was if that happened the next time, he would obediently suffer Jun Wu Xie’s “resistance”. Jun Wu Xie’s silver needles, to other people were highly deadly, but to a certain demon lord, they were something that did not hurt or tickle him. Even if he was to be pricked to become a porcupine, he would still be able to continue to get fresh with her!

Watching Jun Wu Xie’s back that almost looked to be “running away”, the darkness in Jun Wu Yao’s heart finally dispersed completely.

Jun Wu Xie ran up to the seventh floor of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers with her face slightly flushed. When she came to the top floor, her steps slowed slightly and she walked slowly to come before Qu Ling Yue’s room.

As expected, she had just come near to the tightly shut door when from inside the room, a series of hurried and flustered steps sounded, and even the clatter of some things being dropped or toppled in haste.

Jun Wu Xie stood at the door, looking at the tightly locked door, knowing the Qu Ling Yue inside, must have hidden herself up again.

“I know that you are inside.” Jun Wu Xie said.

Not a single sound came out from inside.

“There is one matter that I need to tell you. It doesn’t matter even if you do not open the door, as you only need to hear this.” Jun Wu Xie did not care whether the door before her was opened, or closed.

Inside the room, Qi Ling Yue had both her legs curled up tightly, as her back leaned against the side of the bed, her arms curled around her knees, and her head buried between those knees. Jun Wu Xie’s voice came into her ears, which brought about a slight trembling.

She was not willing to see Jun Wu Xie, was because she was frightened, and also because she was ashamed.....

Although she was still living, but all those things that had happened, were all still highly vivid in her mind, unforgettable and inerasable. She didn’t even need to go hear with her own ears, but she knew only too clearly, that when people spoke about her, just how unbearable and harsh those words were.

Chapter 1131: “Getting a Wife (1)”

How could a girl like her now have the cheek to even see Jun Xie?

Qu Ling Yue had cooped herself up within this tiny room because she had not wanted to see anyone, nor speak to anyone. The approach of any male would disgust her, even when Jun Xie had ordered for people to bring her to see her father just some time ago, her very spirit had involuntarily felt pangs of fear.

It could be said that Qu Ling Yue now, towards any male person, held a deep innate fear, a result from the horrendous ordeal that she had gone through.

Outside the room doors, Jun Wu Xie’s voice continued on.

Qu Ling Yue listened quietly, the tiny face buried between her knees tear streaked.

“I am a girl.”

In that moment, Jun Wu Xie stated a fact that shocked Qu Ling Yue right to the bones. Her head snapped up suddenly, and upon the tear streaked face, was an expression of pure incredulity.

“Back in the Fire Country’s Capital City, the person who cured you then, was the real me. I am Jun Wu Xie.”

[How can this be.....]

[How can this be.....]

Qu Ling Yue felt her whole body turn cold. The very “he” that she had been so crazy about, was in reality a “she”!

“I came here today, to tell you that three days from today, I will be taking you as my wife in the Thousand Beast City. But rest well assured. I am a girl just like you, and I will not be able to do anything disrespectful to you. Hence, three days later, I hope that you will be able to walk out from this room.”

Standing outside the doors, Jun Wu Xie made all her intentions

known, and was aware that all her words, would be hard for Qu Ling Yue to digest fully. Hence, she had not pushed for a reply from Qu Ling Yue immediately, but turned to leave after she said her piece.

Upon hearing the sound of steps gradually retreating outside, the tears Qu Ling Yue's wide incredulous eyes breached the dam once more.

The chaotic upheaval of emotions within her heart were impossible to capture. Despair, shock, pain..... All these highly conflicting emotions caused Qu Ling Yue to find it more and more difficult to breathe.....

After departing from where Qu Ling Yue's room was, Jun Wu Xie immediately went to the third floor where Hua Yao and the others were staying at.

On the third floor, Qiao Chu was holding Hua Yao by the shoulders and gasping loudly to take his breath. Fei Yan and the others were smiling widely to themselves at Qiao Chu's highly flustered self. When they suddenly saw Jun Wu Xie approaching them, the youths immediately went over to her.

"Our Dumb Qiao said you are going to marry Qu Ling Yue? Are you doing it for real?" Fei Yan asked smilingly as he came before Jun Wu Xie, the news having given all of them quite a shock.

It must be said, within their group of companions, there were two girls among them. One of them was Rong Ruo, graceful with highly handsome features, having won more girls' hearts than the pure and real boys among them, and the other one was Jun Wu Xie, who was always cold and indifferent, who in the end..... was about to take a little wife!

That had really crushed the little fragile hearts of the boys among them.

Having had to watch Rong Ruo who was always surrounded by a

gaggle of girls, and now seeing Jun Wu Xie about to “take a wife”, the swinging bachelors, suddenly found their lives a whole lot darker.

Jun Wu Xie shot the smiling Fei Yan a glance and then her gaze turned upon Qiao Chu and Hua Yao still clumped together and called out in a very calm voice: “Brother Hua.”

“Hmm?” Hua Yao answered as he looked up.

“Three days later, you will marry Qu Ling Yue in my place.” Jun Wu Xie’s voice was as calm as could be.

“.....” Hua Yao froze in place, unable to move.

Qiao Chu almost lost his balance in that most of shock and very nearly fell onto the ground right before Jun Wu Xie.

“What are you saying! ? You want Brother Hua to wed Qu Ling Yue! ! !” Qiao Chu was staring with his eyes so wide in utter disbelief. Did he really hear what he thought he just heard? He clearly remembered before he left earlier, he was very sure that his ears had definitely heard..... that Jun Wu Xie was going to marry Qu Ling Yue!

Chapter 1132: “Getting a Wife (2)”

How had it in such a short period of time, suddenly turned out that the person taking a wife was Hua Yao instead! ?

Qiao Chu was making a big show of how he was not able to accept it!

Everyone’s gazes immediately fell onto the figure of Qiao Chu who was hopping with indignant fury.

“I say, for Brother Hua to be taking a wife, it’s a happy occasion. Why are you getting so agitated?” Fei Yan asked, an eyebrow raised, staring at Qiao Chu with an evil glint in his eyes.

Qiao Chu’s face immediately turned red, and quickly quipped: “Brother Hua and me are brothers through life and death. How can he marry a wife ahead of me? Wouldn’t that leave me to become just a lonely shadow? How pitiful will I then become?”

“Oh! Now I see why.” Fei Yan deliberately dragged out his voice over the words.

Qiao Chu became even more embarrassed.

Hua Yao cleared his throat and looked at Jun Wu Xie: “How do you intend to do it?”

Before Jun Wu Xie could speak, Qiao Chu butted right in and said anxiously: “Brother Hua, you wouldn’t really go get yourself a wife right? Will you?”

Hua Yao shot him a scathing glance, looking exceptional cold and lofty.

Jun Wu Xie then said: “You will only need to alter your looks to look like me, and carry out the rites for the wedding ceremony and that will do. In the eyes of everybody else, I will be the one marrying her.”

Immediately after Jun Wu Xie said those words, Qiao Chu finally

heaved a huge sigh of relief and the gaze that Fei Yan gave Qiao Chu became even stranger.

Hua Yao nodded and said: "Alright."

"Brother Hua, how unprincipled are you? Just have to ask you to marry and you are agreeing to it immediately?" Fei Yan said with a broad smile on his face.

Jun Wu Xie shot a glance at Fei Yan and Fei Yan immediately knew that it was time to shut up.

"I am thinking, Little Xie. You wouldn't be bringing Qu Ling Yue to tag along with us in future would you?" Qiao Chu had finally managed to revert to normal. He had a general idea of what Jun Wu Xie was planning and that was all merely done to protect Qu Ling Yue. But they had already found the human skin map and they would need to head off to other places, to continue searching for the rest of the maps. Based on the situations they had run into with the previous maps, what they would face next would not be something that Qu Ling Yue would be able to handle.

Qu Ling Yue's aptitude in her spirit powers might be considered to have been highly gifted for people in the Lower Realm, but in the eyes of this bunch with their demonic growth, she was still too weak. All the dangers that they would be facing, would not be suitable for Qu Ling Yue to be a part of at all.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head and said: "It depends on her choice. If she wants to remain here, she will just continue to stay within the Thousand Beast City. If not, I will have her go to the Qi Kingdom and seek out my Grandfather."

Qu Ling Yue was a really nice girl, and she shouldn't be made to suffer all this. And this was also a rare moment of compassion from Jun Wu Xie.

"Er....." Qiao Chu unconsciously imagined a strange image in his head. Qu Ling Yue goes to the Qi Kingdom, and kneels to greet the

elderly Grandfather Jun, stately clearly “I am the granddaughter in law of your Jun Family”, thinking rather accurately that Grandfather Jun might suddenly find himself so shocked to be completely covered in cold sweat.

Jun Wu Xie always liked to stuff people back to the Lin Palace whenever she felt like it. There were Mu Chen, Yin Yan, and then there was also Mu Qian Fan. Now Qu Ling Yue was going to be added on to the list..... Qiao Chu really had to take his hat off to Jun Wu Xie for this strange habit she had developed.

“That might work. Hope she makes a full recovery.” Fan Zhuo nodded slightly, in agreement to how Jun Wu Xie was going to deal with the situation. They could see that Jun Wu Xie was giving Qu Ling Yue preferential treatment and that must have been due to the guilt Jun Wu Xie felt towards Qu Ling Yue.

For Qu Ling Yue to gain a good refuge, it would also take part of the worry and guilt off Jun Wu Xie’s mind.

“Then just leave this matter in our hands to go handle it, I guarantee that we’ll make it a grand affair, and it would not disgrace Qu Ling Yue in anyway.” Fei Yan said confidently, thumping his chest in assurance.

Jun Wu Xie nodded. She hoped to give Qu Ling Yue a grand and magnificent wedding, one that would allow Qu Ling Yue to hold her head up before the people of the Thousand Beast City, to make every single one of them see, that Qu Ling Yue was a person Jun Xie stood behind, and no one was to bully her!

Chapter 1133: “Getting a Wife (3)”

Very soon, a heart inspiring piece of news spread very quickly throughout the Thousand Beast City. Jun Xie who pulled the Thousand Beast City out from the fiery pits of their certain demise was actually going to wed the Thousand Beast City’s Young Miss, Qu Ling Yue!

Once the news spread, the waves swept through the city immediately!

If it had been before that incident had happened and Jun Wu Xie made such a decision, everyone in the Thousand Beast City would have raised both their hands in approval, but now, the ordeal that Qu Ling Yue had gone through had already reached everyone’s ears, they had not even been agreeable for Qu Ling Yue to become the Grand Chieftain, so how would they be willing to see the saviour in their hearts wed a girl with a tainted past?

Soon after, the nosy parkers within the Thousand Beast City started gossiping about the matter with some of them even running to the Heavenly Cloud Chambers to ask Jun Xie to “think it over”.

But regarding those words, Jun Wu Xie couldn’t even be bothered to hear them.

When those voices of dissent reached a crescendo, an incident made those skeptical voices immediately disappear.

Among those favoured men who had run out from the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, a good half number of them had suddenly died within a night. The way those men had died were horrifying and those that died were those who had touched Qu Ling Yue. Beside the corpses of those men, were placed with a black jade badge carved with the character “Xie”.

That was undeniably a warning to everyone.

Jun Wu Xie used the most direct approach and the most blood filled method, to quell all the doubts, and to let everyone know clearly what her stand was.

Qu Ling Yue, would definitely be Jun Xie's wife!

If anyone dared say one word otherwise, they would end up sharing the same fate as those favoured men who loved to wag their tongues so much!

In an instant, the sounds of gossip within the Thousand Beast City about Qu Ling Yue quickly dissipated a whole lot. Although there were still small tiny voices debating it in private, nobody dared come out in the open to say anything carelessly.

Fei Yan had together with the Fiery Blaze Clan, lit the streets and lined them with buntings, hanging up red lanterns, decorated everywhere with red silk and gauze, shrouding the entire Thousand Beast City, within a celebratory air.

Towards Jun Xie's decision, Xiong Ba was naturally highly comforted and he was only too happy to coordinate with Fei Yan. Even when the other Clan Chiefs did not help, Xiong Ba mobilised every single man within the Fiery Blaze Clan, working very hard to make it the grandest affair they could.

Three days passed in a blink and at dusk on that day, from outside the gates of the Thousand Beast City in a ten mile radius, it was completely filled with fiery red flowers.

Ten miles of a flowery sea, the grandiose setting to receive the bride, had sent many of the young girls' heart absolutely green with envy!

They wished so much that they would be able to take that place!

From within that golden dusk, "Jun Wu Xie" rode a magnificent white horse, stretching out behind him in a continuous long line the team who came to receive the bride, treading upon the sea of flowers, approaching against the breeze, welcomed under the rain

of falling petals, as they slowly came into the Thousand Beast City!

On top of the Thousand Beast City's gates, Xiong Ba was highly moved as he stared at everything before him, and hot tears immediately filled his eyes. He knew why Jun Xie was doing all this, but he had not thought that Jun Xie would set it up in such a grand fashion. Throughout their entire past, the previous generations of all the Young Miss of the Thousand Beast City, when they had wed, which one among them had enjoyed such unmatched treatment!

A ten mile wide sea of flowers! It had filled the air within the Thousand Beast City with a sweet fragrance, that faint scent, tugging at the heartstrings of many a young girl's.

That was a dream wedding, that many young girls could only dream of!

The fiery colours of the flowers shone with the slanting golden rays of dusk, stretching from outside the city to the center of the city. The red lanterns hung high, waving within the fluttering shower of petals, beautiful as a painting. That scene, became what all the young girls within the Thousand Beast City yearned for forever after, what they dreamed of in their lives, wishing fervently to be treated the same way, even for just a small fraction of this.

Chapter 1134: “Getting a Wife (4)”

Before this, those who had still been secretly thinking whether Jun Xie would just wed Qu Ling Yue carelessly in haste to merely get it out of the way, had upon seeing the extremely grand and elaborate team for the reception, immediately shut their mouths.

They could only silently grit their teeth, and look upon the girl they held in shame, as she was given to enjoy the wedding that all the girls could only dream of!

Within the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, Qu Ling Yue was dressed in an intense, fiery red wedding dress, standing highly ill at ease by the window. Outside the tightly locked window, the celebratory sounds of gongs and cymbals floated in, as her nervous hands tugged hard at the elaborately and intricately embroidered wedding dress, her hands covered in cold sweat.

With visibly trembling hands, she finally summoned enough courage to push open the window!

In the instant the window was opened, bright red flower petals fluttered in with the incoming rush of the breeze onto her face, as she saw the Thousand Beast City covered in a sea of flowery red, an innumerable amount of flowers having lit up the city who had just come out from a terrifying crisis, the intoxicating fragrance of flowers seeping deep into her nose!

The breeze gently blew through her hair, and her eyes stared wide, as she took on the breathtakingly beautiful scene right before her eyes.

The enchanting flowery sea mesmerized her eyes, everything seemingly a dream to her, so beautiful she wouldn't be able to bear waking up from it.

“Like it?” A voice slightly tinged with a slight chill sounded out behind Qu Ling Yue suddenly.

Qu Ling Yue turned around in surprise, immediately seeing Jun Xie standing at the opened door, both arms crossed, looking calmly at her amidst the clamour.

Having avoided Jun Xie for so many days, but that very countenance that had been etched deep right into her heart and bones had not been wiped away in the slightest. In that moment that she saw Jun Wu Xie, her eyes suddenly shone with panic tinged with a sliver of bashfulness.

Even when she knew very well that the figure there was just like her, both of them girls, but without knowing why, Qu Ling Yue was still unable to quell that palpitation in her heart, as she looked upon the face of Jun Xie, her heart still beating madly as it always did when seeing “him”, the surge of emotions quickly turning her face red.

“You..... you don’t need to do this..... I know..... you are doing it for my own good.....” Qu Ling Yue stumbled over her words, her head lowered, suddenly feeling she was rather despicable. She understood the reason why Jun Wu Xie was doing this, and knew that Jun Wu Xie was a girl, but deep down in her heart, she still could not eliminate that wishful longing.....

Just for that one moment would be enough, even if she had to die the next second, she only wished..... to let this dream, last that little longer.

She didn’t want to wake, really..... don’t want to wake.

Just her remain within her despicable greed for this bits of bliss..... just a little bit.....

“You look, really ravishing today.” Jun Wu Xie said seriously, staring at Qu Ling Yue.

Qu Ling Yue’s eyes stared widely, as a cool gust blew in from outside the window, bringing in with it a flurry of flower petals, that swirled between her and Jun Wu Xie, making it such an

enchanting sight that made one just wish they could make time freeze at that moment.

Jun Wu Xie touched her nose and coughed lightly to say: “Today the person going through the rites for the ceremony will be Hua Yao, as I..... do not know anything about all these. But rest assured, that I am still the one marrying you.”

Qu Ling Yue’s eyes flashed briefly, her face red as the night’s banquet hall. She lowered her head, and nodded obediently.

“If you are ready, then go downstairs first.” Jun Wu Xie said.

“Alright.” Qu Ling Yue’s head was still lowered, not daring to lift it up to look at Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie did not have much more to say anyway and turned to walk out from the room. But she had just barely gone out Qu Ling Yue’s sight when she was wrapped up into a familiar embrace.

“I had not known that Little Xie could coax people so well.” Jun Wu Yao said through narrowed eyes, as he smiled at Jun Wu Xie.

Chapter 1135: “Getting a Wife (5)”

Jun Wu Xie calmly picked up the little black cat upon her shoulder and brought it before Jun Wu Yao’s eyes.

“It taught me.” Jun Wu Xie said expressionlessly.

The little black cat immediately cringed up into a helpless ball, trying its hardest to put on a most innocent looking pair of eyes it could before Jun Wu Yao, but deep within its heart, it was scolding its Mistress a million times for having betrayed it.

[Does she want it to really die! ?]

[She must have wanted it to be slaughtered! !]

Jun Wu Yao’s eyes narrowed, as it eyed the little black cat that was trembling so hard it almost fainted. Lifting one hand, he picked up the little black cat by its soft furry skin, and tossed it away carelessly.....

The little black cat made like a black shooting star, flying through the air, the corners of its eyes shimmering with sorrowful tears.

Fortunately Ye Mei at the side caught it in his arms, preventing the little black cat from getting its mouth filled with mud.

“Don’t learn such things from it, you might just pick up those bad traits.” Jun Wu Yao said with a laugh as he held Jun Wu Xie in his arms.

The little black cat within Ye Mei arms already had its face filled with tear streaks.

[How was that picking up bad traits! !]

Jun Wu Xie looked at Jun Wu Yao, and after ascertaining that he was “being normal” today, she heaved a quiet sigh of relief inside. She had no doubt, that if Jun Wu Yao was feeling just like he had three days ago, what would have painted the Thousand Beast City

red today, would not be a sea of flowers, but a sea of blood instead.

“Want to go watch?” Jun Wu Xie asked.

Jun Wu Yao shook his head.

“With such a noisy and boisterous affair, Little Xie wouldn’t enjoy it would you?” Asking him to go watch Hua Yao carrying Jun Xie’s face to go get married with Qu Ling Yue, he really wasn’t patient enough to put up with that, even though..... that face wasn’t Jun Wu Xie’s true countenance.

The little black cat secretly watched Jun Wu Yao and Jun Wu Xie in terror.

[Mistress, please don’t give him any silly ideas. Don’t you see that this demonic lord becomes insanely terrifying when he becomes overtaken by jealousy?]

[If he really went, the banquet will be awashed in blood!]

In the end, Jun Wu Xie wasn’t able to go witness “her” wedding with Qu Ling Yue, but had gone back to her room with Jun Wu Yao, to discuss about the hopelessly dry topic of her recent progress in spirit powers.

Meanwhile, in the other area of the Heavenly Cloud Chambers, it was highly joyous and festive, Qu Ling Yue came in wearing a big red veil, the red silk covering over her head, as she carried out the ceremonial rites, “to be wedded” to Hua Yao disguised as Jun Xie.

For this wedding, Jun Wu Xie had even employed a highly energy taxing skill with her silver needles, that would allow Qu Wen Hao to temporarily revert back to normal, letting him personally witness his daughter having found her own place she “belonged and had settled into.”

After the rites were finished, Qu Ling Yue was sent into the newlyweds’ conjugal chambers.

Hua Yao was dragged by Xiong Ba and his men to drink with

them and as the drinks went on for the third round, Xiong Ba and his men were already mighty tipsy and the large towering man fell sobbing loudly right upon Hua Yao's shoulder, bemoaning how he had let down Jun Xie and done her wrong, heaping high praise upon Jun Xie's ancestors of eight generations above, thanking Jun Xie for saving the Thousand Beast City, and for having rescued Qu Ling Yue.....

However, all this was received on Jun Xie's behalf by Hua Yao, and fortunately Hua Yao could hold his liquor rather well, so he had not been driven into incoherent drunkenness by the round after round of toast proffered up to him.

As the Thousand Beast City revelled under that highly festive and joyous atmosphere, outside their gates, a team of soldiers clad in light armour had suddenly arrived. They rode upon tall war horses, standing within the sea of flowers that filled the outside of the Thousand Beast City's gates.

The youth at the forefront was handsome as he stared in puzzlement at the celebratory atmosphere within the Thousand Beast City, his eyes looking rather surprised, as the other youth atop another horse at his shoulder similarly had shocked eyes as he stared inside the Thousand Beast City.

“Royal Brother, could the Thousand Beast City be celebrating a happy occasion?”

The other youth narrowed his eyes slightly and said: “Regardless of whatever is happening, we must definitely deliver the news into Jun Xie's hands. I hope he..... has not yet left the Thousand Beast City.”

Chapter 1136: “Flames of War Rise (1)”

Just as the night merriment was well underway, a team of people silently entered the city.

The guards from the gates immediately made their way towards the Heavenly Cloud Chambers to inform the various Clan Chiefs but as the wedding banquet was already more than halfway through, the Clan Chiefs had already fallen unconscious with drink and with no other choice left, they could only deliver the news to Qu Ling Yue who was sitting within the newlyweds' conjugal room.

With Jun Xie's grand reception of Qu Ling Yue as his bride, no one within the Thousand Beast City now dared to disrespect her.

Qu Ling Yue who was sitting alone within the room had immediately pulled her red veil off her head upon receiving the news and went nervously towards Jun Wu Xie's room.

“Jun Xie! People from the Fire Country have arrived!” Qu Ling Yue shouted anxiously, as she stood outside the door.

The room door was opened and Jun Wu Xie appeared before Qu Ling Yue.

“Fire Country?” Jun Wu Xie was slightly surprised.

Qu Ling Yue nodded. “It seems to be Lei Chen and Lei Xi and they have brought their men as well. They said they need to see you for something urgent.”

Jun Wu Xie raised up an eyebrow and went silent for a moment before she said: “Got it. I'll go see them now.”

It was a day of joyous celebration for the Thousand Beast City and she did not want the Fire Country's military to come into the city. She immediately made her way towards the Thousand Beast City's gates and Jun Wu Yao accompanied her.

Outside the city's gates, Lei Chen was seated atop his tall horse, his good looking face traced with anxiety. He peered anxiously inside through the gates when finally, he saw the figure of Jun Xie appear!

"Royal Brother! It's His Majesty!" Lei Xi exclaimed excitedly, as Lei Chen quickly jumped off his horse and without waiting for Jun Xie to come near, he hurried forward instead.

"Your humble vassal pays his respects to Your Majesty!" Lei Chen came before Jun Xie, and immediately fell to his knees to pay his respects.

Jun Wu Xie was already aware that after she left, the Fire Country had actually unilaterally plunked the crown upon her head but towards a throne forced upon her like this, she wasn't the least bit interested.

"I am not your Majesty, and you do not have to pay respects to me." Jun Wu Xie said coldly.

Lei Chen stood up, not bothered by Jun Xie's cold indifference.

"Before Your Majesty refuses us, there is one matter I would like Your Majesty to understand first before deciding whether to be the Fire Country's Emperor."

"What is it?" Jun Wu Xie asked looking at Lei Chen.

Lei Chen explained: "Some days ago, we received news that four countries led by the Condor Country had officially initiated an invasion upon the Qi Kingdom!"

The moment Lei Chen's words came out, Jun Wu Xie's eyes immediately grew wide.

The Condor Country's might in the Lower Realm, was inferior only to the Fire Country, recognized as the second mightiest country within the Lower Realm. But it was different from the Fire Country who was firmly entrenched as the supreme force. The Condor Country had always been working to annex its

neighbouring smaller countries at its borders and they were very high handed in their ways, always showing their fondness to initiate a war. If not for the Fire Country stable and resilient might, the Condor Country would surely have already stretched their claws upon the lands of the Fire Country.

Just some time ago, the Condor Country had once again gathered together an allied army, to combine forces with the three other country neighbouring the Qi Kingdom, to invade into the Qi Kingdom from four different directions!

Jun Wu Xie's head suddenly spun. The Rui Lin Army were undeniably strong, but faced with an attack from four separate armies, and their borders being invaded from four different sides, the impossibly steep and arduous predicament they were in was blatantly obvious!

"I remember that the Young Miss Jun you invited to our country from before was from the Lin Palace of the Qi Kingdom. The Rui Lin Army under the Lin Palace's command is the Qi Kingdom's primary force and I thought..... that you should know about this." Lei Chen said as he looked at Jun Xie. He had travelled day and night with Lei Xi without stopping to rest, just to deliver this piece of news in the shortest time possible into the hands of Jun Xie, because he believed that the relationship between Jun Xie and Jun Wu Xie was not just one between mere acquaintances.

Knowing that the Lin Palace was in trouble, Jun Xie would definitely not just sit back and watch.

Chapter 1137: “Flames of War Rise (2)”

“Why would the Condor Country mobilize their military against the Qi Kingdom?” Jun Wu Xie asked with her eyes narrowed as the blood within her body felt as if they were about to congeal. Although the Qi Kingdom is strong and the Rui Lin Army a highly ferocious force, but to face against an attack on four fronts in a situation where the enemy soldiers from each country numbering more than the Qi Kingdom’s, Jun Wu Xie could not convince herself that the Qi Kingdom would be able to withstand such a maniacal invasion.

Lei Chen shook his head. “The reason for the Condor Country’s invasion is not known.”

“How is the situation in the Qi Kingdom now?” Jun Wu Xie asked, her words coming out in a torrent.

“Very pessimistic. The Condor Country had secretly liaised with the other three countries and the invasion had happened suddenly and they had attacked on the same day. Although the Qi Kingdom’s Emperor had tried hard to resist the onslaught, wanting to suppress the ferocious attack from the four countries, as they say two fists can’t defend against four hands, being surrounded on four sides, many have fallen and the much of their borders have been swallowed up by half. The Qi Kingdom now intends to pull back their forces to forgo parts of their borders and consolidate their strength, to retain power for a final battle. But from what I had seen, for the Qi Kingdom to push back the four country allied army this time, would be quite impossible.” Lei Chen said with a heavy sigh. With the Qi Kingdom, he respected their Rui Lin Army the most. But with just a hundred thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers, how could they possibly overcome the oppression from a enormous million soldier army?

The hand hidden within Jun Wu Xie’s sleeves were tightly clenched into fists, her nails digging deeply into the soft flesh of

her palms. Her eyes were not flashing with icy frost and every single muscle on her was tensed up.

Lei Chen quietly observed Jun Xie's reaction and what he saw surprised him. Jun Xie had always been calm and immovable but today, he saw that his eyes had changed completely.

"You came here to find me just to tell me this?" Jun Wu Xie turned to Lei Chen and asked with her eyes narrowed.

Lei Chen replied: "That is not the case. Your humble vassal has just one question. Would Your Majesty want us to rescue the Qi Kingdom from its quandary?"

Jun Wu Xie looked at Lei Chen coldly.

"What if I do."

Lei Chen then said grandly: "The Qi Kingdom and the Fire Country had no dealings between them before. With the Qi Kingdom facing its calamity, the Fire Country has no reason to interfere. But if our ruler wants to mobilize our military to lend assistance, then our million strong army in the Fire Country awaits Your Majesty's orders! As long as you are willing to rule! The Fire Country's army will be yours to control!"

Lei Chen was taking a gamble. The Heavens have presented him with such a perfect opportunity, a chance to make Jun Xie accept the Fire Country's throne willingly. Although Jun Xie held great power, but to fight against an army with a million soldiers, with just one person's power and his several companions, would still be impossible.

Under these Heavens, the only thing that could resolve the desperate crisis of the Qi Kingdom, would only be the highly prosperous and mighty Fire Country with their ever ready million lions!

Jun Wu Xie stared at Lei Chen silently, and did not immediately respond. Her icy gaze swept over Lei Chen's face. She understood

that Lei Chen had tirelessly rushed all the way here personally to come to the Thousand Beast City, just to deliver this piece of news and present this exchange of conditions right before her, to have her choose.

To save the Qi Kingdom, she had to hold the might of the powerful military in her hands, and what she lacked most now, had been delivered to her by Lei Chen personally right before her eyes now.

Lei Xi and Lei Chen were kneeling side by side before Jun Xie and towards Lei Chen's determination to stake everything on this one bet, Lei Xi was feeling highly nervous about it. He wasn't too familiar with Jun Xie, and did not know the slightest about any relationship that Jun Xie would have with the Qi Kingdom. Why was his Royal Brother so certain that Jun Xie would agree to take on the mantle and become their Emperor because of the Qi Kingdom's crisis?

Jun Wu Xie drew in a deep breath. "All of you would truly be willing to become the sword for me to hold in my hand?"

Upon hearing that, Lei Chen's face immediately lit up with delight.

"YES!"

Chapter 1138: “Flames of War Rise (3)”

“Alright!” Jun Wu Xie said suddenly: “I am willing to claim the throne.”

Lei Chen and Lei Xi were ecstatic and they immediately paid their respects in a grand voice.

“Your loyal vassals welcomes Your Majesty!”

The frosty chill deep within Jun Wu Xie’s eyes had not melted away as she turned and looked at the Thousand Beast City covered with the sea of flowers.

She had just rescued the Thousand Beast City out of the abyss and now, she must definitely liberate her hometown from the flames of war!

[Nobody, is allowed to harm her family in the slightest!]

[Or else, even if she had to die for it, she would still make them pay for it with their blood!]

“Your Majesty! While your humble servant was making his way here, I have already readied the army. All that is needed now is for Your Majesty to return to the Imperial Capital with your loyal vassal to hold the ceremony for the ascension to the throne and we’ll be able to mobilize the army to go to the Qi Kingdom the very next day!” Lei Chen went on to say. He had placed his stakes right! Jun Xie really did value the Qi Kingdom highly.

“Alright.” Jun Wu Xie nodded. The Qi Kingdom was facing a huge crisis and Grandfather and Uncle were trapped within the smoke over the flames of war. She will not sit back and watch the fire burn!

That very night, on his very own big day, Jun Xie announced that he was returning to the Fire Country and Qu Ling Yue who was still dressed in her wedding dress expressed her willingness to accompany him and then delegated to Xiong Ba to take charge of

all affairs, big and small within the Thousand Beast City temporarily. Thereafter, disappearing into the night, Jun Wu Xie, Jun Wu Yao, Qiao Chu and the rest of the companions stepped forth on their way, to go back to the Fire Country.

On this journey, once the first step was taken, they would not have any opportunity to turn back again.

The companions who set out that night, had absolutely no idea of the kind of terrifying change, that going into this war, would bring about to their future.

Jun Xie returned to the Fire Country under a lot of fanfare and the ceremony for the ascension was held the very same day. The Empress Dowager made an appearance personally and before all the kneeling officials who bowed to pay their respects, Jun Wu Xie, resplendent in a golden dragon robe, stepped up onto the throne in the Fire Country which symbolized supreme and unparalleled authority!

And on the very same afternoon that the newly minted Emperor ascended to the throne, as their ruler, the first decree that was handed down.....

Was to mobilize the army to save the Qi Kingdom!

.....

Inside the Qi Kingdom's borders, beacons of war burned everywhere. The sounds of blades clashing continued non stop, and under the spreading fires of war, the lands lay charred and ravaged, with bodies burnt black everywhere. Upon these bodies, were black coloured armour, who still gripped their weapons in their hands upon death, who fought the enemy to a bloody end, never admitting defeat!

“Hurry! Send the injured into the city!”

“Where's the physician! Physicians! Send someone over here! The people here are not going to last much longer!”

“Who can save my son! Please save him!”

“Father!”

The pitiful cry of despair howled into the skies in a city somewhere in the central region. Soldiers who had just pulled back from the frontlines were wounded and weary, the ground they stepped upon leaving trails of blood imprinted from under their feet, dragging their broken arms and some with missing limbs, the stench of blood hanging so heavily around them that it was nauseating.

Several cities at the borders of the Qi Kingdom had been breached consecutively in the past few days and the enemy had their morale boosted as they rode the momentum, striking hard at the Qi Kingdom's forces in a mad rush in several battlefields. At that time, the entire Qi Kingdom had been washed in blood by the rushing tide.

Mu Chen stood within the city, his hands fully stained with blood. The blood had all come from the wounded soldiers he had treated. The horrors of war had opened the eyes and shocked the heart of this man who had spent half his life as a youth within the Qing Yun Clan. His pair of hands had been soaked in blood for several days on end, the soldiers who had struggled so hard to live under them, the writhing citizens who had been dragged into the merciless ravages of war, the incessant and unending cries and screams, crept into his mind like the demon of his dreams.

Mu Chen had thought that in the Qing Yun Clan, he had seen the most horrifying side of the world, till the Qi Kingdom was invaded on four sides, he realized that he had been wrong.

Under the Heavens, there wasn't nothing more cruel than war!

Chapter 1139: “Flames of War Rise (4)”

“Master! You have not even shut your eyes for several days and nights! Leave this to us and go get some rest first.” The disciples who have followed Mu Chen to come to the Qi Kingdom said worriedly as they looked at the pale faced Mu Chen.

With the Qi Kingdom under attack, the Lin Palace had become the main force to bear the brunt of the attacks and the entire Lin Palace, from Duke Lin Jun Xian, to the last soldier in the Rui Lin Army, they had all rushed at the first instance to the various battlefronts. Mu Chen had not forgotten what he promised Jun Xie. For three years, he was willing to serve under the Lin Palace and hence, when Jun Xian and Jun Qing had set forth, he had volunteered his services and gone to the battlefields where the fighting was most intense.

Although he did not possess much fighting prowess, but he possessed the ability to heal. He sought not to kill a hundred of the enemies, but merely to save as many lives as he could, to allow the Qi Kingdom to have a chance to breathe a little, faced with the oppression of the enemy’s enormous army.

Even if he ended up just a cup of water before a burning ox cart, he was willing to take on the highly arduous task.

“No need.” Mu Chen waved his hand dismissively. The cries of the injured rang out all around him and the blood that stained his hands had turned cold, causing his hands to shiver uncontrollably. He could no longer remember how many people’s wounds he had treated in this period. He had always prided himself on his excellent knowledge in Medicine but in these past few days, right before his eyes and under his hands, the number of people dying was growing more and more. The warriors who returned from the battlefields presenting harrowing scenes of heinous wounds and spilled guts had made his heart rise into his throat.

He was here because of his promise to Jun Xie but when he saw the soldiers of the Qi Kingdom still charging onto the battlefield without the slightest hesitation even when they knew they were outmatched by the enemy, engaging the enemy soldiers that outnumbered them more than ten to one ferociously, Mu Chen's heart was completely astounded!

He vividly remembered, on the first day that the battles had started, the allied army of the four countries had appeared with no prior signs. The Qi Kingdom's borders were hit hard and it was very late in the night, under a torrential downpour. He had been sitting within the Lin Palace and chatting with Jun Xian when Long Qi suddenly rushed in anxiously.

[Duke Lin! The eastern region is under attack by a large army from the Crescent Country!]

[The southern border is being invaded by the Prosper Country!]

[In our northern border, the Shire Country have mobilized their army!]

[From the west, the Condor Country has initiated an attack against us!]

It had been four sentences, but it was like four bolts of lightning, that tore the peace in the Qi Kingdom into shreds!

The oppressive strength of a four country allied army, a million lions rushing in like a tide that crashed against the Qi Kingdom's borders on multiple sides, on that cold and wet night, catching the Qi Kingdom unawares.

Emergency reports came in from all sides! The Qi Kingdom had within one night, lost seventeen cities, and one hundred thousand soldiers had been mercilessly killed in battle!

That night, the Qi Kingdom's borders had blood mixed into the torrential rain, forming into blood red streams, spreading over the lands and into the soil along the Qi Kingdom's borders!

On that night, the Rui Lin Army had equipped themselves overnight and Jun Xian had gone into the Palace to request for a decree to mobilize the army. One hundred thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers, led by Jun Xian, Jun Qing, Long Qi, and another general to lead their men to go in the four compass directions in the Qi Kingdom, to ride their horses through the night, swiftly rushing towards the different battlefronts!

Without the slightest and most minute hesitation, the Rui Lin Army had moved out that very night. Mu Chen still remembered, when Long Qi had brought in the report on the estimated number of the enemy soldiers, Jun Qing's eyes had flashed with shock.

An enemy army more than ten times the size of theirs.

A million lions!

With one hundred thousand Rui Lin Army, how were they going to push them back!

This battle, if they went, would result in certain death with no chance to live!

However!

From the top all the way down to the last man at the bottom of the Rui Lin Army, not a single man backed out. They slipped into the black metal light armour, swords gripped in their hands, and rode into the rain straight towards the various battlefields!

Mu Chen could still remember. On the night, when the one hundred thousand Rui Lin Army Soldiers had moved out from their army barracks, just how straight and stalwart their backs had been. He had been standing within the icy cold rain as he watched these men famed as the most ferocious strike force, masters of blood and iron, a prologue to their return to the battlefield!

Chapter 1140: “Flames of War Rise (5)”

A hundred thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers threw themselves into the battlefield. Mu Chen did not know how many among them would be able to return alive, or should it be said..... among them, would anyone even return.....

“The Condor Country’s army is charging in! Everyone abandon the city! Move back immediately!” His entire figure covered in blood, the general shouted as he rushed to the city’s gates. One of his arms had been cut off and he gripped a long spear in the other. His face was filled with gory slash wounds and he was shouting for everyone within the city to immediately evacuate.

Everyone within the city were stunned. They had not expected that the Condor Country’s army would reach here in such a short period of time.

“Do not bring anything with you! Just leave immediately! Hurry! Ready the horses! Bring out all the war horses within the city and hand them all over to the children and elderly!” The soldiers within the city quickly responded, immediately arranging for the citizens to retreat.

Mu Chen heard their words and he was shocked, causing him to abandon all concerns to run hurriedly to come before the soldiers.

“Why are you giving up the horses? What are you really trying to do! ?” Mu Chen asked, his eyes staring widely, an ominous feeling beginning to spread within his heart.

The soldier looked at Mu Chen blankly and then said in a hostile voice: “Why are you asking so much nonsense! Scram now if you don’t want to die! We don’t need people who are weaklings just like you here to drag us down! Guards! Send this doctor here away! Don’t let him stay here and shoot his mouth off non stop!”

Immediately, several soldiers chased Mu Chen to the city gates at

the back. Many citizens had already gathered there and the younger children and weaker elderly were pushed up onto the armoured warhorses as the soldiers within the city pulled the gates open, ushering them out hastily, to leave this doomed place far behind.

Mu Chen had adamantly refused to leave, but he was forcefully dragged away by his disciples.

“Master! For them, you have toiled and toiled so hard but they are being so unappreciative now. Why do you still want to bother about them? The Condor Country’s army is coming and we should go now!” The frightened disciples were dragging Mu Chen, as they followed the escaping refugees.

As they saw the last batch of common citizens leaving the city, the soldier who had chased Mu Chen away gave a heavy sigh. He stood by the city’s gates and towards the direction where Mu Chen and the others had left, he solemnly gave a low bow.

“Hey! Why are you still standing around!” A soldier then shouted anxiously.

The soldier immediately replied: “I scolded a benefactor earlier, and was feeling guilty.”

“Moron, what you did was right. If he had not left, do you want him to die here together with us! ? Hurry up! The signal has been raised! Seal the city’s gates and prepare for battle!”

“Let’s move!”

Mu Chen was dragged along as they made their escape, but there was still a persistent nagging feeling that remained in his heart. He kept glancing back in the direction of the city they had just left from and then he suddenly seemed to realize something as his gaze swung around to look at all the common citizens all around him.

And among all the people he saw, there were only common citizens, without a single armoured soldier among them.

“Wait a minute! All the injured soldiers!”

Mu Chen suddenly shouted out in shock. Among the entire group of people, there wasn't a single soldier among them, not even the injured ones who had been treated by him were there with them.

Mu Chen's shout in shock suddenly made everyone freeze.

At the moment that Mu Chen voice fell, a loud crash suddenly sounded from a far distance away!

The city that they had just walked out from not long ago, was suddenly blown up into smithereens right before their eyes. The flames surged towards the sky, painting the dim horizon in a red glow!

Chapter 1141: “Flames of War Rise (6)”

The city that they had just come out from not long ago, was suddenly blown up into smithereens right before their eyes. The flames surged towards the sky, painting the dim horizon in a red glow!

The city was gone.....

In a blink, it had turned into ruins, a scene of fire and destruction as the earth shattering explosion greatly startling their hearts.

A noisy clatter suddenly sounded from among the group of refugees.

A large wicker basket placed upon a horse had suddenly fallen to the ground, and from the basket, a heap of blood stained metal badges had fallen out in a loud clatter.

Mu Chen's eyes stared very hard at the badges and he almost seemed to dash over in a hurry to fall to the ground next to the heap of metal, wiping the blood stains off the badges with his trembling hands.

[The Rui Lin Army, must have.....]

Mu Chen suddenly felt like a lightning bolt had hit him!

Upon the neck of every single Rui Lin Army soldier, hung a name tag just like these. When they died on battlefield and it was difficult to retrieve their bodies, their name tags would then be brought back to their hometowns to be handed over to their families.

Mu Chen had never once thought that the soldiers guarding the city to the death would actually be men from the Rui Lin Army!

Blood and mud had covered the armour they were wearing which did not allow people to see which army they had been from.

Having freed the warhorses, they had already fully intended to

die together with the enemy and with the destruction of the city!

They knew that they would no longer be able to return to their home soil in glory and they had taken the name tags from everyone to place upon one of the horses that was leaving the city, hoping that the name tags that carried their last will would have a chance to be delivered into the hands of their family members.

“Argh! ! !” Mu Chen knelt on the ground and screamed with his head tilted back facing into the sky, as hot tears rolled down from the corners of his eyes.

He had promised Jun Xie that he would support the Rui Lin Army well. Although he had usually not interacted much with the Rui Lin Army, but everything he had done in this period had been to strengthen them. And today, he had not even known that the men who had shared the same battlefield with him were men from that very ferocious fighting unit!

At that moment, everyone was silent. After seeing the pile of name tags, they all understood that the Rui Lin Army soldiers within the city had expended their own lives to gain them time for their escape. They had used their own blood and even their lives to write the Rui Lin Army an immortal song of praise!

“Master.....” Those disciples who had scolded the soldiers for being heartless and unfeeling just before they left now had their heads hanging down in shame.

The soldiers’ rude and brash demeanour had exactly been because of the high regard they had for Mu Chen, as they knew that there would only be death for anyone who remained in the city, and hence, they had said such hurtful words to chase Mu Chen out of the city.

A light drizzle then fell from the sky, to splatter upon the land, turning everyone’s clothes wet. The icy cold rain had in an instant, turned into a heavy downpour, the drops of rain splashing upon the name tags, drumming out clear sounding clinks, washing off

the blood and mud off little by little.

Mu Chen lowered his head and carefully picked up those name tags to put them all back into the basket. He then placed the basket upon the horse and lifted his head, looking into the rain soaked path ahead of them.

“Let’s go! We cannot let their sacrifice be in vain!”

Their hearts feeling as if it had been cut by a knife, they could not afford to stop themselves from continuing to go forward. They needed to live, to carry on the will of the Rui Lin Army soldiers who had remained behind in that city, to bring back the name tags imbued with their brave souls and strong will, to be delivered into the hands of their family!

Under the heavy downpour, the group that had stopped picked themselves up again, moving forward as the icy cold rain washed over them, but failing to wash away the sadness and pain in their hearts. The path beneath their feet was muddy and treacherous, but the unforgettable memory of the Rui Lin Army soldiers in the city, remained in their hearts as the eternal protectors of the Qi Kingdom!

Chapter 1142: “Flames of War Rise (7)”

On the battlefield in the west, the city had been extensively wrecked by the enemy soldiers. Mu Qian Fan stood within the military camp, watching as the Rui Lin Army leaders planned out the upcoming battle upon the map. Outside, the sounds of battle raged on incessantly, the cries from the slaughter ringing continuously in their ears.

Under the large tent, the armour of all the leaders were stained with blood but they did not even have the time to clean it off. In such an intense battle, every minute and every single second they had was fought for with the very lives of their soldiers.

“The Condor Country’s allied army’s numbers are too great! Our brothers are not able to hold them back!” One of the leaders smashed a fist upon the table in anger, blood immediately flowing out from the skin around his knuckles.

Another one of the leaders had his face creased up in a deep frown, as he stared at the situation upon the map, his expression highly cautious.

“Have the citizens of the Clear Moon City been evacuated?” He asked.

“A large part of them have been evacuated. This city here is becoming indefensible. Are we going to retreat?”

“There is nowhere for us to retreat to anymore. This road leads straight to the Imperial City and if we pull back, the Condor Country’s allied army will go straight for the golden dragon. The defence of the Imperial City is not yet fully prepared and if they were attacked by the Condor Country now, they would not be able to hold the fort.....” The Commander’s brows were knotted tightly together, his eyes almost boring two holes into the map, wanting merely to find an avenue where they could just hope for a victory against the overwhelming odds.

Unfortunately, the number of soldiers they held were too few, and were completely inadequate to resist the Condor Country's enormous army.

Although the Rui Lin Army was highly powerful, but their army of one hundred thousand had been split into four battlefields while the barracks in every outpost had only about twenty thousand men. Even if they combined with all the other forces in the Qi Kingdom, they would still not be a match for the Condor Country's allied forces.

The Qi Kingdom while in the hands of the previous Emperor, squandered away too much time, where the Qi Kingdom's army had missed out on the best opportunity for training. Even when Mo Qian Yuan had tried to rectify it immediately after he ascended into the throne, but within just this one short year, wanting to train up the other forces of the Qi Kingdom to become like the Rui Lin Army as Masters of iron and blood, was just plain wishful thinking.

And they could not afford to retreat anymore. If they pulled back one more step, their Imperial City would be in crisis and once the Imperial City was taken, the Qi Kingdom..... would have completely fallen!

As was the nature of all military men, none of the leaders within that tent was willing to make the decision to retreat. They were all wrecking their brains trying find an opportunity within the crisis.

“We fight! We can only continue to fight them! The Duke left this place in our hands and had also allocated another ten thousand men to us. And with the primary force of the Qi Kingdom's army here with us, if we fail again, how are we going to answer to the trust the Duke and His Majesty has placed in us! ?” The Commander said through gritted teeth.

“We'll beat them till they cry for their mothers! It's just the Condor Country! I will give everything I have to take them on! I

won't lose out once I kill one, and I will have earned with just two of them! If they want to exterminate the Qi Kingdom, then they will have to do it stepping over the bodies of us, the Rui Lin Army!" The leader shouted emotionally, hot blood surging within his chest.

The Qi Kingdom cannot fall! The Rui Lin Army will not fall!

"If our heads roll, it'll just leave a big scar! When we meet back in netherworld, we brothers will reunite and still kick up a storm!"

"Reporting! The Condor Country is charging us on the right!" A soldier said hurriedly, rushing in from outside the tent.

A leader lifted up the strong wine on the table and poured it down his throat. He then turned to the others under the tent and said as he waved: "Brothers! I will make a move first! In the netherworld, I will go open up a path for my brothers!"

Immediately after saying that, he turned and walked outside taking wide strides!

That farewell, was one where they would be parted between life and death, and there was no turning back!

Mu Qian Fan clenched his jaw as he watched, and when he could not hold himself back any longer, he strode up to stand before the Commander.

"This insignificant soldier requests to join the battle!"

The Commander looked at him and shook his head.

"Why! ?" Mu Qian Fan asked, his eyes flaring wide.

Chapter 1143: “Flames of War Rise (8)”

The Commander ignored him and merely said to the soldier who had brought in the report: “Bring a warhorse here and send Brother Mu back to the Imperial City.”

“I’m not going back!” Mu Qian Fan shouted!

“You need to return! You are not a citizen of the Qi Kingdom and the affairs of the Qi Kingdom doesn’t need any outsiders interfering in them!” The Commander said sternly.

Mu Qian Fan had wanted to resist further but inside the Commander’s tent, the other leaders quickly tied him up and strapped him onto a warhorse to send it running into the direction of the Imperial City. Mu Qian Fan’s eyes turned red and bloodshot, turning back to look at the battlefield gradually getting further away from him, watching the Rui Lin Army soldiers who fought back their blood, his heart bleeding.

How he wished to be like them, standing upon the battlefield and defending what is most important to one’s heart with their own two hands!

After Mu Qian Fan left, the Commander let out a heavy sigh within his tent.

Outside the Commander’s tent, emergency reports were being raised as the battle entered its more intense phase.

Inside the Commander’s tent, the military leaders raised their wine cups and threw their heads back to drink. They then bowed to pay their respects to the Commander without a word and then turned to depart.

The Commander stood alone within the tent and watched the stalwart and determined backs of the brothers who had gone through life and death with him, his eyes misted up into a blur by tears. That gaze, was to become his last memory of them, as they

would not be coming back alive.

In the empty Commander's tent, the Commander fell back onto the ground, his hands covering his face, his shoulders shaking faintly, a stifled cry coming out from his throat.

Men's tears do not shed easily, till it really hits the heart!

This battle, went on for three days and three nights. The thirty five thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers who held their position to the death all perished, with not a single one alive. The rest of the Qi Kingdom's army soldiers met their end tragically as well and the entire battlefield was filled with dead bodies, their blood flowing to the ground forming into red streams, meandering through every inch of the lands.

The Condor Country's army's armoured cavalry, stepped over the bodies of the Rui Lin Army soldiers, and attacked the enemy's main camp.

The soldiers at the camp fought with everything they had, using the last vestiges of their strength, to resist against the enemy cavalry.

Finally.....

The Condor Country's Commander in Chief sat atop his towering warhorse, and came to the Rui Lin Army's Commander's tent. Inside the camp, the dead bodies of the Rui Lin Army soldiers were everywhere. His brows knitted up together, as he looked at the Rui Lin Army who were famed to be the most ferocious strike force.

Even as an enemy on the opposing side, he could not help but respect and admire these soldiers of blood and iron.

It had been consecutive days of battle, and the progress of the four country allied forces had been repeatedly impeded and slowed. The other forces of the Qi Kingdom were not worth mentioning but the one that had given him the biggest headache had been the Rui Lin Army who had the least amount of men.

On this battlefield, the Rui Lin Army had totaled only about thirty over thousand. But it was exactly these thirty over thousand men who had properly chomped off three hundred thousand soldiers from his army!

One against ten!

That was what made this force so terrifying!

“Your army has been annihilated. If you surrender, I can spare you your life.” The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief said as he stared at the Commander’s tent. He knew, that the Commander of this troop of Rui Lin Army was seated right inside the tent.

Throughout the entire battlefield, the only soldier of the Rui Lin Army still alive, was only this man!

It was silent inside the Commander’s tent. The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief raised his arm and had his soldiers surround the tent, where they sent thrust the long spears in their hands into the tent on all sides!

A loud clatter sounded!

The Commander’s tent was shredded apart!

However!

A tall towering figure stood right in the middle of the collapsed tent. He was wearing silver armour, a long spear gripped in his hand, a fiery red cape draped carelessly behind him. His eyes were on fire, standing firm as a mountain, the brilliant light of dusk behind him, looking as if he was plated in golden glow.

“The Rui Lin Army only has men who die in battle, and none who surrenders without mettle! Come fight!” The Commander of the Rui Lin Army suddenly thrust out his long spear, unafraid of the soldiers who surrounded him heavily, as he flew right towards the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief!

Chapter 1144: “A Soldier’s Spirit Lives On (1)”

The tempestuous wind howled, kicking up a yellow storm of sand, as the Condor Country’s army flattened the Rui Lin Army’s encampment, making their way towards the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City.

In the Rui Lin Army’s camp, the military tents were set ablaze, the fiery glow shooting upwards, lighting up the dimming skies . In the middle of the raging fires, the Rui Lin Army’s Camp Commander stood erect, his body upright with his unbending back, exemplifying the steel hard will of the most ferocious strike force, never to fall!

Among the roaring flames, he stood tall and proud, countless arrow shafts pierced through his armour, into his body, together with the numerous blade wounds covered all over his body. Blood flowed as if from a spring out from his wounds, down his armour. His eyes had already lost the twinkle they had always held, the light gone out of them. He could no longer see the land he and his men had protected all their lives, and neither could his ears hear the howling of the wind.

Till death, he had not fallen before the enemy, the spirit of a soldier permeating his entire body, his hand gripped around the spear as he stood like a statue erected upon the blood soaked land!

The spear that had morphed from a ring spirit glittered with specks of light under the fire, its owner’s demise not allowing it to remain much longer upon the mortal realm, but.....

Even when the Commander’s blood had fully covered it completely, it was still unwilling, and was refusing to leave.....

Till its final struggles fizzled out completely, the spear gradually began to disappear within the howling wind and the raging flames,

the Commander's stiffened body remained standing with the glow of the fire reflecting off his armour, forever..... and ever..... unyielding, indomitable!

Over thirty thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers annihilated, hundred over thousand Qi Kingdom army soldiers fallen upon the battlefield, their spilled blood causing a thick stench of blood to permeate everywhere throughout the entire piece of land.

The enemy army defeated, their soldiers dead, the Condor Country's army charged straight in, driving themselves into the heart of the Qi Kingdom. Several more cities were thoroughly cleansed by the raging flames of war, as the armoured cavalry of the Condor Country swept through them!

Without the cover from the army, the citizens in the various cities fled in a panic running in all directions, as blood and merciless killing filled their eyes. They were just citizens who did not possess any battle power, and under the Condor Country's merciless blade, they had nowhere to run!

Over ten cities were brutally taken out, without a single survivor left from all of them!

The Condor Country's army was approaching closer and closer to the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City, and the refugees who had fled from many places were weary and exhausted.

"Quick! Get everyone out of the city!" The Lord of the City said on the eve before the Condor Country's army were supposed to reach them, transferring all the citizens within the city out. Upon the city's walls, the soldiers standing guard held their swords in hand as they peered far into the distance, the blood within them boiling, every nerve within their body stretched taut.

[Just a bit more time!]

[Just a little bit more!]

They prayed countless times in their hearts, that they would

have more time, to let their family members escape this hell in purgatory.

Even if there was only the tiniest sliver of hope, they wished that their family would be able to live.

As the citizens were continuously being moved out, a troop of soldiers instead came marching in from the city gates at the back.

“And all of you are?” The Lord of the City asked, his face puzzled, as he busied himself with the citizens’ evacuation.

The leader of the troop of soldiers stepped forth, dressed in light armour, his face well weathered, a grey white beard verifying his advanced years in age, but within that pair of wizened eyes, it could be seen they held a chivalrous glint that shocked one who looked into them!

“My humble self am the previous High General of the Rui Lin Army, Long Zhan! I received news that our army on the frontline were annihilated and I have specially brought some men here to prepare to meet the enemy!” Long Zhan’s eyes were ablaze, not exhibiting the slightest sign of senility nor his advanced age!

The eyes of the Lord of the City widened as he stared in disbelief. The name Long Zhan had rang loudly throughout the entire Qi Kingdom and beyond twenty years ago. That was in the beginning when the Qi Kingdom had just been established, when the Rui Lin Army had been at its pinnacle of glory, with the Rui Lin Army soldiers numbering several times what it was now!

Chapter 1145: “A Soldier’s Spirit Lives On (2)”

At that time, the generals who served directly under Duke Lin, Jun Xian, were all men of extraordinary ferocity. But after the kingdom was established, the reigning Emperor sought to weaken the Rui Lin Army’s power and influence and he forced several generals who carried out outstanding military exploits to step down from their positions, stripping them of their military ranks, to serve as Lords of the City in several small cities in the hinterlands.

A group of generals who had been peerlessly fierce and powerful on the battlefield had had no other choice but to leave the army they had pledged their undying loyalty to because of the jealousy and suspicions of the Emperor, shedding their armour and blades, to go to a tiny city to administer over trivial matters.

And against all those repressive arrangements, no one from the Rui Lin Army said a single word in disparagement. They withdrew from the army cleanly, without a single word of grumbling heard from them.

And Long Zhan who stood before the Lord of the City now, was one of those highly ferocious generals who had been coerced to leave the Rui Lin Army!

And he was also the current Rui Lin Army’s High General, Long Qi’s father!

“Senior General Long Zhan! Why are you..... Why are you.....” The Lord of the City was suddenly at a loss for words. All those generals who had been forced to withdraw then were assigned to faraway poor and barren cities. The city Long Zhan had been in was nowhere close to this place and even though Long Zhan was already so advanced in age, he had still gone on to *cloak himself in stars and wore the moon to dash here speedily through the night.

[*Translator Note from Cloud: (Chinese idiom) I assume it means – carried out through the night tirelessly]

“Although I am no longer a soldier of the Rui Ling Army, but these old bones were shaped and formed under the pummeling from the Rui Lin Army. In the current crisis of war, how could this old bag of bones just sit back and do nothing? This city sits upon the route one must take to get to the Imperial City and the Condor Country will need to pass here to lay siege to the Imperial Palace. Although I and my men are already into our withering years, but giving everything this old bag of bones has, I will still be able to buy us some time.” Long Zhan said, strongly determined.

The Lord of the City was still in shock, but he suddenly realized that Long Zhan had come to appear here because the Rui Lin Army’s spirit still lived deep within his heart. Even though he had left the Rui Lin Army, but the loyalty the Rui Lin Army had branded right into his soul would never be eradicated!

“General Long! Please accept a bow of respect from my humble self!” The Lord of the City immediately knelt, his eyes suddenly red as he lifted his head to look at Long Zhan and said: “I am willing to stand with General Long, to resist the Condor Country’s army!”

Long Zhan guffawed out loud. “Great! As expected of a man from our Qi Kingdom!”

The Lord of the City got up and immediately issued the order for everyone to leave the city after evacuating all the citizens, as this place would soon turn to become the lowest depths of Hell.

However.....

Among all of the city’s soldiers, not a single one shifted a step, as they continued to stand firm to guard their respective positions.

“The country must never fall. We are willing to die and live together with the Qi Kingdom! If with my blood and flesh, I am

able to gain some time for His Majesty, that would be an honour!" The soldiers were strongly determined. Some among them had even just completed their coming of age ceremony and their faces were still slightly tinged with the green of youth.

[But when the country is broken, their home will be gone. When the country is faced with such a crisis, they must not allow themselves to even think of running to live ignobly.]

[Only when the country stands, one has a home!]

If the Qi Kingdom falls, then they will be no different from the homeless ghosts and drifting souls!

"Good! Good! All men of great calibre!" Long Zhan swept his gaze around to look at the hot blooded young men with tears in his old and wizened eyes, feeling as if he had returned to the past all the way where it had all begun, when he and his brothers had established the Rui Lin Army together with Jun Xian.

That same belief, supported and braced them as they climbed out from merciless battles one after another, their very own comrades who had lost their lives, pushing them forward to never take a single step backwards!

"Everyone hear my order! Defend the city with your very lives! We hold till the last breath, however long we can! We need to buy more time for our brothers within the Imperial City!" Long Zhan called out loudly, his trusty sword sealed under years of dust, finally unsheathed once more!

Chapter 1146: “A Soldier’s Spirit Lives On (3)”

Smoke rose in all directions, anguished wails could be heard throughout. The citizens who had escaped from the city were weary and heavy hearted. They could not see hope, nor saw any way forward, and the sounds of slaughter behind them made their legs go weak, but the longing to survive pushed them, with no other choice but to continue to move forward.

“Mother, where is Father?” Huddled inside a basket, a young child stared in fright with a pair of innocent eyes under the rumble of fighting, as he saw the city he had lived peacefully within growing smaller and smaller before his eyes.

The body of the woman who was carrying the basket on her back stiffened, and tears immediately rolled down from her eyes. She did not make a sound, not daring to utter a single sound, but just covered her mouth with her hand, as she stifled the choking sob lodged within her throat.

“Father! Father! Mother, I want Father! Father told me that he will bring me to go ride a horse..... Father said he will teach me martial arts.....” Not getting a response from his mother, the frightened young child could only cry out helplessly. That highly pitiful cry, made everyone in the group fall completely silent.

The child cried helplessly, remembering the image of his father dressed in light armour, tall and imposing, looking like the invincible God of War in his heart. He still remembered those strong arms that would lift him high up in the air, remembering the promise his father had made when he was being carried upon a horse.

The woman could not hold back the grief inside any longer and she crumbled to the ground to cry with her hands covering her face.

Her husband, was a guard in the city. From the moment that he had escorted her and their son out of the city, she knew, that her husband..... will never come back again.

The child continued to cry helplessly, and together with the woman's wail of utter despair, it was as if a heavy chain had been looped around everyone's throat, that made it hard for them to breathe.

A youth who was walking among the group of people clenched up his fists tightly, as blood dripped down through the gaps in between his fingers onto the ground. He suddenly turned himself around, and ran off in the opposite direction from where the group was heading towards!

"Little Tu! Where are you going!" A lady cried out in shock, suddenly in a fluster.

The youth's steps hesitated momentarily and he froze a moment before turning himself around. Upon that still slightly childlike face, was a strong determination.

"Mother, the soldiers of the Qi Kingdom have spilled their blood across the battlefield in order to protect our homes and our country. And now the Condor Country's Army is coming here and the people within the city will not be able to hold them back. I am going back there!"

"You're just a child! What can you do by going back!" The lady's face was filled with horror.

The youth instead replied: "Although I do not possess high spirit power, but I still have my ring spirit! I might not be able to kill much of the enemy foes, but I refuse to believe that if I give it everything I have, I will not be able to take down a single soldier from the Condor Country!"

The youth's words were tinged with a slight childishness of youth, but they still made up a highly shocking declaration!

“I’ll go back together with you!” Another youth came over to stand by his side.

“And me!”

“Count me in!”

“Damn it all! We men of the Qi Kingdom will never be turtles who hide their heads! Any with bloodlust, we’ll all go charging back! Don’t be like a sissy and go hide in another city. I completely despise softies like that!” A brawny man holding a heavy forging hammer roared!

With that one thunderous roar, all the men from within the group stood forward at once. Although they were just common citizens who did not know how to wield a sword, but just as that youth had said, they all still had their Ring Spirits!

Even if they were unable to defeat the enemy, they would still be able to stake their lives on it and every single one enemy taken down was another one enemy less!

If their lives could be given in exchange to lessen a bit of the enemy’s army, it would still lessen that one bit of pressure on the Imperial City!

Hot blood pumped within the chests of the men. They cast a final gaze upon their family and then turned strongly determined to charge all the way back to the city!

Chapter 1147: “A Soldier’s Spirit Lives On (4)”

Inside the military camp, Long Qi stared at the letter he held in his trembling hands that he had just received, his cold hard face showing a crack of his emotions.

“Chief General.....” The Rui Lin Army soldiers were staring worriedly at Long Qi.

Long Qi was silent for a long while before he suddenly stood up. He put the letter on the table and grabbed his cape to secure it upon his shoulders. Picking up his sword, he ran out from the camp and leapt onto his warhorse, charging straight towards the battlefield!

A soldier within the camp looked in shock at Long Qi who had suddenly turned murderous. He turned feeling highly puzzled and saw the letter that Long Qi had left behind on the table. He subconsciously picked up the letter and swept his eyes over it!

In that instant!

Every word on that letter drove the soldier into deeper shock!

[To be opened by: Long Qi, my son]

[Your old man has been relieved of my armour and returned to pasture for many years. Finally, a battle has arrived that allows me to return to the battlefield. Today, I stand together with the Lord of the Green City in battle, swearing to defend the soil of the Qi Kingdom to the death. If you receive this letter, it will mean that your old man’s soul has returned to the Heavens and do not grief when you see this letter. You know that men of the Long Family shed blood and not tears. Our bodies are branded with the Rui Lin Army’s spirit and do not besmirch the Rui Lin Army’s name! I look forward to seeing my son eliminate more of the enemy’s leaders on the battlefield and protect the Qi Kingdom’s empire from being

stolen by thieves!

Long Zhan.

“It’s the Senior General..... The Senior General.....” The soldier fell back to sit upon the ground in shock. Another soldier who was patrolling suddenly saw the first soldier looking like he saw a ghost and he came running inside in a hurry.

“What happened?”

The first soldier’s face was filled with despair as he gripped at his comrade’s sleeve tightly!

“The day before, news that the Green City had been destroyed came in. Do you still remember that!”

The soldier was surprised a moment before he nodded quickly.

The battle at the Green City, was said to be extraordinarily intense. A city that should have been abandoned had suddenly put up a strong and powerful defense!

According to rumours, the people who took part in the battle had not only been the Lord of the Green City and his soldiers, but a powerful troop of reinforcements had joined them. In the end, even all the men of the Green City had turned back after being evacuated to join in with the battle!

A single Green City, had well and proper held the enormous Condor Country Army back for the entirety of three days and three nights!

At the moment the city was breached, a sea of the enemy’s dead bodies lay, and there wasn’t a single person still alive within!

“It was the Senior General! Those reinforcements was actually the Senior General! ! ! Argh! ! ! ! !” The soldier continued to wail in despair.

The other soldier immediately froze, his face quickly overtaken by shock. He could not believe what his own ears had just heard.

“Go stop the Chief General! Go stop him quickly! He has gone to take on the enemy by himself! !”

On the battlefield, Long Qi's eyes saw only red, the maliciously murderous aura flaring out from his entire being, driving all the enemy soldiers back with none daring to take a single step forward!

As his hand lifted, his sword cut down!

Long Qi was like the Reaper on the battlefield, using the endless slaughter and countless blood sprays to numb himself.

Men of the Long Family sheds blood and not tears.....

He knew that from the moment his father had been made to withdraw from the army, he had always longed for the day to come when he would be able to return to the battlefield, to don his armour, to slay the enemy! His father had waded in battles for far too many years, and the soldier's spirit had already been irrecoverably branded into his blood and bones. The day would come where he would finally be able to step into the flames of war, in a brilliant display of his radiant glory on the merciless battlefield!

[Father had been born with the soul of a soldier, to live through the battlefield, to finally die in the battlefield.....]

Long Qi suddenly looked up at the skies, and a roar tore out from deep within his heart!

The long spear gripped within his hand swung in an arc, the blood hanging off the tip scattering across the land!

“I, Long Qi, swear to the Heavens, that as long as there is still one man still alive in the Rui Lin Army, no one can ever think they can take the lands of the Qi Kingdom from us!” Long Qi said as he sat atop his handsome tall stallion, his long spear thumping into the ground, his murderous gaze sweeping over every enemy soldier around him!

Chapter 1148: “A Soldier’s Spirit Lives On (5)”

Consecutive days of fiery war put the Qi Kingdom in a deep quandary. Surrounded on four sides, the Rui Lin Army and the Qi Kingdom’s Army fought bravely, but were finally still not a match for the merciless battering from the four country allied army forces!

Mo Qian Yuan in the Imperial City then issued an order, to have all their forces who were resisting the enemy outside to immediately pull back to the Imperial City, in preparation to make a final stand against the four country allied army.

Initially, the Rui Lin Army soldiers who had moved out from the Imperial City had numbered a hundred thousand. But returning back to the Imperial City, there were only a pitiful twenty thousand of them.....

Eighty thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers had been buried in the battlefield, and on top of that, several hundred thousand soldiers of the Qi Kingdom’s army were lost!

When the army returned to the Imperial City, all the citizens were lined up along the sides of the street, peering at the returning soldiers. All the soldiers who had come back after having fought with their lives on the line, had their armour already turned red with blood. Many of their injured were carried into the city, and not a single one among them did not have clothes free of mud and blood.

Looking at these men who walked in weary and utterly exhausted in order to defend their country’s soil, the citizens in the Imperial City could no longer hold back the anguish in their hearts and many broke down in tears.

A hundred thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers when they left, with

only twenty thousand returning, and the Qi Kingdom's army only numbering about one hundred left.

Six hundred thousand the Qi Kingdom's army had numbered, and that number had diminished by four out of five!

This war had truly taken a dire toll on the Qi Kingdom!

Anxiously anticipating the return of their husbands, the ladies could not find the faces of their beloved. Eagerly anticipating their father's return, the children failed to see those strong shoulders sturdy as a mountain. Worriedly anticipating for their son's return, the elderly could not find those familiar figures!

Four hundred and eighty thousand of the Qi Kingdom's soldiers had not been able to come back alive!

And, this war was still not over! A more deadly battle would descend upon them very soon!

Upon returning, Jun Xian immediately went to the Imperial Palace to see Mo Qian Yuan.

The man who had once fought to secure an empire for the Qi Kingdom, and singlehandedly established the Rui Lin Army, Duke Lin, was now already silver haired. The consecutive days of endless bloody battle had made his face age by a decade in this short span of two weeks.

"Your Majesty!" Jun Xian did not even have time to shed himself off his blood stained armour and he had come straight to the Palace to see the Emperor. Coming into the main hall, he immediately fell to his knees before Mo Qian Yuan and said: "Your vassal has failed Your Majesty's orders, I beg Your Majesty to deliver the punishment!"

Mo Qian Yuan quickly came down from the throne and helped Jun Xian up.

"Duke Lin..... You have already done enough. You have fought valiantly and exhibited the resilience of the Qi Kingdom." Sitting

in his throne, Mo Qian Yuan had continuously received reports from the frontlines everyday. Every single one of those battle report made him highly restless, making him wish he could just jump onto a horse, to throw himself into a bloody battle with the four country allied army to the end!

“Your vassal is ashamed.” Jun Xian’s face was solemn.

Only when one had fought on the frontlines, could he truly know just what kind of a horrifying and hopeless situation the Qi Kingdom was facing.

The Rui Lin Army had under Jun Wu Xie’s and Mu Chen’s careful nursing and strengthening, become much stronger than before. But even when that was the case, faced with a million lions, they were still powerless to resist!

Jun Xian had taken the command from the Commander’s tent, and he had seen countless Rui Lin Army brothers who had fought with him as they waded in blood die upon the battlefield, as their battle front was pushed back by the enemy soldiers a bit at a time, where they had not even been able to retrieve the bodies of their fallen comrades!

“Duke Lin, Heaven has decreed it so, and we have given it everything we’ve got. If the Heavens has determined that our Qi Kingdom is to perish, and we have done everything we’ve could to resist it, then there is no need to blame yourself. If not for you holding back the fronts, we don’t need to mention two weeks. Our Qi Kingdom would not have even held out for seven days, and would have already been obliterated by the four country allied army by now!” Mo Qian Yuan was not trying to comfort Jun Xian, but was speaking the hard truth. The four country allied forces, had a million soldiers from each country, while their Qi Kingdom was small and their military scant. An army of a mere six hundred thousand, how could they hope to hold back such an immensely staggering number of enemies! ?

Chapter 1149: “Blood for Blood (1)”

When the army returned, they did not even have time for any rest. Once all the soldiers came into the city, they had immediately commenced on the final preparations for the upcoming siege!

The four country allied army advanced quickly, and fire beacons were lit all around the Qi Kingdom!

Deep in the night, the guards upon the walls of the Imperial City blew the bugle, signalling the enemy’s attack!

Under the night sky, with the Condor Country commanding them, the forces of three countries had already arrived at the Imperial City. The armies of the three countries gathered and the monumental immensity of the enemy forces was truly terrifying to see!

The decisive battle, was about to begin!

This night, no one was able to get any sound sleep.

.....

At the border of the Qi Kingdom, an enormous army quietly advanced!

Everywhere the army passed, all that they saw was destruction and ruin. The torched and burning battlefields and fallen cities, showed them in no uncertain terms, the intensity of the battles that had taken place.

The armoured cavalry pounded through the blackened lands, and everyone saw the scene before them. They were all soldiers, and they had fought their fair share of battles, but.....

When they saw the mountainous piles of bodies, they could not help themselves but be stunned.

An infantry soldier suddenly stepped upon a broken metal badge. He bent over and picked it up, to wipe off the blood stains upon it.

Upon that broken metal badge, it was clearly inscribed with three characters that read Rui Lin Army!

“Give it to me.” A slightly chill voice suddenly rang out from the front.

The soldier was taken aback but he immediately brought the badge and offered it up with two hands to the young youth riding high up on a massive stallion, right at the forefront of the ranks.

The youth was dressed in silver light armour, his looks not considered to be highly good looking, but the cold and grave expression on his face, made none of them dare show him the slightest disrespect.

The youth held the broken badge in his hand, his thumb rubbing against the protruding characters that read Rui Lin Army, and his icy eyes quickly hardened.

“Report! Your Majesty! Five miles ahead, we’ve discovered an army carrying the banner of the Prosper Country!” The scout had rode his horse back as fast as he could and immediately dismounted to deliver the news.

The youth seated atop the stallion kept the Rui Lin Army badge carefully away and looked up, the frosty eyes quickly filling with chilling murder.

“Prosper Country..... Great. We’ll start with them. Hear my command! Advance quickly at once!”

In the Prosper Country encampment, within the Commander’s tent, the Chief Commander of the Prosper Country’s army was seated leaning back in his chair, as several rather good looking ladies knelt at his feet. The ladies were in a wretched state, their hands and feet shackled with chains, their bodies covered in wounds from a whip. They were citizens of the Qi Kingdom and after their city was overrun by the Prosper Country’s army, they had been taken by their Commander and were put through

inhumane torture.

“Chief Commander, the Condor Country and the rest have already reached the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City. Aren’t we going to move out as well?” An officer of the Prosper Country asked in puzzlement as he looked at his Chief Commander.

The Chief Commander took the wine offered by the lady prisoner and slowly took a sip out from it before he shook his head to say: “Go there for what? When the Qi Kingdom falls, it’s the Condor Country that will get all the benefits anyway. If we go there now, we will just be fighting the battle for them. His Majesty has ordered us to assist the Condor Country to invade the Qi Kingdom, but when the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City falls, he doesn’t allow us to pillage and plunder the city. Wouldn’t we just be dirtying our hands for the Condor Country’s benefit? Anyway, the Qi Kingdom are no longer able to put up any significant resistance and the armies of the other three countries would already make up a force of almost three million, even without us, they would surely be able to deal with the puny force the Qi Kingdom has left!”

The Chief Commander then said with a distasteful smile: “Whether we go or not, it’ll turn out the same. I’d rather we just get our brothers to slowly ready ourselves to go back home instead.”

Chapter 1150: “Blood for Blood (2)”

“That’s quite true, we fight with our lives and squander so many of our men but we don’t gain anything from it. What is His Majesty thinking?” The officer said, becoming a little depressed.

The Chief Commander then said: “We aren’t really getting nothing out of it though. The Condor Country has promised that after the Qi Kingdom has fallen, they will not be taking any of their lands. They only want the Imperial City and the other three countries will split the rest. It won’t be much longer that the Qi Kingdom will belong to us and the other two countries, and the Qi Kingdom will henceforth be no more under these Heavens!”

“Is that even possible? What is the Condor Country aiming to achieve by doing this?” The officer asked curiously.

“Who knows? These are things we do not have to bother about anyway.” The Chief Commander then said with a shrug of his shoulders.

“Actually, from what I can see, just the Condor Country’s army alone will be enough to take the Qi Kingdom. So why did the Condor Country want to join forces with us?” The Condor Country was a mighty country inferior only to the Fire Country. The Qi Kingdom is just a tiny place and such a small country before the Condor Country should be easily taken. But they had roped in three other countries and even promised to not lay claim to any of the lands in the Qi Kingdom. That was a point that made one can’t help but think to be rather strange.

“Tsk..... You are underestimating the Qi Kingdom’s military might a little too much! A large part of the Qi Kingdom’s army is indeed weak and vulnerable, but don’t you forget, the Qi Kingdom has the most ferocious strike force under the Heavens, the Rui Lin Army! The Rui Lin Army might number only a hundred thousand, but with just that one hundred thousand men, they could very well

be able to swallow up a million lions! The Condor Country seeks to take down the Qi Kingdom, but are unwilling to face them head on just by themselves. If it had been only the Condor Country's army alone, even if they managed to take down the Qi Kingdom, it would be expected that the Rui Lin Army would have bitten off a huge chunk of their meat. So, they had chosen to ally with three other countries, to split up the Rui Lin Army force, to reduce their losses instead." The Chief Commander explained.

At the mention of the Rui Lin Army, the officer subconsciously shivered. On this side of the battlefield, the number of Rui Lin Army soldiers they had encountered had not numbered more than twenty thousand, but the losses they had suffered under them had been unprecedentedly terrifying. The twenty thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers combined with a hundred thousand of the Qi Kingdom's army, had properly knocked off eight hundred thousand from their strength, with the majority of them killed by the Rui Lin Army soldiers.

If they did not have the Rui Lin Army men among them holding the fort, and had faced only the Qi Kingdom's army, they wouldn't have taken much time to make mincemeat out of them.

"We have heard from the start that the men from the Rui Lin Army can take on ten men against a single one of theirs but I had thought that that was merely a baseless rumour. Now that I have seen it for myself, I know for a fact just how terrifying they really are. It's little wonder why for so many years, a tiny country like the Qi Kingdom, did not have anyone dare to invade them. With the Rui Lin Army among them, any country that has any ideas towards the Qi Kingdom, will have to prepare themselves fully for it."

The Chief Commander then continued on with a sneer: "The Qi Kingdom only has the Rui Lin Army as a significant force and it was all due to the foolishness of their previous Emperor, with his uncalled for suspicions and jealousy, that he forcibly reduced the

Rui Lin Army's numbers after the kingdom progressed, dismissing many of its most ferocious generals, and gradually reduced the Rui Lin Army's numbers over the years. If the previous Emperor had not been so foolish, the Rui Lin Army would not be left with just one hundred thousand soldiers, and if their numbers had doubled by just one time, we would have had to seriously reconsider lending a hand in this."

The dumbest people under the Heavens, were those that broke their own arms, and it had been the Qi Kingdom's previous Emperor who had lent them the greatest hand in this invasion!

"But it does not matter how brave or ferocious they are, they will still end up a pile of bones in the end! After the Qi Kingdom falls, the most ferocious strike force under the heavens, the Rui Lin Army, will henceforth cease to exist! Ha ha ha!"

Chapter 1151: “Blood for Blood (3)”

Just as the Prosper Country Chief Commander was happy in glee, from outside the Commander’s tent, a soldier came running in hurriedly.

“Report! !”

The Chief Commander lifted an eyebrow. “What?”

“Reporting Chief Commander! Four miles away from the camp, a large army has suddenly appeared!”

“Large army?” The Chief Commander thought for a moment and then said sneeringly: “Could it be the Condor Country has succeeded? That did not take them any time at all!”

“Did you manage to see which country’s army is that?” The Chief Commander said without showing any panic on his face. The Qi Kingdom had been reduced to become a spent force and throughout the entire lands of the Qi Kingdom, besides their four country allied armies, there weren’t any other significant sized armies, and he had no reason to fear his allies.

“I did not..... They are still a distance away and your subordinate could not see it clearly.”

“Doesn’t matter whether you saw them clearly. You’re dismissed.” The Chief Commander waved his hand dismissively at the soldier.

But before the Chief Commander’s voice had dropped, another soldier came rushing in anxiously.

“Report!”

“What is it this time!” The Chief Commander snapped impatiently.

“Your subordinate..... has..... verified the army’s identity.....” The look on the soldier’s face wasn’t looking too good.

“Oh? Which country?” The Chief Commander asked languidly, not even looking at the soldier, but just dragged up a lady prisoner and pulled her against him lecherously.

“It’s..... it’s..... the Fire Country.....”

“What! ?” In an instant, the Chief Commander’s face turned to shock as he threw the lady off him onto the ground, suddenly jumping to his feet.

“What did you say? Fi..... Fire Country! ? You are sure you saw it correctly? The army is from the Fire Country! ?” The Chief Commander’s teeth began to chatter. The Prosper Country among the various countries could only be considered to be a mid sized country, and were in no way comparable to the likes of large countries like the Condor Country.

If placed before the mightiest Fire Country..... they really wouldn’t even be fit to carry their shoes!

“Your subordinate is certain.” The soldier replied with absolute certainty.

The Chief Commander was immediately highly flustered.

“Why would the Fire Country’s army suddenly appear here? The Fire Country isn’t that near to the Qi Kingdom, out of the blue..... why had the Fire Country’s army come running into the lands of the Qi Kingdom?” The Chief Commander muttered as he paced nervously within the Commander’s tent.

The officer in the tent was also rather panicked and he said after thinking about it: “Could it be possible that the Condor Country invited them here? Afterall, the Condor Country has allied itself with us and the two other countries, could they.....”

“You’ve got to be joking! With just what the Condor Country is, you think they would be able to even get the Fire Country to mobilize their army! ?” The Chief Commander immediately shot down that conjecture. “Although the Fire Country and the Condor

Country do not have much of a conflict between them, but they are definitely not on friendly terms. It is widely known that the Condor Country has always sought to reign dominant but the Condor Country's might is completely unable to contend with the Fire Country's and that is why the Condor Country have always held themselves back. Unless the Fire Country's Emperor is loony, or else, it is impossible that they will accept any such invitation from the Condor Country."

"Then..... What is going on here....." The officer asked with a shrug.

The Chief Commander was feeling highly uneasy and he pondered on it for awhile before seeming to have thought of something as he asked the soldier.

"Were you able to roughly see, how many men did the Fire Country have with them?"

"Er....." The soldier was suddenly put on the spot and he thought about it for a moment before he said: "The Fire Country's army was too large to gauge accurately but when your subordinate glanced over at them, at least..... At least in excess of a million!"

"WHAT! ! !" The Chief Commander was overtaken by shock and he fell back into his chair, his face immediately turning pale.

[More than a million!]

The Fire Country's soldiers were known to be the toughest among the various countries and although not as maniacal as the Rui Lin Army where they could go one against ten, but their soldiers would at least still be able to easily achieve one against three!

Chapter 1152: “Mob Slap – First Form (1)”

The Prosper Country’s Chief Commander almost cracked his head thinking but he could not come up with a plausible reason why the Fire Country’s army would suddenly appear within the Qi Kingdom’s borders, and with such a huge number at that.

“Report!”

Another soldier rushed into the tent in a flurry!

The Chief Commander’s face was deathly pale as he asked: “What..... What is it this time.....”

“The Fire Country’s army is moving swiftly, and approaching straight towards our encampment!”

A crash sounded. The Chief Commander suddenly lost his balance from the seat and fell straight off his chair to crash heavily to the ground. His face had turned frighteningly pale as cold sweat burst out from his forehead continuously.

“What does the Fire Country want..... What do they really want!” The Chief Commander was in a complete fluster and he wished so much that the Fire Country was only passing through this place coincidentally. But now that they were fast heading straight for their camp, it was obvious they had come for them!

“Chief Commander, do not panic! Our Prosper Country and the Fire Country have always steered clear of each other and our country has religiously offered up tributes to them for many years. Maybe..... maybe they did not come here to fight but for something else altogether. Why don’t the Chief Commander first go see what the situation is and if there is any incident or misunderstanding between us, it will be better to clear it up first to prevent anything untoward from happening.” The officer in the Commander’s tent quickly said.

The Chief Commander gulped loudly and struggled to get back on

his feet. The earlier glee he had exhibited earlier had completely disappeared and his whole face was bathed in cold sweat.

“Hurry! Bring me out there to go take a look, and I hope it is just a misunderstanding.” The Chief Commander stood up falteringly and his hands started to shake.

Outside the camp, the majestically heroic looking army of a million lions could already be seen. Fluttering in the wind high above the closely packed ranks of soldiers, the Fire Country’s ensign was unfurled. There was still a distance between the two armies but the soldiers standing within the Prosper Country’s military camp could already feel the tremor in the earth under their feet!

Within the Prosper Country’s military camp, all the soldiers were watching nervously as the Fire Country’s army pushed on continuously. The Fire Country’s reputation as the mightiest country under the Heavens hung over their heads like a bank of dark ominous clouds, pressing down heavily upon them and suffocating them. Those soldiers who had been arguing on the splitting the spoils of war had gone completely quiet, and the deadly silent camp only had the sound of marching steps brought in by the wind, the rhythmic thump treading upon all their hearts.

The Prosper Country’s Chief Commander rushed in a hurry to stand at the front of the camp, as he stared at the Fire Country’s soldiers spread over the hills and plains before him, and his heart shot right up to lodge in his throat, all colour draining out from his face.

Before the battle even began, just by seeing the Fire Country’s formation of soldiers, it had already completely unnerved him. The several hundred thousand soldiers he held in his hands, were not able to inspire the slightest bit of confidence in him, and standing before the Fire Country’s armoured cavalry, he could not help himself but his knees began to shake!

Watching the Fire Country's army coming closer and closer, the Chief Commander's entire body shook like a leaf as he fought to quell the terror that crept into his heart. He gathered his spirit power into his throat and he opened his mouth to say: "I wonder for what reason has our esteemed guests from the Fire Country come here? We were just passing through here and if that has caused you any disturbance, I would implore for you to tell us clearly so that we are at least aware of what is happening."

With the amplification of spirit power, the Chief Commander's voice spread throughout the vast expanse, reverberating within the people's ears.

However!

The Fire Country's army did not slow in the slightest, but continued to advance quickly towards them, without giving a word of response.

The Prosper Country's Chief Commander waited but did not manage to get a reply and the terror in his heart quickly intensified. He could not help it but to open his mouth to ask again, and this time, his voice was tinged with traces of trembling.

"Friends from the Fire Country, can we discuss about this! ? We are the Prosper Country's army and the Prosper Country had always deeply respected and deferred ourselves to the Fire Country, could it possibly be that there's a misunderstanding here? I implore for the Fire Country's army to say a word! The Prosper Country would never do anything to show the Fire Country any disrespect! If our esteemed friends need to pass through, I will immediately strike camp, to give way to you!"

Chapter 1153: “Mob Slap – First Form (2)”

At the forefront of the Fire Country’s army, Jun Wu Xie drove her horse fast as the wind, the Prosper Country’s Chief Commander’s pleas for peace ringing in her ears incessantly. But there wasn’t the tiniest bit of warmth on her face as the broken name tag of a Rui Lin Army soldier struck against her chest continuously in tandem with the speedy charge of the warhorse. The name tag imbued with the spirit of the Rui Lin Army was giving her a clear account of how horrifying this war campaign the enemy waged really was!

“Your Majesty!” Following right behind Jun Xie, Lei Chen could not hold himself back from calling out as he heard the incessant and desperate pleas from the Prosper Country’s Chief Commander.

A small country like the Prosper Country was nothing in the eyes of the Fire Country, but the Prosper Country had always deferred to them and they had never once missed offering up their yearly tribute.

Watching Jun Xie leading the army in a full charge, astonishment soon filled Lei Chen’s heart. Jun Xie completely ignored the Prosper Country’s pleas, their army’s speed not decreasing in the slightest, clearly intending to charge straight into the Prosper Country’s camp!

Lei Chen had thought that Jun Xie was leading the army into the Qi Kingdom to come save the Young Miss of the Lin Palace, but at that moment, he didn’t feel that way anymore. He had never seen Jun Xie like this, emanating such a terrifying murderous aura, looking like he wasn’t here to save a person, but to wash the four country allies forces in blood!

“Kill.” Jun Wu Xie’s eyes narrowed, her frosty eyes brewing with insatiable murder.

She didn’t want to hear anything, and wasn’t going to say

anything more.

There was only one thought in her mind!

To forever bury these bunch of invaders, trampled them deep into the Qi Kingdom's lands!

Blood for blood! A tooth for a tooth!

Jun Xie's order to kill had been given, and the Fire Country's army charged like a unstoppable tidal wave. They were disciplined soldiers who did not need to know the reason, but to only carry out the ruler's command!

Jun Wu Yao was riding his horse right by Jun Wu Xie's shoulder as they advanced. He was able to distinctly feel the fiery rage Jun Wu Xie was feeling at that moment. The Prosper Country's camp was right before their eyes and the corners of his mouth curled up into a chilling smile, his tall slender figure suddenly flying up from the horse!

Like a divine deity descended from the Heavens, he flew straight towards the Prosper Country's encampment!

The Prosper Country's Chief Commander stared in astonishment at the handsome looking man flying through the sky towards them, his eyes bulging so wide they looked like they were about to pop out anytime!

The handsome looking man with his flawless countenance flew gracefully to the middle of the Prosper Country's military camp, and both his clear and beautiful hands swept lightly through the air!

A howling gale suddenly kicked up within the Prosper Country's camp that tore through the ground!

Within that gale, there was a certain black mist mixed within, that was like the Reaper's scythe, that dragged all the Prosper Country's soldiers around the howling gale right into it!

In an instant!

A heavy pungent stench of blood exploded in the air!

From inside the black swirling hurricane, blood shot out everywhere!

Horrifying screams sounded out from within endlessly!

Blades, armour, flesh and bones were twisted and ground, the endless screeches reaching everyone's ears!

“Under the name of the Fire Country's Emperor, I shalt send thee on thy way!”

Jun Wu Yao stepped elegantly through the air, standing in midair, two black whirling hurricanes at his sides on the left and right. Blood fell like rain, scattering over every inch of the Prosper Country's camp!

The warm blood with a smattering shower of grounded flesh fell in tiny splatters onto the bodies of the Prosper Country's soldiers, their Chief Commander's face stained red from the rain of blood. His eyes were wide with abject horror, as he stared uncontrollably at the attractive looking man like he was the devil, sending chills up his spine!

In a blink, with just a slight sweep of his palms, within the Prosper Country's army, almost a thousand soldiers had turned into ground meat in an instant!

And those soldiers had not even noticed what had exactly happened!

Jun Wu Yao stood with the rain of blood, his demonic eyes pulsing with bits of a purple coloured murderous aura. He lifted both his hands slightly, in welcome to the red rain falling onto him, the corners of his mouth curled up in a devilish arc.

Chapter 1154: “Mob Slap – First Form (3)”

Let him become the opening act for Little Xie’s grand show, her massacre of vengeance, using the blood to be spilled, as an offering to commemorate the deaths of all the Rui Lin Army soldiers who have died!

The blood rain washed over the Prosper Country’s soldiers, driving insane fear into their hearts, to push them closer bit by bit, towards the edge of a hopeless and bottomless abyss!

“Why..... why..... We have absolutely no intention to make an enemy out of the Fire Country! It’s a misunderstanding! There must have been a misunderstanding behind it!” The Prosper Country’s Chief Commander felt the strength drain out of his legs completely, never before had he seen such a terrifying massacre, crushing the lives out of a thousand men in an instant by the hand of just one man!

That man who was like the Devil himself, just who could he really be! ?

Jun Wu Yao merely looked smilingly at the Prosper Country’s Chief Commander.

The moment the Prosper Country’s army had taken the first step into the borders of the Qi Kingdom, they had been hopelessly doomed to die here on their lands!

The Fire Country’s army then crashed into the Prosper Country’s camp resoundingly!

That swift and ferocious charge, rendered the Prosper Country’s army defenceless in their fear!

The army of the mightiest country throughout the entire lands, was not what a puny little Prosper Country could hope to compare to!

The armoured cavalry sliced into the camp, the towering war

stallions sending the stunned enemy soldiers flying into the air. Under the iron shod hooves, many lives were terminated one after another!

The enemy soldiers whose hands were stained with the blood of the Rui Lin Army soldiers, were sent straight right into hell in quick succession!

In the midst of the enemy army that had been terrorized into utter disarray, the Prosper Country's Chief Commander was caught in a frenzied fluster. The Fire Country's armoured cavalry charged in around him, but he was the lone one left standing in his spot, not a single attack thrown towards him, and no one bothered about him.

Watching the entire army he helmed floundering helplessly under the thundering charge of the Fire Country's armoured cavalry, the Prosper Country's Chief Commander's heart sank into the bottom of a gorge.

He had thought that the Prosper Country's army of several hundred thousand should at least be able to hold out for a period, but when he saw the ferocity and fearlessness of the Fire Country's army, all sense of hope he held were utterly dashed!

Although the Fire Country's armoured cavalry were not as dominating and ferocious as the Rui Lin Army, but their coordination and overall might was still at a very high level. With the additional advantage of the Fire Country's overwhelming numbers, and with the Prosper Country's army being attacked unprepared..... The Prosper Country's soldiers were all already fearful of the Fire Country's mighty reputation and in the current situation, they really could not summon up the will to fight, resulting in them getting completely trashed!

“Why! ? Why! ? The Prosper Country had never offended the Fire Country! Why is the Fire Country raising their sword against us! ? With the Fire Country being the biggest country, you had actually

sneaked up and attacked us like this! If news of this is leaked out, wouldn't you become the joke of people across the lands! ?” The Chief Commander screamed desperately. He could not make himself believe that all of this was happening to him at this moment, just when they had eliminated the Qi Kingdom's armies, and were all prepared to sit back and enjoy the rewards, that beautiful dream was suddenly mercilessly crushed!

Suddenly, an icy voice sounded right above the Prosper Country's Chief Commander's head!

“What crime did the Qi Kingdom commit? Why did the four countries ally together to invade them? What is the crime of the Qi Kingdom! ? Did the four countries give the Qi Kingdom the slightest bit of an opportunity to prepare themselves! ?”

That voice struck the Chief Commander's head like a bolt of lightning and he snapped his head up immediately. With the sun behind, he saw the silhouette of a figure seated atop a towering war horse just at his side.

That person was dressed in a suit of silver armour, and the glare from the light behind him caused one to be unable to see his face. But the chilling murderous aura that surrounded the figure made even the Chief Commander who had lived through numerous battles felt his scalp suddenly feel numb!

“It's the Condor Country..... It's the Condor Country..... The Condor Country wanted us to do that! We were not a match for the Condor Country and we had no choice but to subject ourselves to their instructions!” The Chief Commander squeaked through chattering teeth, as the figure atop the horse stood over him was like his worst nightmare, that sent chills into his heart.

“We..... We had not really wanted to attack the Qi Kingdom. This was all the Condor Country's idea!” The Chief Commander could only try to shift the blame after hearing the questions from the figure towering over him, as he still did not understand why the

Fire Country would be so concerned about the fate of a tiny country like the Qi Kingdom!

Chapter 1155: “Mob Slap – First Form (4)”

“This reason..... is why you have attacked the Qi Kingdom?” The tone and words of the figure suddenly became a lot lighter and just as the Chief Commander thought that he could escape calamity this time, another jet black figure suddenly leapt out from one side!

It was a massive beast that looked like an enormously huge panther, which quickly pinned the Chief Commander onto the ground!

It widened its huge jaws, revealing its razor sharp fangs right before the Chief Commander’s eyes!

“Arrrrgh!”

The sunlight had shifted, lighting up the countenance of the figure upon the warhorse.

Just one glance, and it put the Chief Commander’s heart into great shock!

Seated atop the warhorse, was actually a clear faced youth that looked to be about only fifteen years of age. The youth was wearing a suit of silver armour, his eyes filled with chilling murder, the stiffened corners of his mouth, revealing the rage burning within.

Jun Wu Xie sat high above, looking down at the Chief Commander helplessly pinned down by the massive black beast, those frosty eyes, seemingly looking at a man already dead.

He was obviously just a young youth, but the Chief Commander saw upon the head of the youth, the symbol of the Fire Country’s ruler, the Emperor’s crown!

[This youth..... is the Fire Country’s Emperor! !]

The Chief Commander could not believe his own eyes. It hadn’t been too long ago, when they had heard a shocking piece of news.

The Fire Country's previous Emperor had suddenly announced his abdication of the ruler's throne in favour to the possessor of the Fire of Imperial Fire. However, the very day that the news was leaked out, the person who had just become the Fire Country's Emperor had suddenly disappeared from the Fire Country's Capital. No one knew who that person was, and no one knew where that person had gone!

The Chief Commander would never even in his dreams have thought, that his first time seeing the new ruler of the Fire Country, would be on the soils of the Qi Kingdom like this!

"The armies of the Condor Country and the other two countries. Where are they?" Jun Wu Xie asked, her eyes narrowing slightly.

[Not enough.....]

[Still not enough.....]

[Just one army of the Prosper Country was not enough to extinguish the raging inferno within her heart!]

She would never be able to forget. The scene her eyes saw the dead bodies of the fallen Rui Lin Army soldiers scattered upon the lands of the Qi Kingdom. Never will she forget when she saw the hordes of vultures circling above the corpses, and the nightmarish sight of those scavengers eating their flesh!

The stalwart and honourable men of the Rui Lin Army, blood spilled across the battlefields, defending their home country, an army her grandfather had painstakingly trained and groomed with his life's blood and tears, which had been so mercilessly killed and trampled upon, by the combined strength of these four countries!

The vengeance due to the Rui Lin Army, would be exacted through her hand!

The countless debts of blood owed to the Qi Kingdom, she would claim it all back one by one, from the four countries' allied forces!

"They..... They have already reached..... reached the Imperial

City.....” The Chief Commander stuttered out in terror, unable to fathom why he would be so fearful of such a young youth.

All temperature immediately drained out from Jun Wu Xie’s face and she snapped her head up to look in the direction of the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City!

[Grandfather! Uncle!]

“Kill him.” Jun Wu Xie said through her tightly clenched jaws.

The black beast opened its jaws and tore out the Prosper Country’s Chief Commander’s throat!

Bright red blood spewed forth like a spring, spraying across the area!

Splattering over Jun Wu Xie, staining her silver armour in a shade of red!

“Big Brother!” Jun Wu Xie called out loudly all of a sudden!

The figure of Jun Wu Yao flashed from among the enemy soldiers numbering in tens of thousands to appear before Jun Wu Xie. He was all covered in blood, but not a single drop was from his body.

“Hmm?”

“Bring me to the Imperial City! Immediately!” Jun Wu Xie’s heart had fallen into an icy lake. Along the way here, she had already seen an innumerable number of corpses of the Rui Lin Army, and she did not know how many in the Rui Lin Army had lost their lives in this war. But one thing she knew for certain. With the armies of the other three countries pressing towards the Imperial City, the Qi Kingdom had already fallen into a truly desperate state!

There wasn’t another single minute to lose!

She must, and immediately rush to the Imperial City!

Chapter 1156: “Imperial City In Crisis (1)”

As the Prosper Country’s army had still not been completely eradicated, and Jun Wu Xie needed to rush to the Imperial City immediately, she could only have Jun Wu Yao bring her by flying there.

The Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City was shrouded in the thick smoke of war.

Arrows were flying through the air like rain and soldiers fell from the city walls, but the gaps would be quickly filled up with more soldiers running up to the positions to pull back their bows to shoot at the enemy!

The Imperial City’s walls were tightly shut as the armies of the three countries charged at it, trying to break through it.

Within the city, countless soldiers were pushing against the city’s closed gates with all their might, as thick logs were carried to the gates to prop it up to resist the incessant battering upon it.

“Hurry! Archers keep up!” Jun Qing stood within the city, directing the defence of the city, as the concentrated barrages of arrows from outside were already sailing over the city’s walls to fly within the city itself. Many of the arrows were lit with fire and all the soldiers around the perimeter of the walls had raised their shields to stop the falling arrows, with the clear clanking sounds suddenly reverberating inside the city, the fire arrows bursting in a shower of flames and sparks when they landed!

“Quickly put out all the fire!” Jun Qing shouted, wishing that he could split himself up. With the enemy at the gates, the only choice left for them was to defend the city till the end!

Once the city’s gates were breached, the soldiers of the three countries would spill in like the unstoppable tide and the soldiers they had within the city would not be able to resist the lions

outside which numbered more than a million!

The common citizens within the city were hiding within their own homes to hide from the assault from rain of arrows, while all the able bodied men had already given up on hiding. As the country's citizens, they had chosen to step up at that moment. They did not possess high spirit powers, nor did they have powerful ring spirits, but they still have their pair of able hands! With the city on fire, they carried water to help put them out, and when the soldiers got injured, they carried them away to have them get treatment!

Within the city at that moment, only the frail elderly and womenfolk with their children were hiding quietly, the rest of them, all able bodied adults had involved themselves with this battle to defend their homeland!

The soldiers from the three countries then prepared to scale the walls!

The Qi Kingdom's soldiers poured flammable oil onto the scaling ladders and set them on fire to prevent the enemy soldiers' infiltration!

The shattering explosions and shrieking howls pierced the Heavens!

Mo Qian Yuan stood in the city, looking at the chaotic scene before him as his heart winced. He had ignored all his officers' protest and had personally come to join the battle dressed in armour.

[He is the ruler of the Qi Kingdom, so how could he continue to hide within the Palace and allow the men in his army and his citizen's blood to continue to be spilled!]

The city's gates were taking a huge battering, the reinforced gates had shown a crack under the incessant ramming, the endless quivering of the wood saw chips flying with each impact, just like

the final struggle put up by the Qi Kingdom, tottering and shaking.

Everyone was stubbornly resisting, but in the hearts of them all, they knew clearly that their resistance would finally still result in futility.

Outside the city, were three armies from three countries surging against their gates.

Breaching the city, was a matter of time.

But.....

Not a single one among them was willing to give up at that moment!

This was their country! The soil their homes sat upon!

Even if they fought till their last drop of blood, they would never want to become a slave from a fallen country!

Mo Qian Yuan stood upon the street, looking at the medley of his citizens, watching them put their common and mediocre ring spirits to use, in support against the Imperial City from being breached. Seeing them hold farming and work tools tightly in their hands, as they charge shouting towards the city's gates, their brawny muscles bunched up tightly as they pushed against the gates together with the soldiers, the rims of his eyes suddenly felt hot.

In this life, he had experienced quite a bit. Patricide, usurpation, scheming against siblings..... before being installed into this rulership of the Qi Kingdom!

He had never known, with the Dragon Robe on him, what he gained was not just status and authority, but his shoulders were also burdened with whether the Qi Kingdom lived or perished. He had never known that the citizens of the Qi Kingdom, would step forward in a situation like this!

Chapter 1157: “Imperial City In Crisis (2)”

He had never known, with the Dragon Robe on him, what he gained was not just status and authority, but his shoulders were also burdened with whether the Qi Kingdom lived or perished. He had never known that the citizens of the Qi Kingdom, would step forward in a situation like this!

At that moment, Mo Qian Yuan felt an immense pride. He was proud of himself to be born into this country!

The most glorious thing that had happened to him in his life was to have become the ruler of the Qi Kingdom!

Proud of the people of the Qi Kingdom, proud of the men of the Qi Kingdom’s army!

Although the Qi Kingdom was small, but everyone within the Qi Kingdom, the soldiers with the people, came together to protect their country!

To defend the pride of the Qi Kingdom!

With such an army, with such people in the country, how rare and precious was that?

Even if the Qi Kingdom was to fall, the backs of the people in the Qi Kingdom would not bend!

Rather a broken jade piece than a tile whole! [Translator’s Note from Cloud: (Chinese idiom) In this instance, sensible replacement would be: Rather choose death than to suffer dishonour!]

“Duke Lin! The city’s gates are not going to hold!” A soldier pushing against the city’s gates shouted out in terror towards Jun Xian who held command of the forces within the city. His eyes were filled with fear, a fear not borne from the fact that he was about to face the enemy and meet impending death, but a fearful despair that the country was about to fall!

[From the time when the Qi Kingdom was founded, how many battles big and small have they seen? How many invasions from stronger forces have they pushed back? Although they were not considered to be a powerful country, they nevertheless held their own belief. They defended their lands and protected their homes, all because their belief had never wavered, that their country must not fall!]

[After having struggled through the tumultuous wars at the founding of the country, to finally enjoy a period of peace. But now..... everything is about to end?]

They would not accept it!

Unacceptable!

Jun Xian's brows knotted tightly together. Once the city's gates were breached, how long would the soldiers within the city be able to hold out for?

The number of Rui Lin Army soldiers he had left were not much and the Qi Kingdom's army's numbers were dwindling continuously.

Would they be able to last past this day?

Jun Xian could not be certain. He had fought through many wars and had a soldier's spirit that had climbed out under blood. But at that moment, faced with the desperate straits that the Qi Kingdom was in, he could not devise a solution to get them all out of it.

"All Rui Lin Army soldiers heed my command!" Jun Xian suddenly took a step forward!

All the Rui Lin Army soldiers in the city who had miraculously managed to survive all turned their gazes towards Jun Xian.

"From the day that the Rui Lin Army was established, I and the other old Generals knew then that this army will forever protect the Qi Kingdom's soil. In the face of the kingdom's current crisis, this battle, will become the final battle of the Rui Lin Army! I, Jun

Xian, throughout my entire life, my greatest pride is to be able to lead all of you here, a group of loyal and iron blooded men such as you! Today, even till the last breath, till the last drop of blood! Do not besmirch the name of the Rui Lin Army! Even knowing that the name Rui Lin Army will no longer exist under the Heavens after today, we must make everyone throughout the lands remember it! That the Qi Kingdom once had a most ferocious force that struck fear into the hearts of their enemies! An army that never admitted defeat! At this final juncture, fight showing off the guts of the Rui Lin Army!” Jun Xian lifted his head, his gaze determined and unwavering. Under the strong wind blowing, he seemed to have gone back into the past, in his twenties at his prime, valiant and formidable, leading the newly formed Rui Lin Army, charging into the battlefield!

“Kill! Kill! Kill!” The earth shattering roars tore out from the throats of the Rui Lin Army soldiers!

They did not fear death, and welcomed the battlefield!

They were born with soldier’s spirit, fated to tangle with blood battles!

Born for the battlefield, die by the battlefield, would be their final moment of glory!

The Rui Lin Army’s vigor shot towards the skies, the ear splitting roars bringing hot blood to pump into the chests of the people around, roaring in defiance that epitomized the Rui Lin Army’s unyielding spine!

Jun Xian drew a deep breath, and exchanged a glance with Jun Qing standing atop the city’s wall. Jun Qing nodded and gave his father smile that belonged to a son.

Jun Xian then retracted his gaze and unsheathed the sword at his hip, facing the city’s gates, sinking into his emotions in the final moments.

Chapter 1158: “Imperial City In Crisis (3)”

On the outside of the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City, at the back of the three countries’ armies, the Commander in Chief of the Condor Country sat overseeing the entire siege, with his eyes narrowed as he watched the city engulfed by the flames of battle. At his side, a good looking young youth dressed in white clothes sat leisurely upon a horse, as he looked at the turmoil being inflicted upon the Imperial City, with a lazy smile on his lips.

“Such a small country and it had taken all of you so much effort. Is this the extent of the Condor Country’s might?” The good looking youth remarked, as he glanced at the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief, his eyes filled with disdain, without the slightest sign of respect in them.

Towards the youth’s sneering question, the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief however did not dare to utter a word in rebuttal but only said: “Although the Qi Kingdom is small, but it is the bone that is the hardest to gnaw upon among all the countries. The size of its lands in their entirety, is less than one fifth of the Condor Country, however, they possess the strongest and most powerful force within their armies. If they did not have that army, under the tussle for power of the various countries, the Qi Kingdom would have long lost their ability to defend themselves.”

Although the Qi Kingdom was going to be defeated, but the Commander in Chief of the Condor Country deeply respected this most ferocious strike force. Even if the Qi Kingdom fell this day, the Rui Lin Army was still held in honour and esteem.

The country’s fall, was no fault of theirs, but was due to the foolishness of the previous Emperor of the kingdom.

“Ha, that is merely just an excuse and I am not going to believe it. In a place like this, could it really be possible that a thing such as an undefeatable soldier’s spirit would exist? I’m sure it’s just that

you are all too weak that you would need the combined might of four countries just to attack a small country like this, and even needed half a month to do it. You all must truly be useless.” The youth said sneeringly.

The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief’s brows creased together, and he fought to suppress the rage filling up in his heart.

“What I have promised you, will definitely be done.”

The youth threw a sidelong glance at the Commander in Chief and said: “Is there a need to get so displeased? This deal, was one that your very own Emperor pleaded with us to agree to. If not for all his begging, there are many people who would be willing to work for us. Without you guys of the Condor Country, we can still seek out the Fire Country. Moreover in this deal, the Condor Country has nothing to lose. To annihilate a tiny Qi Kingdom, we will be able to get what we seek, while your country will be able to gain more power, so why not?”

“What is it that you people are looking for?” The Commander in Chief asked uneasily as he looked at the youth. The youth’s age looked only to be about slightly over twenty but he possessed extremely strong powers. Even the most powerful fighter in their entire country had when faced with this youth, been unable to even survive a single strike from him. They had gone to seek the Condor Country’s Emperor and agreed on a secret deal between themselves, which he was not privy to, but only knew that their mission was to destroy the Qi Kingdom, and after the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City fell, they were to assist the youth in searching for something.

The youth then replied: “That is not something you should ask about.”

The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief clenched his jaw and lowered his head.

However, at that very same moment, a roar of chaos suddenly

broke out from the back of their armies that reached them!

The Condor Country's Commander in Chief turned his head back to look and saw that an army was suddenly charging towards the three countries' armies from the back!

To put it more accurately, that couldn't be counted as a real army. All the people within that army were formed up by the Qi Kingdom's citizenry, their bodies covered with a mixed assortment of armour made from cane, various blades and knives gripped in their hands. A few among them were even holding clumsy and unwieldy tools used in farming, disorganized and scattered, their steps not in tandem as they shouted while charging towards the encampment of the three countries' armies.

The youth stared in puzzlement at the motley crew and he said in a voice that sounded like he found it very funny: "Ha ha ha ha! Ha ha ha! This is what the Qi Kingdom is? Ha ha ha! This is the army the Qi Kingdom has? My Heavens! This has got to be the most amusing bunch of people put together into a so called army that I have seen!"

The Condor Country's Commander in Chief's heart was shocked. "That is not the Qi Kingdom's army, but the Qi Kingdom's common citizens."

Chapter 1159: “Imperial City In Crisis (4)”

The people were of different ages and dressed in different clothes, very regular civilians from the various big cities. They had been forced to escape from the cities they had been from by the war and had ran the entire way, a journey that had been filled with terror and panic, seeking for a final sliver of hope. But when they reached here and saw that the Imperial City had been surrounded, at that moment..... all of them suddenly found themselves filled with a roaring rage!

“Kill! !” A youth who was still a little green shouted as he ran at the front of the gaggle of people, his eyes red and bloodshot, as he stared at the armies of the three countries who had destroyed their homes and killed their people!

The Imperial City must not be breached!

The Qi Kingdom cannot be allowed to fall!

Throughout history, this was the weakest army ever assembled, a force that couldn't even be called an army in any sense of the word. But at this moment when the fate of the country was at stake, they suddenly turned to become a force that was completely fearless!

Upon the Imperial City's wall, Jun Qing was already prepared to fight to the death with the armies of the three countries but he suddenly spotted the ragtag army right at the other end, at the back of the enemy lines!

His eyes widened as he stared in disbelief, his Bone Eroding White Owl taking to the skies, transmitting all that it saw with its eyes to Jun Qing!

Jun Qing could not make himself believe that the citizens of the Qi Kingdom would come charging onto the battlefield when the battle was just about to become most intense!

They were from different cities and from varying parts, but there was one thing they had in common!

Within their bodies, the same unyielding hot blood of the Qi Kingdom flowed with rage!

Jun Qing's body shook uncontrollably. Within the Bone Eroding White Owl's sight, he saw scene where the people from that ragtag army being crushed by the armies of the three countries, the elderly who were already past half a century old, the youths who had yet to come of age, the strong able bodied men among them.....

Under the hooves of the armoured cavalry of the three armies, blood instantly stained the land!

They might not have been powerful, they might have been a joke in the eyes of others.

But they had used their very lives to buy a brief period of time for the Imperial City. And that very brief period of time would turn out to be the moments bought that changed the fate of the entire Qi Kingdom!

That very weak ragtag army made up from tens of thousands of the Qi Kingdom's citizens had not lasted even an hour before the trained armies of the three countries before they were completely annihilated, without a single survivor! Their dead bodies lay in pools of blood, but their spirits would never be extinguished!

"What a joke." The white robed youth said as he held a young boy from the Qi Kingdom by the head, flinging him around like he would a toy. "So helplessly fragile that it's almost sad. I just twisted him slightly and his head had come off just like that. Ha ha ha!"

With a loud crack, the youth crushed the head and it exploded within his hand!

Blood and brains immediately flew out in all directions!

And on his face, there was only an expression of excitement and

joy!

“Such a bunch of trash and they had actually held us back for an hour. Doesn’t matter though, take it as a chance for those ants within the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City to catch their breaths for the last time.” The youth said nonchalantly as he pulled out a handkerchief to wipe his blood stained fingers clean as he turned to look towards the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief.

“Now, launch an all out attack immediately! In one hour’s time, I want the name of Qi Kingdom to forever disappear from the face of the land!”

The bugles signalling for an attack sounded!

The armoured cavalry of the three countries charged towards the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City!

The battered city’s gates that had held out for so long finally shattered at that moment!

However, at the very moment that the three countries’ armies were about to seize the moment and pour into the Imperial City through the shattered gates – A howling gale suddenly came sweeping in!

Several hurricanes sucked all the soldiers amassed before the city’s gates into the air, and anguished screams suddenly tore through the air! From within the spinning hurricanes, blood splatters shot out in all directions!

From within that blood rain, two figures suddenly appeared above the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City!

.....

Author’s Note: The Rui Lin Army will never disappear. As long as the soldier’s spirit remains, there will be someone to succeed them in the days to come, to carry on their will.

Chapter 1160: “Mob Slap – Second Form (1)”

A clean and clear faced youth donned in silver armour and a flawlessly handsome man stood side by side in mid air. Under the blood spraying everywhere, everyone’s eyes were all focused upon the two people!

In a blink, all those from the three country allied forces who had been about to rush into the Imperial City were sucked up into the hurricanes! A wide expanse of space right in front of the Imperial City was swept completely clear and blood fell like rain, splatters of ground flesh falling upon the faces of the soldiers from the armies of the three countries, immediately throwing all the people there into a state of shock by the gory scene right before their eyes!

“Who are those people!” The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief who held command from the back suddenly stared with his eyes wide, in incredulous disbelief at the two people who had suddenly appeared in mid air.

Within the Imperial City, the soldiers who had sunk into despair now raised their heads, similarly staring at the two people standing above in the air, their faces frozen with rapture. But within the ranks of the Rui Lin Army, several people spotted a highly familiar figure!

That figure was a little taller than they remembered, and the face was also different from it had been in the beginning. But for those Rui Lin Army soldiers who had previously gone to the Battle Spirits Forest that time, knew very clearly who that petite and delicately attractive looking youth was exactly!

“Young Miss.....” Long Qi’s eyes widened, as he stared at the youth standing next to Jun Wu Yao!

[That countenance, was obviously the face of Jun Wu Xie after altering her looks!]

[Jun Wu Xie has come back!]

[Their Young Miss was back!]

Jun Qing was standing right next to Long Qi and Long Qi's involuntary soft whisper reached his ears without missing a word, making his heart leap!

"Long Qi, who..... did you say that was?" Jun Qing's voice was already trembling.

Long Qi was startled back to his senses by the question and said: "It's the Young Miss, that is Young Miss."

"Wu Xie....." Jun Qing whispered as he stared at the petite little figure, his heart quickly wrenching up.

In the beginning, when Long Qi brought back the news to them that Jun Wu Xie was unable to come home, although the father and son pair had been surprised and highly pained by the parting, they had not probed too much into it as they believed that Jun Wu Xie knew what she was doing. She might still be young, but she was not as rash and impulsive as other youths her age, hence if she felt that it was necessary to do that, they wouldn't have any objections against it.

But the longing in their hearts, had never once stopped.

Jun Qing was able to recognize Jun Wu Yao beside Jun Wu Xie, and with Long Qi's words, it only further convinced him that the petite figure was definitely Jun Wu Xie!

When the Qi Kingdom was faced with the crisis, Jun Qing had once thought, that maybe he and his father would not be able to see Jun Wu Xie again in this life. Besides feeling regret, they had also felt some sense of comfort that Jun Wu Xie was not around to have to face this calamity. People of the Jun Family had never been afraid to spill blood upon the battlefield, but they still held hope that Jun Wu Xie would be able to live freely.

However, when Jun Qing saw Jun Wu Xie return, the surge of

roiling emotions in his heart could no longer be expressed in words!

Jun Qing almost immediately turned his head around to the back, to look at the equally stunned Jun Xian.

Jun Xian did not know that the little youth was actually Jun Wu Xie with her looks altered, but had instead recognized Jun Wu Yao. But his slightly tampered memory did not make him feel for the flawlessly handsome man who had become his grandson only in name, any of the indulgent love he had for Jun Wu Xie, not even in the slightest.

“Father!” Jun Qing could not help but open his mouth to call out.

Jun Xian turned to Jun Qing.

Jun Qing moved his lips moved without him making a sound, silently mouthing out the words to Jun Xian.

[That is Wu Xie, that is their Lin Palace’s Jun Wu Xie!]

Jun Xian immediately gasped in shock. When he had stood before a million lions on the battlefield, his hands had not trembled at all. But at that moment, the hand he used to grip his sword was suddenly shaking uncontrollably!

Chapter 1161: “Mob Slap – Second Form (2)”

Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao's appearance, caused a strange eerie silence to fall over the fiercely intense battlefield, with only the sound of the howling gale sweeping past everyone's ears.

Jun Wu Xie narrowed her eyes and looked at the chaotic battlefield, looking at the armies of the three allied countries that had surged like the tide. When she saw the three country allied armies rushing towards the gates of the Imperial City, her rage had risen to a boiling point!

If she had arrived just a moment later, the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City would have been instantly overrun by the three countries' forces, and her family members would have been mercilessly trampled by the armoured cavalry of the allied forces!

The rage within Jun Wu Xie made her eyes turn impossibly frosty. She turned her head slightly, to search within the Imperial City for familiar figures.

And her eyes quickly met those of Jun Xian's. Cold and indifferent as she always was, her gaze at that moment wavered slightly.

[Grandfather.....]

Jun Wu Xie wanted so much to run to Jun Xian, to ask her Grandfather whether he had been well all this time. But she really did not have the time for that now. She turned her head back to stare at the armies screaming in horror before her and she drew in a deep breath.

The gazes of the three countries' allied army were now all focused upon Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao. They had never seen anything so horrifying. Several thousand soldiers suddenly turning into blood and gore in a single blink and the several hurricanes still had not stopped. They continued to howl as they

spun endlessly, as good as having an impenetrable high steel wall before them, that blocked the way into the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City completely, keeping the allied armies of the three countries, blocked outside!

“Who are you people! Why are you making an enemy out of our three countries! ?” The Commander in Chief of the Condor Country infused his entire body with spirit power, and shouted out towards Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao hovering in the air.

Within the howling of the gale, Jun Wu Xie lifted her chin slightly and her chilling gaze swept over each and every of the enemy armies as she said grandly: “Hither stands the Emperor of the Fire state, and all hither needeth no longer dream of setting one foot into the Imperial City!”

Jun Wu Xie's voice was tinged with a trace of frost, and highly domineering, as it resounded upon the expanse of land.

Her words shocked everyone so much they gasped loudly!

[Fire Country, that is the mightiest country throughout the lands!]

[Why had the Fire Country's Emperor appeared in the Qi Kingdom? And why would he impede the steps of the three countries in their attack?]

Countless questions swam in their minds. The words, Fire Country, was just like a tall mountain, suddenly pressing heavily down upon all their chests.

Besides the Condor Country, the Commanders of the other two countries had immediately upon hearing Jun Wu Xie's declaration, found their bodies to be trembling uncontrollably. They were not strong countries, and they had needed to form alliances to attack the Qi Kingdom, hence, it was needless to mention just how miniscule they were before the mighty Fire Country.

Never in their lives would they have ever thought they would one

day make an enemy out of the Fire Country!

The other two Commanders were now in a state of panic. Attacking the Qi Kingdom had not made them feel pressure, but if they had to face the Fire Country..... They completely did not even dare to think about it!

Almost immediately after ascertaining Jun Wu Xie's identity, they drove their horses into a sprint to come before the Condor Country's Commander in Chief and asked highly nervously: "Is that really the Fire Country's Emperor? Why does the Fire Country want to interfere with the Qi Kingdom's affairs! ?"

A tiny country like the Qi Kingdom, would never be able to establish any links with the Fire Country, but the youth had claimed to be the Fire Country's Emperor and that had made their hearts panic.

"What he is wearing upon his head, is indeed the Fire Country's Emperor's crown." The Condor Country's Commander in Chief admitted through gritted teeth.

Not long ago, the Fire Country had indeed sent news about the change of regime and there had also been rumours that said that the throne was handed to a just a young youth. Under the Heavens, people who dared impersonate the Fire Country's Emperor did not exist.

Chapter 1162: “Mob Slap – Second Form (3)”

The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief’s words extinguished the last ray of hope in the hearts of the other two commanders.

When the Fire Country’s Emperor had personally appeared outside the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City and made his stance clear that no one was allowed to take a single step into the Imperial City, naturally none of them possessed the guts to challenge the Fire Country’s might. Against such an immensely powerful country, if they really provoked and angered them, obliterating both their countries would be as easy as taking a drink.

“For no reason, why is the Fire Country getting themselves involved in a matter like this? The Qi Kingdom is so far away from the Fire Country, so why are they stretching their hand so far out for! ?” A commander asked, his face deathly pale.

“What are we going to do now? Are we really going to strike against the Fire Country’s Emperor? That..... that might not really be suitable.” Another commander said, the expression on his face flustered.

The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief’s brows creased together. The current situation was not one that he had ever thought would happen. Although the Condor Country was strong and powerful, but compared to the highly prosperous and powerful Fire Country who was securely lodged in the seat of supremacy, they were still a distance behind. If they were to really face off with the Fire Country, they would have nothing to gain out of it.

At that point, even the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief could not help himself any longer but started to show signs of hesitation.

“It is merely just an Emperor and you are all already shaking in your boots? What a joke.” The youth who had been watching the

three Commanders from the side saw their ashen paces said with a sneer.

The Commanders from the other two countries immediately turned to look at him, their faces frowning slightly.

This person had been with the Condor Country's forces right from the beginning. Highly good looking, his body tall and slender, not looking the least bit like he was from the Condor Country's army. They had initially not cared much about it, but along the way, the Condor Country's Commander in Chief had been highly respectful to the youth and it could even be said that the Commander in Chief obeyed him in many instances, making the other two Commanders not dare to underestimate the youth's identity.

But now, the Fire Country had joined in the battle and although only the Emperor alone had come, everyone there however knew what that truly meant. But even then, the youth was still saying such things flippantly which greatly displeased the other two Commanders.

“Just merely an Emperor? That's putting it too lightly! Do you know how powerful the Fire Country is? Since the Fire Country was founded, they had always sat in the seat reigning supreme over the various countries. Many of those who had overestimated themselves and provoked them had all in the end lost their home countries where their lands became part of the Fire Country, to forever disappear from the world!” One of the Commanders could not help but retort in contempt.

The youth glanced at him and his eyes flashed with displeasure. The Condor Country's Commander in Chief's heart filled with terror and he quickly said: “Lord Lin Xiao, please do not be angry. What he spoke was the truth as the Fire Country is really not that easy to deal with.”

The youth named Lin Xiao laughed coldly and swung his eyes

onto the Commander who had spoken rudely to say in a sneer: "Angry? What is there for me to get angry with with a bunch of trash like this? I just think that you all really wouldn't be able to sink any lower. An alliance of four countries just to invade a tiny Qi Kingdom and it had taken you so much effort. And now only a measly two people from the Fire Country had appeared and it has already frightened you into such a state. You guys are just a joke."

The expression on the Condor Country's Commander in Chief's face wasn't looking too good but he held himself back, while the faces of the other two Commanders had already darkened completely. Although they were nowhere near as powerful as the Condor Country, but as Chief Commanders of their countries' military, they had never had to suffer such insults!

"Just two people? Don't tell me you did not see it. When those two people appeared, several thousands of our soldiers outside the Imperial City's gates had all died without even having their bodies intact! You are really so foolish to think that the Fire Country's Emperor would suddenly appear alone? That man beside him, possesses extraordinary powers!" One of the Commanders spat through gritted teeth.

Chapter 1163: “Mob Slap – Second Form (4)”

Lin Xiao’s eyes narrowed as he stared at the two Commanders.

“What you two are trying to say is that you do not intend to carry on fighting?”

The two commanders immediately retorted: “How are we to fight? That is the Fire Country’s Emperor right there! We had come here merely to support and assist the Condor Country’s army anyway, and are not that determined to completely annihilate the Qi Kingdom. We have already spent so much time here and have done enough. If we are expected to make the Fire Country our enemy, I am afraid we will not be able to do that!”

[No matter how powerful the Condor Country is, it isn’t as important as their lives.]

Lin Xiao did not say a word, but his eyes were already shining with a malicious glint. The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief detected the change in the youth and had wanted to say something but was already too late!

Two rays of Purple Spirit energy shot out from Lin Xiao’s hands, coiling straight around the two Commanders’ neck!

In a blink, the two muscular Commanders clad in their armour who were seated atop their warhorses were lifted into the air by the two rays of spirit energy, their throats being squeezed by a powerful force, cutting off their air supply bit by bit. The two men kicked and struggled in mid air, their horrified gazes locked upon Lin Xiao whose body was glowing with the flare of Purple Spirit energy.

[Purple Spirit!]

[That weak and frail looking youth was actually a Purple Spirit at the pinnacle of power!]

[Invisible and formless, the fear gripped the hearts of the two

Commanders, their eyes wide with horror.]

“The two of you listen here. Today, you’ll fight whether you like it or not. If I find out that anyone is thinking of escaping, I will make them realise what it means to live a fate worse than death!” Lin Xiao said, his eyes narrowed to a slit, the malicious expression on his face undoubtable.

“Do you understand?” He continued to ask.

The two Commanders immediately nodded, not daring to resist any further.

Lin Xiao then retracted his spirit power and the two men fell crashing to the ground, gasping heavily for air with their hands grasping at their necks, the shock still evident in their eyes as they stared at Lin Xiao.

“Get your sorry behinds back to your armies and when the Condor Country’s bugle sounds, both of you would do well to launch an attack immediately!” Lin Xiao threatened coldly.

The two Commanders scrambled onto their horses and fled back to their armies.

“Now, sound the bugle to signal the attack and don’t take up anymore of my time. It’s just two useless pieces of trash and they were actually able to scare all of you to such a state.” Lin Xiao said with a sneer as he looked at the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief.

Under Lin Xiao’s orders, the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief had no choice but to comply and the bugle was sounded quickly. After a momentary quiet, the armies finally launched another attack upon the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City!

Jun Wu Xie stood in midair as she stared at the armies of the three countries moving to launch another attack and the murder in her eyes could no longer be contained.

“Before the Fire Country’s army gets here, we cannot let them get

past those gates.” Jun Wu Xie said, her eyes narrowing up. She needed to buy enough time to drag it out till the Qi Kingdom’s final hope arrives!

“As you wish.” Jun Wu Yao turned his head to look smilingly at Jun Wu Xie.

[As long as she wants it, as long as she seeks it, he will satisfy them all one by one.]

Originally, there had only been several hurricanes blocking the way outside the Imperial City. But just as Jun Wu Yao’s voice fell, the number of those hurricanes suddenly grew to become ten times the original number!

The densely gathered hurricanes fully blocked the way towards every inch of the city’s walls, which completely denied anyone of a chance to attack the city!

Those who had rushed to surround the Imperial City had in an instant, been sucked into the hurricanes and disappeared from sight!

The quantity of the highly deadly hurricanes was increasing quickly, driving great fear and terror into the heart of the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief and even Lin Xiao who had been steadily cool all this time had shown signs of cracking.

Chapter 1164: “Mob Slap – Second Form (5)”

All of a sudden, Lin Xiao charged out front from the back of the army of soldiers. He had not intended to involve himself in such a rudimentary level battle of the Lower Realm but the man who had created those hurricanes was definitely someone who was not that simple. In order for the plan to continue to be executed, he had to make a move!

Lin Xiao turned into a purple ray of light as he charged to go to the front of the army and a pair of wings formed with bones suddenly appeared on his back, bringing him up in mid air, to come face to face Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao!

“Who are you?” Lin Xiao’s eyes had narrowed to a slit and he did not even glance at Jun Wu Xie even once, but fixed his eyes squarely upon Jun Wu Yao. He knew that the strange hurricanes were all the work of this devilishly handsome looking man.

Jun Wu Yao’s brow lifted as he looked at the wings made up of bones and the corners of his mouth curled up.

“Bone Shifting Tribe? Flying series ring spirit?”

Surprise showed on Lin Xiao’s face. He had not expected that in the Lower Realm, there would actually be a person who would know about his origins with just one glance, and had even known that the wings on his back was actually his ring spirit.

“You are from the Middle Realm?” Lin Xiao asked warily, but he did not detect any spirit powers emitting from Jun Wu Yao’s body at all.

Jun Wu Yao ignored him completely and turned to look at Jun Wu Xie.

“Want him alive?”

Jun Wu Xie nodded.

Lin Xiao glared at Jun Wu Yao with his jaws clenched tightly, thinking just what his words had meant.

However, when Jun Wu Yao turned his head back, Lin Xiao saw a pair of violet eyes, looking every inch like a demon, that made his blood freeze up in an instant.

“How can it be possible.....” Lin Xiao’s eyes bulged with pure incredulity. Under the Heavens, a person who possessed violet coloured eyes, was only that one man in the legends!

[He didn’t die?]

[Impossible!]

Endless terror instantly shot throughout Lin Xiao’s body. He suddenly flapped his wings as the blood quickly drained out from his face, acting like he had seen a ghost, turning himself around to fly speedily in the opposite direction!

[Run!]

[He needed to escape!]

[Or he will die!]

“Running away?” Jun Wu Yao lifted one side of his brows and he suddenly lifted his free hand as a black coloured mist shot out towards Lin Xiao who was attempting to escape. The black mist was moving at a speed faster than Lin Xiao’s flying and in the blink of an eye, Lin Xiao was hopelessly tangled within that black mist, as a loud cry came exploding out of his throat!

No matter how hard he flapped his bone wings thinking to escape this nightmarish place, the black mist was dragging him quickly back to come before Jun Wu Yao!

“Let me go! Let me go! Do not kill me!” The smug arrogance on his face disappeared and was not about to come back, the panic and fear on his face making him look rather wretched.

On the hand that Jun Wu Yao had lifted, his fingers slowly

closed.

Excruciating pain spread through every single inch of Lin Xiao's body. He howled and pleaded incessantly. Not even in his dreams would he have thought that here in the Lower Realm, he would meet the demon who had made the entire Middle Realm completely submit!

"I beg you, do not kill me! Da....." Before Lin Xiao had been able to finish his words, the black mist had already wrapped him up entirely in darkness, swallowing him up together with the words he had not managed to finish saying.

Jun Wu Yao's violet eyes were suddenly once again replaced by black, an icy murderous aura behind the smile as the corners of his mouth curled up. He turned his head back and stared at Jun Wu Xie whose body was glowing with a blue spirit glow. "Does this mean that Little Xie is intending to fight?"

Jun Wu Xie's cold voice replied: "I want to personally exact vengeance for the Rui Lin Army, with my own two hands!"

Upon saying that, she suddenly broke free from Jun Wu Yao's embrace, leaping right towards the densely packed army at her feet!

Chapter 1165: “Mob Slap – Second Form (6)”

Right at the moment that Jun Wu Xie threw herself downwards in a leap, the little black cat on her shoulder suddenly grew in size in midair, to morph into a magnificent and ferocious massive black beast that caught Jun Wu Xie firmly as they landed!

Like a ravenous and ferocious tiger that just came down the mountain, it charged right towards the mass of soldiers!

Appearing suddenly right in the midst of the flustered army of soldiers, Jun Wu Xie’s blue spirit power glow flared brightly, her eyes cold as steely knife points, delivering merciless slaughter onto the soldiers together with the ferocious black beast!

The blue glowing figure cut like a sickle through multiple thousands of soldiers in a blue arc, executing a mad massacre over the people whose hands were stained with the blood of the Rui Lin Army’s soldiers.

Jun Wu Yao stood in midair, reaching his hand out to open a humongous cloth sack hanging from his hip.

Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit suddenly popped their tiny heads out from the sack curiously.

“Meh?” Lord Meh Meh stared at the dark mass of people below. On the day that Jun Xie had “married” Qu Xing Rui, as Qu Wen Hao’s consciousness had been forcibly restored temporarily, he had revoked the control the Spirit Taming Bone Flute had over Lord Meh Meh on that same day.

“Puu?” The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit tugged at its pair of big ears and spotted Jun Wu Xie charging among the mass of people in slaughter. Its fur immediately turned a bright red shade of blood and its blood eyes shone with an insatiable bloodlust!

“Go.” Jun Wu Yao picked up the two foolish beasts from within the sack. When Jun Wu Xie had announced that they would be

bringing forward their departure, he had decided on his own to bring the two little fellas with them.

Let these soldiers from the three country alliance have a taste of the kind of terror and havoc these Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts were capable of wrecking, onto them!

At the moment that Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit were thrown down, two brilliantly bright flashes of light exploded in the air!

The tiny balls of light expanded in an instant, as if two tiny suns had suddenly dropped from the Heavens, blinding everyone around them!

In the next instant!

Two enormous Spirit Beasts appeared within the sight of the soldiers. The gigantic white beast that Lord Meh Meh had morphed into had upon landing, immediately crushed an innumerable number of enemy soldiers. The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit was quite a lot smaller in size than Lord Meh Meh, but its speed was astoundingly fast, like a red bolt of lightning flashing speedily through the mass of soldiers, that left behind a long trail of blood and gore in its wake.

With two Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts added in, the entire battlefield quickly erupted into absolute and perfect chaos!

The Commander in Chief of the Condor Country sat atop his horse right at the back of the armies, watching in flabbergasted silence at the mess the entire battlefield had turned into.

He really could not believe his own eyes. All his previous misgivings had only been due to the Fire Country's military might alone, but now, without even having seen a shadow of the Fire Country's army, just the Fire Country's Emperor himself and two Spirit Beasts had already thrown the entire battlefield into utter chaos! And with the layer upon layer of hurricanes in front of the

Imperial City, how were they going to launch an attack on the city?

Whereas for that overbearing “Lord Lin Xiao” who looked at everyone with contempt in his eyes, even he had disappeared from sight completely after a single strike from the flawlessly handsome looking man. Fear grew exponentially as it crept into his heart and spread everywhere!

[It was only two people!]

[Just two people only!]

[But they had put up a protection around the Qi Kingdom as impenetrable as a thick steel wall that they were unable to overcome.]

[Against such terrifying power, who would be able to go against them? !]

Nearly three million soldiers in the enemy’s army and their attack was being held down by just Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao. And throughout the entire battle, Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao did not even suffer so much as a scratch, while the party suffering heavy casualties was instead the armies of the three country alliance!

The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief’s hand gripping the reins began to shake and tremble.

A fifteen year old Blue spirit! And a man so powerful he took down a Purple Spirit at the pinnacle of power in one second! With two more Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts added into the mix, how were they expected to continue with this battle! ?

Chapter 1166: “Mob Slap – Second Form (7)”

However, before the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief had even recovered from the shock, a bright light flashed from Jun Wu Xie’s fingers!

Another white figure suddenly appeared in the midst of the crowd of soldiers, kicking up another storm of bloody slaughter!

Jun Wu Xie had summoned Drunk Lotus, and the killing was getting more and more intense!

Within the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City, all the soldiers standing on the city’s wall stood completely stunned as they saw what was happening right before their eyes. They could not even understand everything that was happening in front of them. Why had the Fire Country’s Emperor suddenly appeared to help them?

What shocked them even more was the extremely young looking little Emperor could be so ferocious the very moment he struck.

[Blue spirit!]

[That was a blue spirit!]

[A fifteen year old blue spirit! A fact that was just too unbelievable to all of them!]

[The most shocking sight before them, were those two jaw dropping magnificent Spirit Beasts!]

Whether it was from seeing their attack power or judging from their mammoth size, it was easy to guess that they were definitely of the supreme Guardian Grade.

A Guardian Grade Spirit Beast, was extremely rare by itself. Needless to mention one that remained by the side of a person, few people have even sighted one at all! But this little Emperor of the Fire Country, had actually brought out two Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts, which was just impossible to all of them there.

Even the Thousand Beast City who were well known for taming Spirit Beasts, could only make use of their city's legendary treasure, the Spirit Taming Bone Flute to tame one Guardian Grade Spirit Beast. To be able to have two Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts follow a person's orders, was just too ludicrous to believe and had never been heard of before!

The Qi Kingdom's soldiers were astounded and the citizens could not believe that the Heavens would give to them such a bright ray of hope right at the final moment.

Only the Rui Lin Army.....

Only all the Rui Lin Army's soldiers in the city looked through the broken gates, through the impossible wall of wind, their eyes fixed upon the tiny figure perched upon the massive black beast's back.

In one moment, the entire group of stalwart and steel willed men found their eyes red rimmed.

Others might not know who the Fire Country's little Emperor was, but these men from the Rui Lin Army knew that person better than anyone!

[That massive black beast with a gold streak on its chest, wasn't that the same one that belonged to their very own Young Miss! ?]

[Under the Heavens, the only one person who could ride on that massive black beast, was only their Young Miss of the Rui Lin Army!]

[Jun Wu Xie!]

[Their Young Miss had returned!]

[The pillar of their hearts has come back!]

That one discovery made all the Rui Lin Army soldiers who had been prepared to die fighting their last battle suddenly feel the blood boil once again in their hearts!

“Everyone, follow me to charge right out! We cannot allow His Majesty of the Fire Country to fight on our battlefield for us, while we stand here to watch the show!” Long Qi was the first one to recover and react, and he immediately charged to go outside the city’s gates, issuing a rousing call with his fist in the air!

He knew, Jun Wu Xie would never abandon the Rui Lin Army, never give up on the Qi Kingdom. No matter how she came to be the Emperor of the Fire Country, she would still be their very own Young Miss!

“Kill! Kill! Kill!” Every single Rui Lin Army soldier had eyes filled with murder, all ready to charge out of the city to fight alongside Jun Wu Xie.

But Jun Wu Yao who was just above the city’s wall suddenly turned his head to look at the twenty over thousand Rui Lin Army soldiers gathered eagerly near the gates. He smile faintly at them and said: “Apologies, I cannot allow any of you to go out there.”

“Young Master Wu Yao! Please open up a way for us before the gates! Let us go out there and help!” Long Qi pleaded earnestly as he looked at Jun Wu Yao. They cannot let Jun Wu Xie fight out there alone.

Jun Wu Yao then replied with a smile: “I will not.”

“Why?” Long Qi asked helplessly.

“I do not want Little Xie to be pained any further. There isn’t many of you left in the Rui Lin Army and any more losses incurred might make her cry.” Jun Wu Yao said and turned away, to look at Jun Wu Xie continuing to deal out her unstoppable massacre.

Chapter 1167: “Mob Slap – Second Form (8)”

Jun Wu Yao's words, made the men in the Rui Lin Army fall silent.

The invasion of the four countries' allied forces had inflicted very severe losses upon the Rui Lin Army. They could no longer keep count of the number of brothers they had lost on the battlefield and couldn't remember how they had managed to climb out from among those lifeless bodies. It wasn't that their hearts did not feel the pain, it wasn't that they did not harbour hatred, but they just did not have the time all this while that allowed them to let the pain sink in.

Jun Wu Xie's concern for them plucked right on the string stretched taut over their hearts. They understood why Jun Wu Xie thought that way, where she would rather fight the battle alone, than lose another single one of their men.

“But.....” Long Qi seemed to want to say something more.

But Jun Wu Yao shook his head and said: “Trust her.”

Long Qi gaped like a goldfish, unable to say anything.

At that moment, Jun Xian came walking over. He placed a hand on Long Qi's shoulder and Jun Xian raised his head to look at Jun Wu Yao.

“You can ascertain..... us of her safety?” As a member of the Jun Family, Jun Xian was feeling extremely proud that he had such an exemplary example of a fine granddaughter but he could not help feeling the worries of a grandfather.

Jun Wu Yao smiled at that. “I am certain.”

“Alright.” Jun Xian nodded his head, and suppressed the worry deep within his heart, as he turned to look at the soldiers within the city.

“The entire army is to make good use of the time now to properly reassess the situation. Carry the injured to get them treated and keep your spirits up!” The battle was still not finished and no matter how powerful Jun Wu Xie was, she would not be able to last indefinitely. What they needed to do now, was not to worry themselves to death standing there, but to make full use of the time that Jun Wu Xie was fighting to gain for them, to regroup the utterly wrecked and exhausted army, to ready themselves to face the upcoming battle.

With Jun Xian order, all the soldiers within the city quickly readjusted themselves in that period and the citizens helped to quickly carry the wounded to put them in a safer location, while all the physicians within the city poured out to quickly treat the wounds of the heroes who fought to defend them.

Mo Qian Yuan summoned all the Imperial Physicians within the Palace and they brought along all the herbs and elixirs that could be of any use to help with the situation here.

At that moment, what all of them cared about was not the value of those medicine, but more on how many of the Qi Kingdom’s warriors they would be able to save!

Outside the city, the attack of the allied forces from the three countries were completely stopped by Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao, but they still had not given up on invading into the Imperial City. Arrows tipped with fire were sent flying into the Imperial City in endless volleys, the arrows passing over the wall of wind, to land inside, igniting clusters of fire to burn within the Imperial City.

The physically exhausted soldiers wanted to go put out the fires, but were pressed down by the common citizens, asking them to get as much rest as possible, and leave the putting out of the fires to them.

Seeing the many figures of the citizens running around, watching

the young children carrying water buckets as they followed behind the busy adults, the soldiers who had undergone the fiery trials of war were highly moved.

These were the citizens they had protected by putting their lives on the line. The sacrifices made were all worth it!

The strength of every single person that could be drawn upon had been mobilized. Medicine, food, water, blankets..... Anything and everything that their soldiers could use were brought by the citizens to be pushed into the hands of the warriors.

Mo Qian Yuan stood directing all of it, his golden robe singed by fire in several places and was in a sorry state. The crown which symbolised his Imperial authority that was upon his head had fallen to the ground in the midst of all the running about and he had not even had the time to retrieve it.

One sees true feelings in times of adversity. At this time when the Qi Kingdom was in trapped in a crisis, the determination and belief that had been hidden in the souls of the people of the kingdom had completely shone. They banded together in unity, not a word of spoken about giving up!

Out on the battlefield, the number of kills Jun Wu Xie scored could no longer be measured. Bright red blood dyed her silver armour completely red, the same colour as her eyes as she delivered the all out massacre upon her enemies.

Chapter 1168: “Mob Slap – Second Form (9)”

[Kill!]

That was the one and only thought in Jun Wu Xie’s mind.

With Jun Wu Xie having already broken through to the blue spirit, and the perfect coordination from the black beast, it allowed them to weave with ease through the chaotic battlefield, the speed of the black beast being at a pace that those soldiers could never dream of keeping up with.

The intensely overpowering stench of blood had already numbed Jun Wu Xie’s sense of smell.

She was not a person inclined towards slaughter, but in order to seek revenge for that eighty thousand spirits of the Rui Lin Army soldiers, to exact vengeance upon the Qi Kingdom’s soldiers and citizens who had been buried under the flames of this war, she didn’t mind turning into a demon that climbed up from the very depths of hell!

Kill to stop the killing!

The Chief Commanders from the other two armies went running in a fluster to seek out the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief. They had personally witnessed Lin Xiao being captured when that man standing in midair had not done anything much. The situation had turned into such a disadvantageous state and they really did not dare to continue on with the attack!

“What should we do? That Lord Lin Xiao of yours was dealt with in a single stroke and if we continue the attack, our losses will be too much to take!” From the tone of the Chief Commander, it had already betrayed the obvious fear he was feeling.

“We’re not fighting anymore! You want to attack, you do it yourself! Now that the Fire Country’s Emperor has already appeared, he had most definitely not come here alone. The Fire

Country's grand army will surely arrive at anytime and I am withdrawing my army from here! In this incident, we have really been dragged into it by the Condor Country. It's just so....." The other Chief Commander was already toying with the idea of retreat and he was about to curse out when the might of the Condor Country reduced his intended outburst into an intelligible grumble.

The Condor Country's Commander in Chief recovered from his shock as the loud complaints from the two other men rocked his heart.

[Should they continue to fight?]

Even Lin Xiao had been taken down. And he had possessed the power of the Purple Spirit, the pinnacle of power. With an enemy who was able to so easily squash a Purple Spirit, would they still have a chance to win?

At that moment, even he had the idea of retreat gnawing at his heart. Finally when Lord Meh Meh's nine tails threw hundreds of soldiers into the air in a single sweep, the Condor Country's Commander in Chief immediately made his decision!

"Retreat! Every man pull back!" He immediately got the bugle sounded to signal an all out retreat and all the soldiers that had surrounded the Imperial City finally began to recede back just like the tide going out.

No one had ever thought, that with the appearance of Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao, the allied forces of the three country had not only found themselves unable to launch any attacks upon the Imperial City, but had in such a short period of time made the enemy beat such a hasty retreat.

Jun Wu Xie's unhindered slaughter, Drunk Lotus's brutal power and the appearance of the two mammoth sized Spirit Beasts had completely crushed the slightest inclination to fight in any of them.

And one more thing terrorized them more than everything else, and that was Jun Wu Yao who had not really made any more moves against them!

The sheer numbers of hurricanes surrounding the outside of the Imperial City was already not a power that a mortal could possess and who knew what kind of terrifying consequences he would bring if he really made his move?

Upon the Imperial City's wall, the Qi Kingdom's soldiers could see the three countries' allied forces retreating. Finally after being under such a long period of depression, the soldiers exploded into joyous and raucous cheers in sheer delight! They raised the swords in their hands high up and waved them in the air, and the Qi Kingdom's flag that had been scorched by fire was pulled down, as it was quickly replaced with brand new piece that was immediately hoisted up to flutter high above the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City once more!

It was just like this tiny but highly resilient kingdom, as under the fierce howling wind, it stretched out fluttering brightly, and would not sag and fall!

The enemy armies beat a hasty retreat, but Jun Wu Xie did not intend to spare them so easily.

She led Lord Meh Meh together with the others in pursuit, but she had just run a few steps when she was suddenly picked up by Jun Wu Yao who looped an arm around her from behind, to fly up into the air.

"Look." Jun Wu Yao said while raising his hand, to point in the direction that the enemy armies were retreating in.

Chapter 1169: “Raging Purple Spirit (1)”

In the direction that the three country allied armies were retreating into, a large army was charging right towards them!

Above that army, flew the banner of the Fire Country!

Under the strong wind blowing, the banner fluttered, as war drums shook the skies!

The three country allied armies who were in the midst of their retreat would not even in their dreams have thought, that at the very moment they turned to pull themselves back, they would run smack right into the Fire Country’s army!

At the forefront of the Fire Country’s army, was Qiao Chu and the other youths who were leading. Under the strong gale blowing, they waved at the faraway Jun Wu Xie, their faces brimming with vigor, looking highly excited. After defeating the Prosper Country’s soldiers, they had not tallied even a moment and had immediately set out to come to the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City. The blood splatters on their bodies had not even dried out and they were already seen approaching all covered in dust.

The armies of the three countries found themselves suddenly faced with the Fire Country’s army and a mournful wail erupted from the entire army!

“All charge!” Qiao Chu leapt up from his horse, and he flew right towards the armies of the three countries, the spirit ring in his hand suddenly emitting a bright light, to throw an enormous Ying Yang Bear into the middle of the enemy soldiers. Its enormous body was like a meat grinder, when in an instant, its two powerful bear paws stretched out to its sides to send all the enemy soldiers surrounding it flying through the air!

Following right behind, Hua Yao, Fan Zhuo, Fei Yan and Rong Ruo leapt into battle at the same time, their ring spirits appearing

in successive blinding flashes of light, immediately turning into battle machines to push right into the thousands upon thousands of enemy soldiers before them in a mad rush!

The Fire Country's army were just one step behind them and they crashed heavily right into the soldiers of the three countries' allied armies in an orgy of slaughter!

The armies of the three countries' allied forces had already been thrown into a fluster by Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao's attack and they had lost their will to fight, the aggression of soldiers dissipated as they turned in flight, to run away like dogs whose owners have died. Now they had just found themselves on the receiving end of a head on charge by the Fire Country's ferocious army and everything descended into chaos for all of them.

The Fire Country's army combined power, was inferior only to the Rui Lin Army. Although they were not like the Rui Lin Army where one soldier could take on ten men, but the ferocity of one million lions with the boosted morale from a recent victory, it brought the power of those soldiers to a whole new level at that moment!

The armies clashed, a battle of will.

The three country's allied armies, lost badly in that aspect!

Moreover, among their armies, they did not have any exceptionally outstanding soldiers, that was able to stand up against Qiao Chu and his comrades' dominating presence as they swept over the panicked soldiers!

Under that overwhelming attack, the three country's allied forces were quickly being defeated. They wanted to retreat backwards, but Jun Wu Xie had her two Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts there sealing off their escape route!

Sandwiched from the front and back, the allied armies who had burned and looted throughout the Qi Kingdom for two whole

weeks were completely routed in an instant.

Anguished howls and mournful wails sounded from the enemy armies incessantly!

Jun Wu Xie's eyes were still red and bloodshot, her entire body fully covered in blood, but she did not have the slightest intention in stopping her hand.

If she had not come here today, these people before her eyes would definitely not have spared even a single common citizen within the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City who were completely innocent.

On her way here, Jun Wu Xie had already seen too many cities of the Qi Kingdom which had been looted clean, blood covering the entire grounds inside, dead and lifeless bodies left lying everywhere. Those once bustling and prosperous cities, had now turned into cities that stood dead and empty, where everyone even from the elderly in their eighties, all the way down to newborn infants, the enemy had not spared a single one of them!

In Jun Wu Xie's eyes, these men were no longer humans, but cruel and barbaric beasts!

When dealing with brutal beasts, was there a reason for her to be merciful?

With a kick to send the soldiers surrounding her flying, Jun Wu Xie suddenly leapt up from the black beast's back, and when she was in the air, the blue spirit glow around her body suddenly changed into a brilliant flash of purple!

The Purple Spirit manifests!

Chapter 1170: “Raging Purple Spirit (2)”

The Purple Spirit glow shone brilliantly over the top of the armies. That blinding light dazzling everyone among them all.

[Purple Spirit!]

[That’s a Purple Spirit!]

Everyone stared in disbelief with their mouths agape, looking at Jun Wu Xie wrapped in that purple glow. They had never ever heard of a fifteen year old youth who had attained the Purple Spirit!

Jun Wu Xie’s blue spirit powers earlier had already stunned them and she had suddenly pushed her powers to explode to the Purple Spirit!

That fact made the already demoralised hearts of the enemy soldiers suddenly sink further, falling to the bottom of a deep gorge!

However, the matter had still not reached its end.

After Jun Wu Xie’s powers exploded into the Purple Spirit, several other bursts of purple coloured spirit glow lit up within the horde of soldiers in quick succession!

The youths who had charged the most ferociously into the enemy’s ranks had suddenly raised their spirit power level to the Purple Spirit as well!

The Purple Spirit that had the people in the world longing hopelessly, an unscalable mountain that had only existed in legends for so many long years, had reappeared right before their eyes today. And at this appearance, there were six of them at the same time!

Despair fell like a heavy shroud over every single soldier of the three countries’ allied armies. They had not been able to handle a

blue spirit, what could they hope to do against the Purple Spirit, that was the pinnacle of power!

A series of hopeless wails rang out everywhere among the mass of soldiers, the streaks of Purple Spirit glow weaving through them, delivering death and despair.

The Fire Country's army were extraordinarily ferocious, together with the several Purple Spirits pushing the enemy deeper into the abyss, while the two mammoth sized Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts and the unbelievably powerful ring spirits completely crushed any last vestiges of confidence the three countries' allied armies might have left!

It became hopelessly one sided on the battlefield, as within this bloody battle, the enemy soldiers who had butchered countless soldiers in the Qi Kingdom, the invaders and looters of a countless number of the Qi Kingdom's citizens, finally fell in pools of blood.

The allied three countries' military encampment was shrinking continuously, and the Commanders of the armies surrounded within the mass of soldiers had their faces turned pale.

They had advanced triumphantly the entire way and had never thought that they would suffer such a heavy setback right at the final leg!

If not for that ragtag army made up of a motley mix of the Qi Kingdom's citizens that had held them back and dragged out their time, they would have taken over the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City before Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao got here, and the Qi Kingdom would have fallen. And if Jun Wu Xie and Jun Wu Yao had not gotten here in time, with the Qi Kingdom fallen, the Qi Kingdom would not have been saved by Fire Country's army.

Get one step wrong, and every step after goes wrong.

It was that very ragtag army that they despised so thoroughly that had saved the Qi Kingdom from final despair, and then the

tables had turned, where the Qi Kingdom climbed out from its dire straits while the one fallen into utter despair had become the three country alliance!

When night fell, firelight reddened the sky. Upon the battlefield, countless heaps of dead bodies lay everywhere, as blood flowed into rivers under everyone's feet.

An army that numbered almost three million was cleanly annihilated in half a day. Nobody would ever forget, in the final stages of the battle, when there had still been close to two million soldiers in the allied army, Jun Wu Yao who had been standing at the back of the battle all this time, only smiling and not saying a word, suddenly raised a hand to turn the battlefield into a sea of blood in a single instant. A blood mist had engulfed those two million soldiers in an instant, to leave behind mangled and mutilated bodies, and sticky bloodstains.

Jun Wu Xie stood panting within the sea of bodies, the blood splattered upon her now so thick it was dropping off her, the expression upon her face not showing disgust or disdain, but one of liberation.

She lifted her head, to look up at the sky reddened by the fires lit upon the battlefield, peering at the sprinkling of twinkling stars above, and the bright round moon.

[Vengeance for the Rui Lin Army, for the Qi Kingdom, has finally been exacted!]

Chapter 1171: “Raging Purple Spirit (3)”

But at that moment, there wasn't a single sliver of joy in Jun Wu Xie's heart. The overpowering stench of blood was now starting to hit her hard. She did not feel triumphant. On a battlefield like this, victory or defeat did not exist for her. She would very much rather none of this had ever happened and it would be enough for her if all the deceased Rui Lin Army soldiers could be returned to her!

“Little Xie.....” Qiao Chu's hand trembled as he walked towards Jun Wu Xie. This was the first time he had experienced such a large scale battle, his youthful blood aroused by the overwhelming intensity on this battlefield. All youths yearned to grow into a real man, to become a hero that protected and defended their country.

However Qiao Chu and his gang were in a unique situation. The places they belonged to had long abandoned them and they did not know what kind of a place their birthplace was to them anymore, and how were they to protect and defend a place that made them homeless and became orphans.

But Jun Wu Xie had given to all of them just such an opportunity. From the moment that Jun Wu Xie had agreed to become the Emperor of the Fire Country, Qiao Chu and his gang had decided that they would join her.

Whether it was the Qi Kingdom or the Fire Country, to them, both would be places they strived to protect and defend.

“How are the losses for the Fire Country's army?” Jun Wu Xie turned her eyes back, her eyes no longer red and bloodshot.

“Still within an acceptable range. The enemy had already lost all will to fight upon seeing the Fire Country's army and were not difficult to deal with.” Qiao Chu said scratching his head, hard for him to imagine that after going through two major battles, their losses had remained less than one tenth of their total numbers, which was a result that turned out somewhat more than

acceptable.

But if the reason for it was pursued, it would not be all due to the might of the Fire Country's army.

In terms of might, the Rui Lin Army was above the Fire Country's army, but the Fire Country's army's numbers gained them a huge advantage, and they wore the halo of being the biggest and mightiest country throughout the lands, which caused many armies to have developed an innate timidity towards them.

Moreover, Jun Wu Yao's inescapable instant annihilation was the most devastating attack where the grand total number of kills the entire Fire Country achieved would not match up to him, one man alone.

Recalling that last final strike, Qiao Chu could not help himself but have his head shrink down into his shoulders.

[Big Brother Wu Yao is truly more savage than anything else he knows!]

Jun Wu Xie nodded. Mobilizing the Fire Country's army, had firstly because she had been forced by circumstances, and secondly to accede to Lei Chen's request, but she she did not wish to have to deplete a big chunk of the Fire Country's military in order to save the Qi Kingdom. Afterall, she was now the Fire Country's Emperor and it was something she didn't want to see.

"Your Majesty!" Covered in blood splatters, Lei Chen wiped the blood stains off his face and came before Jun Xie to say: "The Commanders in Chiefs of the three countries have been captured and I am here to request for Your Majesty's orders. To kill or not?"

It was wondered whether Jun Wu Yao had done it intentionally. With his one strike right at the final moment, only the three Commanders of the three countries were spared, forcing them to witness their entire armies that was millions strong instantly reduced to pools of blood. When Lei Chen had been clearing up the

battlefield, he had discovered the three Commanders who had lost their minds and he had the men captured to now await Jun Xie's decision for them.

Jun Wu Xie's eyes narrowed up and she said in a cold voice: "Keep them imprisoned. Bring them into the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City and interrogate them."

Having received his orders, Lei Chen immediately left to make the arrangements.

With the battlefield reduced into pools of blood, there really wasn't much they had to clear up. After the Fire Country's army regrouped themselves, they began to move towards the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City.

Having just managed to get a short breather after the three allied countries' combined attack, when the Qi Kingdom's citizens saw the dark mass of another army approaching over the horizon, their heartstrings instinctively tightened inside.

Chapter 1172: “Alliance (1)”

Fortunately, they quickly noticed that the army was hoisting the Fire Country’s flag, which allowed them to heave a small sigh of relief

When the Fire Country’s army reached the gates of the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City, they stopped outside and Lei Chen got the soldiers to pitch camp to for them to rest, and ordered that they were not to set foot inside the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City without authourization.

After having repeatedly suffered attacks from the invaders, the slightest movement from the army would make the people in the Qi Kingdom nervous, and Lei Chen thoughtfully wanted to prevent any unwanted incidents to occur.

Jun Wu Xie and a small group of them went into the Qi Kingdom’s Imperial City. At the edges of the Imperial City, the place was filled with the Qi Kingdom’s soldiers and citizens. They had not dispersed immediately but had stood around the Imperial City’s gates to look at Jun Xie who had saved them all.

Mo Qian Yuan stood right at the front of the crowd as he peered at the unfamiliar face. Even if the looks had changed, he would never mistake that pair of cold eyes that were like autumn’s water for someone else and never would he be able to forget that black beast that Jun Wu Xie had once used to threaten him.

[How did she become the Fire Country’s Emperor?]

Mo Qian Yuan’s heart was filled with confusion and bewilderment but no matter what, she was the one who saved the Qi Kingdom today.

Any question that he asked would not change that fact.

Mo Qian Yuan strode forward to welcome Jun Wu Xie and in everyone’s eyes, representing everyone within the Qi Kingdom, he

cupped a hand over his fist and bowed from the hip, to say in a loud and clear voice: “This time round, we are thankful for the help the Fire Country has extended to us. Your utmost kindness and benevolence would be deeply remembered by every single person in the Qi Kingdom.”

Long before, he was a Crown Prince who was about to be deposed, and she was a decadent wastrel of a Young Miss that people looked upon with shame.

Now, he was pushed by her to be elevated into ascending the throne while she had become the ruler of the mightiest country throughout the lands.

It had only been one short year, and a change of such an extent was really deeply moving to a person.

Jun Wu Xie stared calmly at Mo Qian Yuan. At that moment, she was not the Young Miss of the Lin Palace in the Qi Kingdom, Jun Wu Xie, but the Fire Country’s newly minted Emperor, Jun Xie. From the moment she had accepted Lei Chen’s request and led the army to come save the Qi Kingdom, it had meant that she would have to temporarily give up her identity as Jun Wu Xie for a period.

Jun Wu Xie’s gaze involuntarily turned slightly to look to the side, where Jun Xian and Jun Qing were standing, their faces highly anxious. Those were her family members who had given her so much warmth after she was reborn, and the people that was important to her in the world.

Separated for an entire year, there was already no way her heart could miss them any more than she was feeling. Now that they’ve met, she was not able to run straight into their arms, and call out to her Grandfather, Uncle.....

Jun Wu Xie felt as if a sharp edged piece of rock had lodged in her heart, cutting into her painfully, highly stifling and making her feel the pain throb endlessly.

[Cannot acknowledge.....]

Whether it was for the Fire Country, or because of the Twelve Palaces, she would not be able to revert back to her identity as Jun Wu Xie.

[Wait a while more!]

[Just a little while more!]

Jun Wu Xie turned her eyes back, forcibly suppressing the surge of emotions within her chest, as she looked at Mo Qian Yuan with a calm pair of eyes.

“No need for thanks. What happened today, is a show of sincerity from the Fire Country to ask for an alliance with the Qi Kingdom.” Jun Wu Xie said.

Mo Qian Yuan lifted his head in bewilderment.

Meanwhile, Jun Wu Xie’s words had elicited a series of murmured whispers to spread through the crowd.

The Fire Country was the biggest and mightiest country in these lands and the Qi Kingdom was just a tiny place. The Qi Kingdom had just suffered such a huge setback and for them to recover their strength, it would still require a long period of time. For the mighty Fire Country to bring up an alliance at this point of time, in the ears of everyone within the Qi Kingdom, it could only be understood as..... Annexation!

With the Fire Country’s mammoth size, why would they need to form an alliance with such a tiny kingdom that was now struggling with the aftermath of war?

None of them had expected that just after the ravenous wolves had been chased off, they would immediately be faced with a ferocious tiger.

The citizens who had barely just been freed from the hopeless despair immediately found themselves feeling like they have just

walked into an icehouse.

Standing among the crowd, Jun Qing looked at that little niece of his before him and in his heart, he could not help but snigger to himself. That little lass of theirs, still had not learnt to speak. He then immediately took a wide stride forward!

Chapter 1173: “Alliance (2)”

“Your Majesty from the Fire Country.” Jun Qing greeted.

Jun Wu Xie fought to maintain her composure and turned to look at Jun Qing, her eyes tinged with puzzlement.

Jun Qing tried not to laugh out loud and said: “I wonder what did Your Majesty from the Fire Country means by an alliance?”

Jun Qing’s question made everyone within the city become nervous. It must be known that a million of the Fire Country’s lions were plopped right outside the city and they have witnessed for themselves just how terrifying the flawlessly handsome looking man standing behind Jun Xie truly was. Jun Xie’s words spoken earlier was obviously intending to annex the Qi Kingdom but Jun Qing was still insisting to ask such a question like this, which made everyone there burst out in cold sweat for Jun Qing.

Having been invaded by the four allied countries, the people of the Qi Kingdom were already physically and mentally exhausted and the Qi Kingdom’s forces was really unable to take on the Fire Country’s army at this point.

They only saw Jun Xie’s eyebrow lift up on one side, and everyone’s heart trembled, their minds going: “Oh no.” with some of the Qi Kingdom’s soldiers in fact nervously picking up the weapons they had just put down. But the Rui Lin Army soldiers all around were instead looking all calm and composed, their eyes contemptuous as they looked at the bunch of highly nervous people.

“Exactly as what those words mean.” Jun Wu Xie did not understand why her uncle would ask another time. Didn’t an alliance mean an alliance?

Jun Qing felt rather helpless in his heart. He had thought that Jun Wu Xie would have picked up some tact but from what he was

seeing, it had been wishful thinking. This little girl still had not realized how much fear her words had brought to the people here.

“This humble subject is just asking..... the alliance, will be formed as two individual countries, or with the Fire Country reigning supreme?” Jun Qing felt that his words could not have been any more direct than the way he had put it across.

With that question from Jun Qing, the people of the Qi Kingdom grew even more terrified.

The Emperor of the Fire Country had already said it so plainly, why was Lord Jun still being so persistent?

Fortunately, Jun Wu Xie finally understood the hint that her uncle was trying to give her. She swept her eyes over to look at the citizens who were looking highly tensed up and nervous, and turned to see the soldiers who have once again picked up their weapons, before she realized that her words earlier must have given everyone there quite a big scare.

Afterall, with the gaping difference between the two countries, there was absolutely no need for an alliance. If it was asked which countries would be able to take down the Qi Kingdom with their own power alone, it could only be the Fire Country. Moreover, the Qi Kingdom's current situation was in such dire straits, mentioning an alliance at this point of time would be as good as just gobbling them up.

Jun Wu Xie then cleared her throat and said: “It will naturally be as two individual powers. The Fire Country will still be the Fire Country and the Qi Kingdom will remain as the Qi Kingdom. The two countries are very far apart and although not too convenient, we can still look out for each other.”

Once those words came out, everyone within the Imperial City stared with their eyes widened, their faces in disbelief.

[The Fire Country is really just forming an alliance with them?

Not an annexation of them?]

Someone could not help but suspect that he was dreaming and aiming for his own cheek, he gave himself a big slap. The stinging and burning pain reassured him that everything that was happening was..... really true!

The corners of Jun Qing's mouth curled up very faintly as he tried to stifle his smile and nodded in satisfaction, before retreating cooperatively to the side.

Mo Qian Yuan then regained his senses. It was obvious he did not know Jun Wu Xie as well as Jun Qing did and had upon hearing Jun Wu Xie earlier words, misunderstood her like everyone else.

“Having Your Majesty from the Fire Country showing such benevolence is really causing the Qi Kingdom to become moved to tears. If the Fire Country does not mind it, then the Qi Kingdom is willing to join hands with the Fire Country under these Heavens!” Mo Qian Yuan exclaimed.

Jun Wu Xie nodded.

With Jun Wu Xie's response, the people within the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City heaved a sigh of relief, beginning to think that they had pinned their own petty minded yardstick to gauge a gentleman in their hearts, and were feeling rather guilty and embarrassed as they looked at Jun Xie.

Upon seeing the reaction of the people, the Rui Lin Army's soldiers harrumphed at them with disdain.

[Why would their Young Miss want to bother with annexing the Qi Kingdom?]

Chapter 1174: “Alliance (3)”

If Jun Wu Xie had wanted the throne in the Qi Kingdom, Mo Qian Yuan would not have even had a chance at it at all!

Having their own Young Miss suddenly becoming another country's Emperor, everyone within the Rui Lin Army were not only not showing any signs of non acceptance, but were instead all being very highly excited about it.

[See how bullish their Young Miss was?]

[Just one year outside, and she has already gotten hold of the throne of the biggest country throughout the lands!]

[The pride of their hearts!]

Once their hearts were more settled, and the people were feeling more at ease, Mo Qian Yuan and Jun Wu Xie exchanged a few words of pleasantries and then made arrangements for the injured soldiers and citizens to be treated before asking Jun Wu Xie whether the Fire Country needed any physicians where Lei Chen stated that their own military physicians were already adequate.

Lei Chen wasn't refusing to use the Qi Kingdom's help, but.....

They really didn't have that many injured through the battles and they had a great number of military physicians within their contingent. Having having seen Jun Wu Yao's unbelievable technique which killed nearly two million enemy soldiers in an instant, Lei Chen realized..... Even if Jun Xie had not acceded to his request in the beginning, with just him and his companions with their monstrous powers, they would be able to save the Qi Kingdom themselves.

At that moment, Lei Chen was feeling incomparably fortunate that Jun Xie had slightly miscalculated in his judgement or where was he going to find another Emperor that had broken through to the Purple Spirit for themselves?

After Jun Xie ascended to the throne, he had immediately led the army to save the Qi Kingdom without a single moment of delay. Although the Fire Country's army had followed the Imperial orders as they could not defy it, but towards the little Emperor who had led them into battle immediately upon his ascension, they had still felt somewhat displeased.

But when Jun Xie exhibited his Purple Spirit powers on the battlefield while having had the help from two gigantic Guardian Grade Spirit Beasts, together with his several youth companions with their Purple Spirit Powers and Jun Wu Yao who wiped out two million enemy soldiers in an instant.....

Some of the Fire Country's soldiers who had not fully accepted Jun Xie were now fully convinced. They had initially thought that having such a puny sized Emperor could not mean anything good for them.

But after this day.....

They all wished they could fall at Jun Xie's feet and shout out: "His Majesty to live a thousand years, a thousand thousand years!"

[Looking back since the founding of the Fire Country, when had they ever have an Emperor as monstrously prodigious as this?]

[A fifteen year old Purple Spirit.....]

[Ha!]

[They would hold bragging rights for life!]

The Fire Country's soldiers hummed a little tune and sang songs, their mood lifted. They had deeply experienced just how ferocious and wild their little Emperor's powers were!

But those from the Rui Lin Army who had been ordered to mix around with the Fire Country's soldiers had when they kept hearing the Fire Country's soldiers incessantly addressing Jun Xie as our ruler, our ruler..... their hearts had almost twisted up with agony!

[That was THEIR Young Miss!]

[THEIRS!]

The group of Rui Lin Army soldiers almost suffered from internal injuries from holding and bottling their feelings inside but they were helpless as Jun Xian had ordered that they must not reveal Jun Wu Xie's real identity and they had no choice but to continue holding back.....

Inside the city, Mo Qian Yuan returned to the Imperial Palace with Jun Wu Xie and her group of people, to discuss more about the alliance.

Jun Wu Xie instructed Lei Chen and the others to wait outside, and to look after the soldiers outside the city while she, Jun Wu Yao, and Qiao Chu with the other companions went into the Palace's main hall.

Inside the main hall, there were only Mo Qian Yuan with the Jun Family's father and son. The main hall's doors were then shut, separating them completely from everything outside the main hall.

Jun Wu Xie suddenly walked to go right before Jun Xian, and sweeping the front of her robes at her feet to the side, she fell to the floor on both knees!

“Grandfather!”

The emotions that Jun Xian fought so hard to hold back suddenly surged, and he was not able to suppress them any further. That voice calling out “Grandfather”, how long had he yearned so badly to hear it again? He immediately gave in to his tears that flowed down that battle hardened face and stretched out a trembling hand to help Jun Wu Xie up.

“Good enough you're back, good enough that you're back. Stand up to talk, the floor is cold.”

Although Jun Wu Xie had already grown so powerful that many people were now unable to surpass her, but in Jun Xian's eyes, she

was still his little granddaughter, that slightly bumbling and rather innocent little girl.

Chapter 1175: “Alliance (4)”

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes were slightly red rimmed. She had waited for this day when she would return for an entire year. But having undergone so much hardship to have finally come back, she was still unable to remain for long to bring joy to her most loved family members.

“Wu Xie..... What..... What is happening here? How did you suddenly become the Fire Country’s Emperor? Long Qi had told us before that you had some things to take care of and was not able to return. What is going on?” Jun Qing asked, his eyes similarly red, besides feeling the pain in his heart, he was still worried for Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie replied: “For some reason, I am temporarily unable to come back. As for the Fire Country’s ruling throne.....” Jun Wu Xie was not intending to tell the Jun Family’s father and son about the Twelve Palaces. That involved the powers in the Middle Realm and she was not willing to drag her family into it. Based on the characters of the Jun Family’s father and son, if they knew about that matter, they would throw their lives on the line to protect her and that was not what she wished to see.

Jun Wu Xie avoided the more critical point and touched on the more trivial matter, where she roughly explained to them about the things that happened in the Fire Country.

That was then when Jun Xian and Jun Qing realized that Jun Wu Xie had become the Fire Country’s Emperor all because she had wanted to save the Qi Kingdom!

“It has been really hard on you.” Jun Xian was feeling the pain in his heart as he patted Jun Wu Xie on the head. From the old man’s perspective, a gold kennel or a silver kennel would still not be as comfortable as a dog’s own kennel. Jun Wu Xie might have become the ruler of a country, but was it something to even envy her

about?

When one was able to enjoy the union of a family together, that was the greatest happiness for one.

Jun Wu Xie shook her head. “Becoming the Fire Country’s Emperor is something that countless people can only dream of. Not hard at all.”

Although she was entirely willing, but she did not want Jun Xian to worry for her about it.

Anyway.....

Whether it was as the Fire Country’s Emperor, or even the Lower Realm itself, she would not be staying here for long.

In order for her to shrug off all burdens, to be able to return to the Lin Palace without hiding anything, she would need to fully resolve the issue with the Twelve Palaces!

“Wu Xie..... You really intend to let the Fire Country make an alliance with the Qi Kingdom?” Mo Qian Yuan asked as he looked at Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie nodded.

“I am now the Emperor of the Fire Country, and also a member of the Lin Palace. Although I made use of the Fire Country’s strength to strike at the four allied countries, and I have accepted the throne, I will then do what I am supposed to do well. But the Qi Kingdom is also something I am definitely unable to part with, and since that is the case, why shouldn’t we form an alliance, and we’ll be able to look out for each other.”

Jun Wu Xie had never felt that the Qi Kingdom was weaker than their neighbouring countries. The Qi Kingdom had not been able to expand its borders all this time because the previous Emperor had been foolish and incompetent, clipping his own wings. If things had continued for the Qi Kingdom like it had been upon its founding, the Qi Kingdom would not be bullied by a country with

the likes of the Prosper Country.

If today's war had been in the hands of the Qi Kingdom's previous Emperor, there wouldn't be a need to even mention two weeks, they would not even be able to last even ten days. Fortunately Mo Qian Yuan had immediately after ascending into the throne, reorganized the military, and that had allowed the once lazy Qi Kingdom to regain back a little more chance to live.

Jun Wu Xie believed, as long as the Qi Kingdom was given a chance to recuperate, the Qi Kingdom would definitely not be inferior to any one country!

Mo Qian Yuan looked strangely at Jun Wu Xie. Actually, when Jun Wu Xi had returned here wearing the Fire Country's halo upon her head, Mo Qian Yuan already prepared his heart for one thing that could happen, and that preparation he made in his heart was to ready himself for Jun Wu Xie to bring everyone within the Lin Palace to leave the Qi Kingdom, and to align themselves with the Fire Country. But now, Jun Wu Xie's words had already been so clear, how could he still not understand her thoughts?

[The Fire Country is the Fire Country, while the Qi Kingdom is the Qi Kingdom. That was something that nobody is able to change!]

“Towards the matter of the four countries having allied themselves, did you manage to decipher anything from there?” Jun Wu Xie swung the topic back as she thought that the Qi Kingdom had been invaded under some strange circumstances this time. The Qi Kingdom had not even interacted much with other countries much all these years so what had made the Condor Country suddenly attack them so ferociously in a mad dash? That was the point that made Jun Wu Xie feel the whole situation rather suspicious.

Chapter 1176: “Complicit in Crime (1)”

“That..... We really don’t know anything about it. The Condor Country had attacked us very suddenly and the timing the other countries had attacked was very close, almost launched upon us at the same time, from four different directions as they attacked our borders, which tells us that they must have planned and coordinated the invasion beforehand.” Jun Qing replied.

“This incident must be the work of the Condor Country. The Condor Country roped in the other three countries to launch the invasion.” Jun Wu Xie had thought to see if she could gather more information from Jun Xian and the others in the Qi Kingdom but from she was seeing now, the information that the Qi Kingdom had was less than what she knew.

“I have already imprisoned all the Commanders of the armies besides the Prosper Country’s and I will go interrogate them in a while.” Jun Wu Xie said as she narrowed her eyes. If she did not remember it wrongly, there was one more person Jun Wu Yao had captured!

Jun Wu Yao had pointed out that that person was from the Bone Shifters Tribe. Jun Wu Xie was not unfamiliar with that term as Hua Yao had been from the Bone Shifters Tribe, a tribe that existed only in the Middle Realm!

It was obvious that this invasion on the Qi Kingdom was intricately linked to the Middle Realm in some way!

When that thought came to Jun Wu Xie’s mind, she immediately asked for leave from Jun Xian and Jun Qing. Before she found out everything behind this invasion on the Qi Kingdom, she would still be uneasy about the whole thing.

Lin Xiao was imprisoned in the Qi Kingdom’s underground dungeon together with the three Commanders. While Lin Xiao was now mostly freed from the black mist, the black mist still had not

completely disappeared, but had turned to become like a leash of sorts, that had him trapped and he was not able to move.

Ye Sha and Ye Mei were guarding the entire dungeon and did not allow anyone to come close.

Jun Wu Xie then came to the underground dungeon accompanied by Jun Wu Yao.

She had just stepped into the dungeon when one of the Commanders locked in a cell cambered to the metal bars hurriedly and pressed himself tightly against the bars as he stared in terror at Jun Xie.

“Your Majesty! Your Majesty! The Condor Country was the one who instigated us into attacking the Qi Kingdom! We were merely following orders! I beg for Your Majesty to spare my life, I have nothing to do with this at all!” The Commander was begging with tears and mucus running down his face, not exhibiting a single bit of a soldier’s valour at that moment.

Jun Wu Xie cast a glance at him, but did not say a word. Instead, it was the Condor Country’s Commander in Chief who was locked right opposite him that laughed sneeringly.

“Your Majesty? If my memory serves me correctly, this must be His Majesty from the Fire Country. When did you start to even forget the names of countries?” The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief sneered: “Following orders? Why do I remember that all you three other countries were promised quite a lot? One of them being that after the Qi Kingdoms falls, all the lands the Qi Kingdom possesses will be split between you three countries? This invasion has nothing to do with you? Ha ha..... Through the battles you have fought in the Qi Kingdom, you had not seemed to have missed a single chance to send your men to loot and plunder the cities we took.

The Commander was startled and his face immediately turned green.

“You..... You can’t malign me like that! When..... When have I ever plundered any of their cities! ?”

Seeing that the Fire Country’s little Emperor was being so highly protective of the Qi Kingdom, it had highly puzzled all the three commanders, and all they could do now was try their best to whitewash themselves of the atrocious crimes they had committed upon the people of the Qi Kingdom.

“Malign you? Where your army had started your attacks from, the line of attack your army had taken, which cities you and your army had a hand in taking down. All of these facts can be easily found out with a slight investigation and I do not need to say it.” The Condor Country’s Commander in Chief said with a cold laugh.

When there were benefits in sight for the taking, the three countries’ Commanders had all rushed forward eagerly. Now that the war was lost, they had all turned to act like this, which truly disgusted him!

Jun Wu Xie stared calmly as the two Commanders chewed each other out, but not a ripple of emotion showed within her eyes.

The last Commander who had not spoken a single word throughout it all tried his best to curl himself up in a ball into the furthest corner of his cell, unable to even look at Jun Xie at all. The bound and immobile Lin Xiao had fallen to the floor and he was staring at Jun Xie and Jun Wu Yao with eyes filled with unimaginable terror!

Chapter 1177: “Complicit in Crime (2)”

Jun Wu Yao’s gaze swept over him lightly and he began to tremble subconsciously, a kind of fear that seeped out from deep within the bones, spreading throughout the entire body.

Jun Wu Xie wasn’t interested to hear the two of them bickering and she walked on towards the cell Lin Xiao was locked in, to see him bound up, his eyes cold and grim.

After they entered the city after the battle, she had sought out Hua Yao to enquire more about the Bone Shifters Tribe. The Bone Shifters Tribe was a large race in the Middle Realm. The Middle Realm was different from the Lower Realm in that it consisted of many other races with unique and extraordinary abilities living within, among them, the Bone Shifters Tribe, the Spirit Cultivators Tribe and more, races that were innately usually more independent.

The Bone Shifters Tribe’s ring spirits all took on skeletal forms and the Double Headed Bone Snake that Hua Yao possessed was a beast type ring spirit of the Bone Shifters Tribe, while the bone wings that Lin Xiao had exhibited was a weapons type ring spirit from the same tribe.

The Bone Shifters tribe were not too numerous in numbers. Although they were from a tribe, but they did not belong to a specific power and its people were free to choose to serve any one of the Twelve Palaces, or to other powers of their free will, or to even remain a free and independent agent.

When Lin Xiao was being brought into the dungeon, Hua Yao had seen him then. Hua Yao had ascertained that he did not know Lin Xiao.

“Which one among the Twelve Palaces do you serve?” Jun Wu Xie asked, her eyes narrowed as she stared at Lin Xiao.

Lin Xiao's body shivered, not because of Jun Wu Xie, but because of the man standing behind her. He gulped and then said: "All Dragons Palace"

"Mobilizing the Condor Country's army was your idea?" Jun Wu Xie asked next.

Lin Xiao froze, hesitating a moment, but the dark mist around his body suddenly tightened and the excruciating pain that filled his body immediately made him roll upon the floor in agony, his forehead breaking out in cold sweat!

"Yes! Yes, it was me!" Still in the tormenting pain, Lin Xiao did not dare hesitate in the slightest anymore.

Jun Wu Xie raised her hand slightly and Jun Wu Yao immediately released his grip, where Lin Xiao was finally able to breathe as he lay gasping heavily for air upon the floor.

"Why." Jun Wu Xie's tone was calm. [Why had the Twelve Palaces suddenly developed an interest towards the Qi Kingdom? What did such a tiny country like the Qi Kingdom possess that would attract the attention of the Twelve Palaces?]

[Could it be because of her?]

Jun Wu Xie immediately swept that thought aside. The people who had injured her back in the Cloudy Peaks had been people from the Flame Demon Palace and even if her identity was exposed, it would have been the work of the Flame Demon Palace here. What would the All Dragons Palace have anything to do with that?

Lin Xiao said: "Because..... Because of the Soul Calming Jade....."

[Soul Calming Jade!]

Those three words resounded within Jun Wu Xie's mind. She recalled everything she knew about that Soul Calming Jade that had allowed Jun Gu's dead body to remain unblemished. That piece of jade had maintained Jun Gu's soul and spirit, allowing his

remains to not suffer any rot or decomposition throughout the years unlike other people who passed on.

Jun Wu Xie had always felt that the reason Jun Gu's body had been preserved in such perfect condition was because of the Soul Calming Jade and she believed it had also protected his spirit. Hence, if she could find the correct method, she might be able to revive Jun Gu.

But the Soul Calming Jade was a magical treasure that had come from the Spirit World and she did not know how she would be able to use it to revive Jun Gu. She had once considered after she found the Dark Emperor's tomb, she might find a way to make Jun Gu reawaken.

This Soul Calming Jade had in the beginning lured the people from the Qing Yun Clan here, and now, it had even attracted the attention of the All Dragon Palace from the Twelve Palaces!

“What do you want it for?” Jun Wu Xie probed further.

Lin Xiao said anxiously: “That I really do not know. The Elder sent me down here to the Lower Realm to retrieve the Soul Calming Jade and as to what it is to be used for..... I really do not know!”

Chapter 1178: “Complicit in Crime (3)”

Lin Xiao was not lying. That was a point he really did not know anything about.

Jun Wu Xie stared at Lin Xiao's pale face, thoughts of the origins of the Soul Calming Jade coming into her mind.

The Soul Calming Jade was originally one of the magical treasures of the Spirit World but in the years when the Dark Emperor had unified the Middle Realm, it had been taken away. After that, the Dark Emperor had died and the Dark Regime had buried all the treasures into the Dark Emperor's tomb and if she was guessing it right, the Soul Calming Jade would very highly possibly have been buried inside the Dark Emperor's tomb, so how did this piece of jade come to appear in the Qi Kingdom?

That was one point that Jun Wu Xie did not have an answer to no matter how much she thought about it. Regarding the Soul Calming Jade, she would have to ask Jun Xian to get the answers she sought.

“In this cooperation by the All Dragon Palace and the Condor Country, did you intend to send the Condor Country soldiers to locate the Dark Emperor's tomb as well?” Jun Wu Xie went on to ask.

Lin Xiao's face turned an ugly colour and his eyes looked past Jun Xie to gaze at Jun Wu Yao standing behind, his eyes filled with terror. Just one glance, and he was already so horribly frightened that his spirit almost left his body as he climbed to his knees to kowtow continuously.

“All that was what the Elder told me to do! The Elder made me bring the map to the Dark Emperor's tomb down here to the Lower Realm to approach one of the powers in the Lower Realm to go seek it out. I had absolutely no intention of causing any offense to the Dark Emperor!”

He tried to explain in tears, as he pleaded for mercy.

Jun Wu Xie's brows came together slightly, not understanding from where the man's sudden fear and repentance was coming from.

[Whether he offended the Dark Emperor, was there a need to tell it to her?]

Jun Wu Xie had completely not noticed that a wide smile was on Jun Wu Yao's lips.

"Where is that map now?" Jun Wu Xie asked coldly.

"In..... In the hands of the Condor Country's Emperor....." Lin Xiao said.

Jun Wu Xie smiled coldly in her heart. As expected, the All Dragons Palace had a portion of the map with them as well!

Jun Wu Xie and his companions already had five maps in their possession and from their target of eight, there were only three left. Having just received information on the location of the next map, Jun Wu Xie had already planned what they were going to do next.

Having cleared up everything, Jun Wu Xie was no longer interested in wasting her time to hear Lin Xiao any further. She immediately turned around to walk out of the dungeon, not giving anyone within that dungeon a single glance.

At the very moment that she stepped out of the underground dungeon, the dungeon immediately filled with a thick stench of blood. Ye Sha and Ye Mei came walking out slowly, with some blood stained upon their clothes.

.....

The news about the Soul Calming Jade had made Jun Wu Xie feel rather uneasy and she did not wait a single moment but went straight to seek out Jun Xian.

At that moment, Jun Xian was going through the name list of the Rui Lin Army soldiers who had died in battle and the expression on his face was well filled with pain. When he saw Jun Wu Xie come in, he shut his eyes tightly and tried very hard to push down the emotions in his heart. When he opened his eyes once more, they had reverted back to the devoted and affectionate eyes he always had even looking at Jun Wu Xie.

“What did they say?” Jun Xian asked looking at Jun Wu Xie. The reason that the four countries had allied together to attack the Qi Kingdom had been a puzzling question that hung over their heads. The Qi Kingdom had always never been hostile to other countries but had suddenly been thrown into this calamity, which greatly hurt all of them.

They did not fear war, but they could not bear seeing their fellow people and family members ending up dead on the battlefield.

“It’s for the Soul Calming Jade.” Jun Wu Xie could see that Jun Xian was fighting suppress the sadness within his heart and her heart started feeling depressed as well.

The Rui Lin Army to Jun Xian, was although the sharpest blade that he held in his hands, it was also his life’s blood. This one war, had taken eighty thousand Rui Lin Army warriors and to Jun Xian, that was as good as having cut off a piece of flesh from his heart, so how unbearable a pain could that really be?

Jun Wu Xie could not begin to imagine it.

“Soul Jade?” Jun Xian was taken aback. This was the second time that the Soul Jade had created trouble for them. When the Qing Yun Clan had appeared in the Qi Kingdom in the beginning, hadn’t that been because of that piece of jade as well?

Chapter 1179: “Complicit in Crime (4)”

The Soul Calming Jade was to the Jun Family something of extreme high importance, not for the significance it held, but because that concerned Jun Gu.....

Ever since Jun Gu’s coffin had been carried out from his grave, and his perfectly preserved body had been revealed to the Jun Family’s father and son, regardless whether it was Jun Xian or Jun Qing, in both their hearts, a sliver of hope had risen within.

Maybe.....

Maybe there would be a day that Jun Gu might come back to life.

Holding on to that belief, they would never ever hand the Soul Calming Jade over to anyone!

“No matter whether it was to the Qing Yun Clan before, or the Condor Country at present, they both sought to get their hands on the Soul Calming Jade. Grandfather, I will not hand the Soul Calming Jade to anyone. I only have one thing I do not understand and I would like Grandfather to help me clear it up.” Jun Wu Xie asked very seriously as she looked at Jun Xian.

“Tell it to me.” Jun Xian nodded.

“I only know that the Soul Jade had already existed in the Qi Kingdom when the country was founded. But where had the piece of jade come from?” Why had the Soul Calming Jade leaked out to the outside world? An item that should have been buried within the Dark Emperor’s tomb, why had it appeared in the Qi Kingdom? Jun Wu Xie could not understand that.

Jun Xian drew in a deep breath, his gaze involuntarily turning to look faraway together with his thoughts, flying back through many years. His gaze was profound and after a momentary silence, he slowly opened his mouth to say:

“That year, before the Qi Kingdom was founded, disputes

between the various countries throughout the lands were constant. Large swathes of lands were not ruled and many citizens greatly suffered under the atrocities of war. At that time, I was merely a hot blooded youth just morphing into a young man and when I saw the common citizens trapped in suffering and had no way of making a proper living, based only on the hot blood surging within my chest, I established the Rui Lin Army together with a few good friends. The Rui Lin Army's numbers grew endlessly stronger and the previous Emperor of the Qi Kingdom, who was also the Founding Emperor, was not a foolish man. He was also highly driven, having set his mind on carving out a piece of his own empire, to allow the innocent citizens a place to distance themselves for being affected by the constant wars."

"My aspirations and his ideals happened to coincide and we joined together to carve out our own piece of paradise. The army in our hands grew stronger by the day, nurturing and honing our strength for many years. When we finally fought our first resounding battle, a young man appeared to us then. We do not know from where he had come, or who he is, but his top notch stratagems and power made me and the previous Emperor admire him greatly. It was through his strategies when we still had not gotten strong enough but still managed to take our first city, which is the current Qi Kingdom's Imperial City. We believed that that man had been a benefactor sent by the Heavens to help us but after we successfully took our first city, that man left. Before he left, he handed the piece of jade to us, saying that it was a gift to celebrate our acquaintance. After that, our army had seemingly gone on undefeated and both the previous Emperor and me attributed that to the Soul Jade, thinking that it had brought us great luck and hence, after the kingdom's founding, we took the jade piece and declared it a precious jade that protected the country."

Jun Xian slowly finished his story about the past as a deep sigh weighed upon his heart. How glorious and spirited everything had been in those years and who would have thought that the saying

accompanying a ruler was as good as accompanying a tiger would turn out to be true. The Emperor's highly temperamental moods had slowly pushed Jun Xian little by little to become iced and looking back at the old Rui Lin Army force in those years, he realized after having experienced countless battles, among the people who had followed him right from the very beginning, there wasn't that many of them left.

[His heart, how can it not feel the pain?]

Jun Xian sighed heavily and raised his eyes to look at Jun Wu Xie. "Are you thinking to find that person?"

Jun Wu Xie nodded. [The Soul Calming Jade by itself did not pose much of a problem, but the young man who had gifted it to the Qi Kingdom made people can't help but feel suspicious of him.]

[Just how did he come to possess the Soul Jade? And why would he in turn gift it out so easily to others?]

Chapter 1180: “Complicit in Crime (5)”

Jun Xian said: “That person had never mentioned one word of his own name or identity when he came. After the Qi Kingdom was founded, I had tried to locate the man but to no avail. There is another point..... that I remember rather clearly though.”

“What?” Jun Wu Xie’s heart jumped.

“That person’s face was extremely good looking and gentle, seemingly only about twenty years of age, but for reasons unknown to us, he had a head full of white hair.....” Jun Xian said.

“White hair?” Jun Wu Xie asked, her eyes widening slightly. From memory, the only good looking white haired man she knew of, was just that one person!

The Grand Adviser of the Fire Country, Wen Yu!

“Grandfather, have you ever met the Fire Country’s Grand Adviser?” An idea formed in Jun Wu Xie’s head and she could not stop herself from asking.

“The Fire Country’s Grand Adviser? You are speaking of Grand Adviser Wen Yu?” Jun Xie asked.

Jun Wu Xie nodded.

“I have never met him. The Fire Country was founded a lot earlier than us and it was already a dominant force by itself at that time. While we fought our little skirmishes, the Fire Country did not even pay any attention to us. Moreover, I heard that the Grand Adviser of the Fire Country never leaves the Imperial Capital and I hadn’t had a chance to meet him.” Jun Xian said.

Jun Wu Xie thought about it a moment and she immediately opened the room’s door and got the Rui Lin Army soldier standing guard outside to go find Lei Chen. After having dealt with those people in the dungeon, Jun Wu Yao said he needed to go into the city to find some things and brought Ye Sha and Ye Mei together

with him. If not for that, she would have asked Ye Sha to go as it would have been done more quickly.

Lei Chen came rushing in in a hurry, where luckily, he did not have much to do back at the Fire Country's camp.

"Your Majesty." Lei Chen was immediately about to kneel.

Jun Wu Xie instead dispensed with the formalities.

"How are you with drawing?"

Lei Chen was surprised a moment, unable to understand why in the world was Jun Xie asking whether he drew well..... could it be that His Majesty had a love for art?

"Acceptable....." After Lei Chen was born, the Empress had groomed him well, music, chess, calligraphy and painting, he was skilled in all four of the scholarly arts.

"I need you to draw a portrait of the Grand Adviser for Duke Lin to take a look right now." Jun Wu Xie said.

Lei Chen was highly puzzled, but even if he did not understand what Jun Wu Xie wanted to do, he still knew how to obey an Imperial order. Lei Chen was now a princely Duke in the Fire Country and was holding a rank similar to Jun Xian, but judging purely in terms of their countries' might, Lei Chen would be a notch higher. But Lei Chen highly admired Jun Xian and with a nod of his head to Jun Xian, he walked over to the side of the table, picked up a brush and started painting.

Lei Chen's skills in drawing was rather good, having gained much praise from the Fire Country's previous Emperor many times, and Wen Yu had been his Master. Before the relationship between the two of them had soured, Lei Chen and Wen Yu had been on very familiar terms. Lei Chen's brushstrokes flew almost with divinity, his movements quick and precise.

In what seemed like a blink, Lei Chen had already outlined Wen Yu's countenance accurately. He could see that Jun Xie needed the

painting in a hurry and he employed special techniques that did not require too much time but would still be able to draw out a person's countenance and bearing vividly, looking highly lifelike.

"Duke Lin, please peruse." Lei Chen blew the ink on the parchment dry and moved his body slightly, while inviting Jun Xian over.

Jun Xian came over to the table and looked at the painting of the handsome young man with his gentle expression and a surprised look came into his eyes.

"It's really him!"

The countenance depicted upon the painting was exactly the same as what he remembered in his mind. Jun Xian did not dare believe that the young man who had helped them at that time was in reality the Grand Adviser of the Fire Country!

Jun Wu Xie saw Jun Xian's reaction and she was sure that her guess had been correct. She dismissed Lei Chen for the moment and only Jun Xian and her were left in the room.

Chapter 1181: “Complicit in Crime (6)”

The countenance depicted upon the painting was exactly the same as what he remembered in his mind. Jun Xian did not dare believe that the young man who had helped them at that time was in reality the Grand Adviser of the Fire Country!

Jun Wu Xie saw Jun Xian’s reaction and she was sure that her guess had been correct. She dismissed Lei Chen for the moment and only Jun Xian and her were left in the room.

“Grandfather, is that him?” Jun Wu Xie asked, to reaffirm the fact.

Jun Xian nodded his head resolutely. That face, was one he would never forget his entire life.

“How did he turn out to be the Fire Country’s Grand Adviser.....” Even having seen the portrait of Wen Yu, Jun Xian still found this startling discovery hard to accept. “Before the Qi Kingdom’s founding, the Fire Country had already been established for a long time. And according to rumours, their Grand Adviser..... should already be rather advanced in age. How did it turn out like this.....”

Jun Xian really could not understand why the Fire Country’s Grand Adviser had chosen to suddenly reach out his hand at that time to help people like them.

Jun Wu Xie narrowed her eyes. Back in the Fire Country, she had already felt that the Grand Adviser was not someone ordinary but as he had been friendly and not shown himself to be a threat, she had not given it much thought, never expecting that the Qi Kingdom’s Soul Calming Jade was given to them by Wen Yu.....

So how did Wen Yu manage get his hands on the Soul Calming Jade?

Having just resolved one mystery, but more and more questions were gathering in Jun Wu Xie’s mind that needed her to find

answers for one by one.

Wen Yu's appearance had not changed all this time and time had not left its trace upon his face in the slightest. Judging based on the way he looked, Wen Yu would be a handsome looking young man only in his twenties, just that his demeanor and mannerisms were completely devoid of the impatient and brashness of youth, but instead showed polished manners that could only be a result from long years of experience and trials.

“Wu Xie, you are now the Emperor of the Fire Country, and this Wen Yu.....” Jun Xian could not help but look at Jun Wu Xie rather worriedly. If Wen Yu was really that person, his capabilities should then not be underestimated and would Jun Wu Xie's real identity be discovered by Wen Yu?

Jun Wu Xie shook his head.

“The Grand Adviser had not tried to make things difficult for me. He seemed to not want to become overly involved with the affairs of the Fire Country.” Regardless whether it was the truth behind Lei Chen's birth or about how she had overthrown the Emperor, Wen Yu had remained a bystander who just observed from the side, almost never initiating any actions on his own. His aloof attitude from all matters made one unable to help themselves but be curious as it made him seem completely unconcerned about the Fire Country at all.

Jun Xian sighed slightly in relief. “If I really have the chance to meet him in the future, I would really like to thank him properly. No matter how much trouble this Soul Jade had brought us, but it had preserved your father's body, keeping it in such perfect condition, which really comforted me.”

Jun Wu Xie nodded, knowing that the Jun Family's father and son had always longed for Jun Gu to be revived. That wish, she was willing to help them achieve. Based on what she saw in the Jun father and son, she believed that her own “father” would also

be a hero worthy of respect.

“Regarding the matter about the Soul Jade, do not let any news about it spread outside for now. The invasion into the Qi Kingdom this time, was all because the Condor Country wanted to snatch the Soul Jade. I will resolve the entire matter and Grandfather will only need to rest and recuperate properly.” Jun Wu Xie said filially. From the bickering among the Commanders, it had not been difficult for her to decipher that they had not known what Lin Xiao was seeking for. With the exception of the Condor Country, the other armies of the three countries had merely been roped in to playing an assisting role and the crux of the problem had come from the Condor Country itself.

“You just rest assured. That jade, one piece of it is with your father, the other is kept on your uncle’s body at all times. Besides our men from the Rui Lin Army and His Majesty, no one else knows that both pieces of the jade are in the Lin Palace.” Jun Xian said.

Chapter 1182: “Complicit in Crime (7)”

Jun Wu Xie thought back to her own soul that had warped over here and the reaction when she had touched the Soul Calming Jade. The amazing golden seed had been infused in her body and she really wanted to attempt to see whether she presently possessed the capability to resist the effects of such a spirit artifact.

“A little later, I will go find Uncle to go take a look at the Soul Jade.” Jun Wu Xie said. If that golden seed gave her the ability to withstand the effects of spirit artifacts, then even when she was to be faced against the Twelve Palaces in the future, she would be equipped with another layer of assurance, afterall.....

[How many magical artifacts do the Twelve Palaces hold in their hands was not known to them.]

Jun Xian nodded.

Jun Wu Xie noticed that Jun Xian was exhibiting a tinge of weariness and she didn't want to disturb her grandfather any further. She retreated from the room and did not hurry herself to go deal with the other tasks on her hands but walked to the courtyard in the Lin Palace that belonged to her.

The Rui Lin Army soldiers upon seeing Jun Wu Xie appear, suddenly stood at rigid attention. Although their faces were expressionless, their eyes were however filled with smiles.

They all knew, that the little Emperor of the Fire Country before their eyes, was just their very own Young Miss!

Jun Wu Xie did not encounter anyone who stopped her within the Lin Palace. Everyone had a tacit understanding on it all. Returning back to her very own place that she had not lived in for a long time, she found the tables and chairs clean as new. Even when she had asked Long Qi to bring word back that she would not be returning for a long period, her room and the entire courtyard

was still kept clean and tidy, like it had always been waiting here to welcome her back home.

Jun Wu Xie lay down in her own room, her nerves that had been pulled taut for an entire year finally able to relax immediately upon lying down there.

The little black cat sat at the edge of the bed, licking its paws lazily as it looked calmly at Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit wobbling in from outside through the door.

The two innocent beasts had put on quite a big show in the battle before and they had now come rushing in to ask for praise from Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie picked up the two naive little beasts in turn onto her bed and enjoyed the momentary peace and tranquility.

Wishing that time would just freeze right at that moment.....

Unknowingly, Jun Wu Xie actually feel asleep as she lay on the bed, haven't even had the time to clean off all the blood all over her, falling into a sound sleep with her blood smeared armour still on, where even the stench of blood she had always found so unbearable could not even wake her up from her dreams.

In order for them to rush to reach here to the Qi Kingdom in the shortest time possible, she had not even had a chance to close her eyes from the time she left the Thousand Beast City, and had rushed the entire way, the constant rage and worry causing her to be unable to calm her heart. Only after the maniacal massacre and having finally returned back to her old abode her heart had longed so strongly for where she was finally able to let down her guard, pure exhaustion immediately claimed her to drag her into a deep sleep.

The little black cat remained hovering beside Jun Wu Xie and Lord Meh Meh together with the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit were similarly tired and weary. They leaned against Jun Wu Xie's body

and fell soundly asleep as well, leaving only the little black cat who was a spiritual body not feeling the slightest tinge of exhaustion.

It was not known how long a time had passed when light footsteps made the little black cat prick up in alert. It lifted his head to look towards the door and saw Jun Qing having just stepped one foot inside through the door. Upon seeing Jun Wu Xie soundly asleep on the bed, he was slightly startled and he subconsciously lightened his steps, to quietly come to the bedside, pulling the blanket up to cover Jun Wu Xie, before silently slipping himself outside.

The little black cat continued to lie on the bed and saw Jun Qing pulling the door shut. It glanced at Jun Wu Xie's face that was soundly asleep and swished its tail lazily before morphing to silently slip inside Jun Wu Xie's body.

She.....

Really deserve to give herself a good sleep.

Chapter 1183: “Seeing the Soul Calming Jade Again (1)”

When Jun Wu Xie woke up from her dreams, the sun’s rays were shining in through a window that was slightly ajar, to spill onto the floor.

Lord Meh Meh was sleeping with all four of its hooves sticking up in the air while the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit was sleeping soundly upon Lord Meh Meh’s soft belly. One of Lord Meh Meh’s hooves would twitch occasionally and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit would subconsciously stretch out a paw to hold down the hoof.

Jun Wu Xie’s mind was still groggy with sleep and her nose was filled with the pungent stench of blood. She massaged her temples as she got off the bed and slowly unbuckled her armour piece by piece to throw them onto the floor, leaving just the cloth robe underneath on her.

The armour fell to the ground in a loud and clear clattering, the noise immediately sending a slight shiver to run through the Rui Lin Army soldier standing guard at the door.

“Your Majesty from the Fire Country, we’ve gotten the hot water all prepared and ready for your use. Would you then like to have a bath?” From outside the door, the Rui Lin Army soldier’s stoic voice came floating in.

Jun Wu Xie frowned slightly and said: “Just have it sent over now then.”

“Yes.” The Rui Lin Army soldier outside stifled the twitch that tugged at the corner of his mouth, trying hard to maintain his stoic composure as he immediately turned to run towards the kitchen to get people to deliver the hot water over.

[The Young Miss has finally awoken!]

His mood was rather joyous, his steps suddenly feeling lighter!

When the hot water was brought into the room, Jun Wu Xie looked at the light in the sky and asked the Rui Lin Army soldier making the delivery.

“How long did I sleep for?”

“Not much, just a day and a half.” The Rui Lin Army said, forcing on a calm front, his hands quickly drawing out the bath for Jun Wu Xie.

“.....” [A day and a half?]

Jun Wu Xie had not thought that she would sleep for so long.

“Within this period, did anything happen out there?” Jun Wu Xie thought that there was no more need to disguise her identity before the Rui Lin Army’s men and she asked in a manner that could not possibly be more nonchalant and casual than she did, completely unlike the “Emperor of the Fire Country” when she had first stepped into the Lin Palace, but acted exactly like a resident member of the Jun Family.

From the mannerisms the Rui Lin Army soldiers had shown her before, she knew that the men must have already guessed her identity so why should she continue to hide it from them?

“Reporting to Young..... Erm, Your Majesty from the Fire Country, the little Lord has left instructions to say after you wake up, we are to prepare a bath together with a fresh set of clothes for you, and only after you have eaten your meal, are we allowed to tell you about the things happening outside.”

Jun Wu Xie was slightly surprised, and the cold chill in her eyes unconsciously softened a little.

“Got it, you’re dismissed then.”

Her uncle had made these arrangements, seeking to have her worry less and rest more about things. No matter who she was outside, back in the Lin Palace, Jun Qing was her uncle, an elder. His instructions, must therefore be obeyed.

After taking much effort to wash off the blood off her body again and again, she was finally rid of the stench that clung on to her. The clothes that Jun Qing had prepared for Jun Wu Xie was a set of men's clothes in her size, her sweet and considerate uncle having thought of everything for her.

With the stink of blood fading off from her body, it was slowly replaced by the familiar faint fragrance of herbs.

After she finished her bath, it wasn't long before highly fragrant and aromatic dishes of food were brought into the room. As she dug into the meal, Jun Qing and Long Qi came walking in, with wide smiles upon their faces.

“At least you know you should eat after waking up. Just how long have you, this little lass, not given yourself proper rest that you have immediately fallen in such a deep sleep for a whole day and a half the moment your head touches the bed? You didn't even manage to stay awake long enough to eat before that and made me worried you will starve.” Jun Qing nagged as he looked helplessly at Jun Wu Xie. Seeing the scene where his niece who had always been a little obsessed with cleanliness still dressed in her blood caked armour as she slept so soundly immediately upon her head hitting the pillow, Jun Qing found it rather amusing and at the same time causing a slight ache to fill his heart.

Chapter 1184: “Seeing the Soul Calming Jade Again (2)”

Jun Wu Xie gave her uncle a rather awkward glance as she had not thought that she would sleep for that long as well.

“Alright, alright. Just teasing you. Hurry up and eat. Don’t starve.” Jun Qing said with a helplessly laugh as he shook his head, sitting down on a chair by the side. Jun Wu Xie then picked up her bowl and chopsticks to begin eating her food slowly.

Having taken just two mouthfuls to line her stomach, she raised her head up again to look at Jun Qing.

“Uncle, you came here to see me for something?”

Jun Qing replied: “It’s not much really. Didn’t you tell your grandfather that you wanted to take a look at the Soul Jade? I heard about it and had wanted to bring it over to you but did not think that I would find you already fallen asleep. I got the men to stand guard at the door and instructed them to look for me when you wake up, to save you some steps running around to look for me.”

The Rui Lin Army soldier guarding the door was arranged by Jun Qing. He knew that Jun Wu Xie had completely exhausted herself and she would definitely want to bathe and change when she woke up, and she would surely need to eat.

“Mm. Where’s the Soul Jade?” Jun Wu Xie appreciated her uncle’s thoughtfulness and upon hearing the first mention of the Soul Calming Jade, she immediately forgot about needing to eat and just opened her mouth to ask about the Soul Calming Jade.

Jun Qing raised a hand and flicked a finger on her forehead. “The thing is on me right now and it will not be going anywhere. You first take care of your stomach and if you do not finish the rice in your bowl, I will not be showing the Soul Jade to you.”

In a year, Jun Wu Xie had grown quite a bit taller, but she was still a little too slender. Having not seen his niece for a year, when Jun Qing saw the skinny frame on Jun Wu Xie, his heart winced painfully. If not for the war, he would have gotten the men to gather all the most delicious delicacies and put them all in front of Jun Wu Xie to properly nourish her.

“Alright.....” Jun Wu Xie lamented as she rubbed at her forehead where she had been hit. It had not been painful, but had instead made her heart feel a comforting warmth.

She had not experienced this warmth from her family for a long time and even the slightest bit of it was irreplaceably precious to her.

Seeing that Jun Wu Xie had buried her head into her bowl to eat again, Jun Qing finally relented, not entirely serious when he said Jun Wu Xie did not have to care about everything happening outside. She had become the Fire Country’s Emperor and if he did not share a word about what was going on out there, her heart would still worry about it.

“The Fire Country’s army has set up camp outside the city and the Qi Kingdom’s soldiers and citizens are busy with restoring the city from the damage incurred. We also send food outside to the Fire Country’s camp everyday. This is the first time I have come in contact with the Fire Country’s army and I must say that the Fire Country’s army is rather well trained. With so many of them just at our doorstep, there hasn’t been any chaos and there hasn’t even been a single incident of conflict with the citizens in the city.” Jun Qing said, giving a highly simplified account of the situation outside over the period she had been unconscious after the war to Jun Wu Xie.

The Fire Country’s army under the supervision of Lei Chen and Lei Xi had been well behaved and not only had they not stirred up any trouble, they had even asked to let them help to repair the city’s walls. Of course the initiative could very well have been all

due to Jun Xie's position.

But Jun Qing was nevertheless still very grateful for the help.

“That's what a soldier should be like. By leaning with the strong to bully the weak, that's not what makes a man. Our Rui Lin Army had always remained steadfast in this.” Jun Wu Xie mumbled as she chewed on her food.

Long Qi who had been standing on one side, had his eyes fill up with pride upon hearing those words.

Jun Qing laughed aloud and shook his head helplessly. “You are now already the Fire Country's Emperor, how can you still say things like this?”

“The Fire Country's army is rather good, but the Rui Lin Army isn't too shabby as well. They could both be considered to be stalwart and rigorously disciplined forces, and I was just stating facts.” Jun Wu Xie replied. She had not meant to compare the armies from the two countries but had only mentioned it in passing.

Only after Jun Wu Xie finally cleaned out the rice in her bowl did Jun Qing then bring out the Soul Jade he carried around with him on his body.

Chapter 1185: “Seeing the Soul Calming Jade Again (3)”

That one half of the Soul Jade was carefully stored in a cotton bag by Jun Qing and always kept close on his body. This item could very well affect whether his elder brother, Jun Wu Xie’s father, would be able to be revived and he did not dare to be careless with it.

Jun Wu Xie stared at the Soul Calming Jade. She was in no hurry to pick it up and she merely raised her head to look at Jun Qing.

“Uncle.”

“Hmm?”

“In a while..... if I start to show any strange symptoms, you must not panic. I will be fine.” Jun Wu Xie said, unable to be certain whether she would be still be affected by the effects of the Soul Calming Jade, not wanting any reactions she might have from the Soul Calming Jade to worry Jun Qing.

Jun Qing was taken aback hearing those words.

“Would the Soul Jade have any adverse effect on you?”

Jun Wu Xie shook her head.

“It wouldn’t matter.”

Jun Wu Xie had put it across very lightly, but Jun Qing was still rather worried, where he was already thinking of keeping the Soul Jade away. Fortunately, Jun Wu Xie had repeatedly assured him that she would not do anything that would hurt herself and that made finally made Jun Qing change his mind.

Jun Wu Xie drew in a deep breath before slowly reaching her hand out to gradually place her hand upon the Soul Calming Jade.

The feeling that made her spirit quiver from before did not

manifest!

Under her palm, she only felt the slightly chill and cold surface of the Soul Calming Jade.

[No reaction!]

Jun Wu Xie's heart jumped slightly. Did that mean the golden seed within her body had not only repaired her damaged soul but it had even made her soul meld perfectly with this shell of a body?

That discovery caused a tinge of delight to rise within Jun Wu Xie usually cold and indifferent heart.

When the soul was unstable, the problems that could possibly arise from it was too many and now that it was resolved, it made Jun Wu Xie silently heave a sigh of relief.

The nervousness disappeared from Jun Wu Xie's eyes but the expression on Jun Qing who was sitting on one side still looked wary as he was deeply afraid of anything that could happen to Jun Wu Xie.

"How?" Jun Qing asked cautiously.

Jun Wu Xie raised her eyes to look at Jun Qing and said softly: "Nothing....."

However, just as Jun Wu Xie's voice just fell a strange feeling suddenly spread very quickly within her body!

That strange feeling wandered out from her physical body and expanded to reach her every single nerve, seemingly like something was stirring within her soul. That kind of feeling where big waves were being kicked up in one's soul made Jun Wu Xie immediately clench up her fists, and her face quickly turning deathly white!

Upon seeing the drastic change in Jun Wu Xie's complexion, Jun Qing instantly jumped up from his chair. He looked at Jun Wu Xie anxiously but with Jun Wu Xie's preemptive warning, Jun Qing

did not dare to touch his niece recklessly, but could only look on worriedly as Jun Wu Xie's face became whiter and whiter.

The strange feeling got more and more intense, and Jun Wu Xie felt as if her soul was being torn apart by a strong force, the feeling being completely different from when she had touched the Soul Calming Jade for the first time!

Cold sweat beaded and rolled off her forehead, wetting the floor around her feet. She clenched up her jaw tightly, resisting against the strange feeling she had never felt before.

It wasn't painful, but it made one highly uncomfortable, as any ripple that ran through one's soul, could bring about an enormous reaction!

What was really happening?

Even Jun Wu Xie herself was not able to explain the situation properly. Under the waves that surged through her soul, she began to feel dizzy and faint, her stomach churning incessantly! She wanted to move her hand covering over the Soul Calming Jade away but she no longer had the strength!

Chapter 1186

The little black cat could feel that something was wrong with Jun Wu Xie and it quickly leapt up onto the table, lifted its paw and struck lightning quick at the piece of Soul Jade under Jun Wu Xie's hand to push it away!

In the instant that Jun Wu Xie's hand was separated from the Soul Calming Jade, her body suddenly involuntarily started to fall backwards!

Jun Qing was quick on his feet to catch her and when he saw the deathly pallor on Jun Wu Xie's face, his heart immediately leapt into his throat!

“Long Qi! Fetch the physician quick!” Jun Qing roared anxiously.

Long Qi had turned and was about to dart out the door when a voice suddenly rang out.

“A physician will be of no use!”

Long Qi and Jun Qing immediately looked up and discovered that the voice had actually come out from the little black cat's mouth, and their faces immediately twisted up into expressions of speechless incredulity.

The little black cat jumped off the table and slipped onto Jun Wu Xie's body, its little head pressed against Jun Wu Xie's forehead.

Jun Wu Xie's condition was obviously a problem that afflicted her soul and bringing in any physicians would not help her in any way, and instead just expose Jun Wu Xie's real identity. Jun Qing was Jun Wu Xie's family and the little black cat trusted him and hence it had not had any qualms about speaking before him.

Jun Wu Xie's consciousness gradually sank into darkness. She seemed to be feeling a that her spirit was being struck by another force continuously, the feeling highly unbearable as her spirit was slowly cracking open from the constant impact, seemingly

something was slowly spilling out from that crack!

Suddenly! She opened her eyes wide!

“Wu Xie!” Jun Qing immediately called out when he saw Jun Wu Xie regain consciousness.

Jun Wu Xie’s face however, creased up into a frown, a burning surge was at that moment rushing into her hand!

On her finger, a red light was glowing constantly, the location of the light it was glowing at, was exactly the spot that Jun Wu Xie’s Spirit Ring was!

Her entire finger felt like it had been put over a fire to be roasted, the pain so excruciating that it could drive a person mad!

Jun Wu Xie clutched at her finger stoically, her entire body shaking a little uncontrollably.

Jun Qing and Long Qi at the side were so anxious they were like ants upon a hot pan, but completely clueless on how they could help, unable to do anything but stare fixedly at Jun Wu Xie’s little pale face, their fists tightly clenched up.

All of a sudden!

The glowing red light exploded within the room!

With that brilliant burst of exploding light, a strange fragrance quickly permeated throughout the entire room, and within that red light, a slender figure was slowly being revealed!

At that moment, the strange feeling that wrecked at her inside Jun Wu Xie’s body faded away. She panted slightly through narrowed eyes, to stare at the figure revealed, after the red light dissipated.

“Hmm? How many years had it been, that someone is actually compatible with me?” A lazy and languid male voice suddenly rang out beside Jun Wu Xie’s ear, and together with that voice, a fiery red figure suddenly appeared right before Jun Wu Xie’s eyes!

A good looking man dressed in a bright red brocade robe stood indolently within the room, his head of long black hair flowing down his back carelessly secured by a hair tie, the ink black tresses contrasting against his red clothes, beautiful and bewitching. The man had a attractive countenance, his long upslanted phoenix eyes narrowed very slightly, seemingly containing the endless touch of spring, a tinge of red over that pair of eyes.

The sudden appearance of the mysterious man caused Jun Qing and Long Qi within the room to immediately raise their guard. They wanted to protect Jun Wu Xie, but for some unknown reason, they could not seem to summon the slightest bit of their strength, their limbs suddenly feeling uncannily sore and weak, like all the strength within their bodies had been drained out from them, where they found to even maintain their current stance, had become highly taxing on them.

Chapter 1187: “Greetings, My Mistress (2)”

“Who are you!” Jun Qing asked through gritted teeth while summoning the last ounces of his strength, to look warily at the red robed man.

The red robed man’s eyes turned slightly, to sweep across everyone within the room, his gaze passing over the little black cat who was staring at him with hostility, to finally fall upon the figure of Jun Wu Xie.

“I really had not thought that it would be someone so young.” The red robed man opened his long legs up in a wide stride, to walk towards Jun Wu Xie who was being held within Jun Qing’s arms.

“What are you thinking of doing! ?” Jun Qing saw him coming towards them in approach, and every cell within him was almost going to explode!

The red robed man lifted an eyebrow slightly and looked at Jun Qing who was almost at the end of his strength, and he smiled sinisterly to say: “Not bad, to think that you can hold out till now. That shows you at least have some semblance of capability. But..... whatever I want to do now, you think you have any strength left to even stop me?”

Upon saying that, the red robed man bent down and reached his hand out towards Jun Wu Xie.

As he got a little closer, a look of astonishment flashed in the red robed man’s eyes.

“On you, why do I detect the scent of that little idiot.....”

At the moment of the red robed man’s hesitation, the little black cat morphed into its black beast form and leapt at him, using its sharp claws and fangs to force the man away from Jun Wu Xie!

The red robed man took a step backwards, his eyes narrowed as he stared at the black beast with its bared fangs.

“Arh..... You are also a spirit body?”

“Roar! !” The black beast let out a low roar, the sound shocking Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit awake. The moment they opened their eyes, they saw the black beast faced off with the red robed man and almost by instinct, they immediately saw the red robed man as an enemy!

In the instant the two Spirit Beasts were about to attack, they suddenly discovered that their strength were almost all drained out and even when they just wanted to stand up, they found themselves unable to do it!

The red robed man gave a light laugh, looking at the black beast’s highly aggressive demeanor, his eyes still showing a sort of puzzlement as he turned his gaze back to look at Jun Wu Xie.

“No need to get so excited. I won’t do anything bad anyway.” The red robed man shrugged easily.

Jun Wu Xie’s brows creased up into a frown, the waves within her soul vanished away, but the residual effects still leaving her rather weak while she seemed to find the fragrance permeating the room rather familiar to her.

That scent, was very much alike the fragrance of a evil flower in her past life.

“Just who are you?” Jun Wu Xie asked chillingly, her eyes narrowed.

The red robed man open up his arms and before everyone’s eyes, he lifted the hem of his robe and knelt on one knee right before Jun Wu Xie!

“Greetings, my Mistress. I am your ring spirit.”

[What! ?]

The moment the red robed man’s words left his mouth, Jun Qing and Long Qi stared at him with wide incredulous eyes.

[Ring spirit! ?]

[How is that possible! ?]

They had never ever seen a ring spirit taking a human form. Moreover..... Jun Wu Xie obviously already has a ring spirit, so how could there be a second one?

Looking throughout the lands, all the way from ancient times till now, never had a person ever possessed two ring spirits. Jun Qing and Long Qi could not make themselves believe a single word the red robed man was saying.

But.....

Jun Wu Xie's eyes merely showed a trickle of surprise, but did not exhibit any expression of disbelief, and even the black beast standing before Jun Wu Xie had retracted its aggressive stance.

“You are a plant ring spirit?” Those highly shocking words came out from Jun Wu Xie's mouth, showing she fully believed the red robed man's words, which Long Qi and Jun Qing found completely unbelievable!

Chapter 1188: “Greetings, My Mistress (3)”

The red robed man smiled slightly and said: “Mistress is indeed most perceptive. With me in this form, and you still can guess it correctly.” After saying that, his eyes narrowed up and within that thick fragrance in the air, he tried to seek out that faint trace of an elegant scent.

“I think, that I am not my Mistress’ first ring spirit. Or should I say..... I am not your first plant ring spirit.”

[That faint scent of lotus, was so familiar to him and he would never fail to recognise it!]

“Retract that fragrance of yours!” Jun Wu Xie said with a frown. She had prepared herself before this, that a second ring spirit might appear, but she had never thought that it would be after she touched the Soul Jade.

But thinking back on it in hindsight, Jun Wu Xie could very well guess at the reason behind it.

The Devious Wyvern had opened up the doors into the Spirit World and the Soul Calming Jade that had an effect on spirit bodies had acted as the catalyst, which caused her second ring spirit to appear at this moment.

But Jun Wu Xie had not expected that the ring spirit’s true form, could very possibly be that of a flower of evil!

“Mistress does not like the fragrance emanating out from me?” The red robed man’s face suddenly showed an expression of grief.

“If it didn’t cause the limbs of lifeforms to become weak, I think I wouldn’t mind.” Jun Wu Xie said in a cold voice.

In her past life, she had come across a kind of evil flower. The appearance of that flower usually brought with it endless deaths and evil. After she was reborn into this world, she had not seen a plant similar to it here and she had thought that it did not exist in

this world, but never had she expected.....

[It exists here, and was even in the form of a plant ring spirit!]

Surprise showed in the red robed man's eyes, he had never once thought that Jun Wu Xie would discover the hidden effects of his fragrance within such a short period of time. This was the first time that such a situation had happened to him.

“Wu Xie..... You said it's the fragrance that is causing our bodies to become so weak?” Jun Qing asked in shock. He had been thinking to himself why for no reason, he had suddenly not been able to summon up his power.

Jun Wu Xie nodded and her gaze fell on the red robed man.

The red robed man smiled, and with a nonchalant shrug of his shoulders, he lifted his arms and waved his sleeves lightly. The fragrance that pervaded the entire room then quickly dissipated completely in a short period of time!

In tandem with the scent disappearing, Jun Qing and the others found their strength returning back to their bodies!

Jun Wu Xie stood up, and although her face was still rather pale, those eyes on her however did not show the slightest bit of weakness.

“Seems like your humble servant has misjudged you. I had thought that I have met a young and ignorant Mistress, never expecting that my Mistress you would give me such a big surprise. You are my Mistress indeed.....” The red robed man frivolously walked over to come before Jun Wu Xie, and stretched out his hand thinking to put in on Jun Wu Xie's cheek.

Jun Wu Xie's brows furrowed up into a frown and was about to dodge when a ray of light suddenly flashed past, in between Jun Wu Xie and the red robed man!

A tiny figure suddenly appeared in front of Jun Wu Xie and moving at a very fast speed, the red robed man who was in close

proximity to Jun Wu Xie was pushed back!

“Don’t touch my Mistress! ! !”

Indignant with rage, Little Lotus had suddenly come rushing out, the expression on his fair and chubby face angry and nervous as he waved his short hands angrily in front of him, to push the red robed man physically away from Jun Wu Xie, seeming like the red robed man’s proximity to Jun Wu Xie would profane his Mistress!

Chapter 1189: “Poppy Flower (1)”

The red robed man’s eyes narrowed as he stared at Little Lotus with his stubby arms flailing wildly and tiny teeth bared, and the end of his eyebrows lifted slightly as he grabbed at Little Lotus’ swinging arms.

“Haven’t seen you for some time and I see that you have become a whole lot braver.” The red robed man said as he stared at Little Lotus.

The highly indignant Little Lotus found his arms held within the red robed man’s grip and his puny strength was no match for his opponent, and could only look up pitifully with his head raised up, to see the other party’s face staring at him sinisterly.

“You..... You..... You let me go.....” Little Lotus was getting tongue tied.

The red robed man lowered his head and looked Little Lotus with his tears brimming in his eyes and said in a highly teasing tone: “Just now, you wanted me to back off from whose Mistress?”

“Mi..... Mine.....” Little Lotus pouted, on the very verge of tears.

“Oh?” An eyebrow arched up on the red robed man’s face, a red glint flashing in his eye.

“WAAAAH! !” Having been threatened, the forced facade of bravery Little Lotus had put up before almost instantly dissolved as he bawled loudly, the tears gushing out from his eyes, his tiny body shaking like a willow in the wind, looking extremely pitiful.

Jun Qing and Long Qi saw everything before their eyes in flabbergasted amazement, overwhelmed by the sudden wave of information, unable to comprehend just what was really happening at that moment. The only thing that was clear in their mind, was that another tiny little toddler had suddenly appeared, and why had he broken into tears all of a sudden?

The black beast had already morphed back into the little black cat, rolling its eyes as it raised its paw onto its face. Towards Little Lotus' moronic actions, it really couldn't force itself to watch on any longer.

[Can that little idiot get any dumber?]

[If it was going to be frightened into tears with just a few words from people, what was the purpose that he even came out in the first place! !]

Towards Little Lotus' sobbing, the red robed seemed to be highly used to it as he stared at the little one who was just bawling his eyes out, and the red robed man's eyes filled with an evil glint. He gripped both of Little Lotus' little claws with one hand, and with the other, seemingly well practiced, he slipped it under Little Lotus' bib.....

Little Lotus began crying even more loudly.

“Eh? Why isn't it there?” After feeling about, the red robed man discovered nothing but just an emptiness in his hand, which the red robed man was feeling rather unused to. He raised up Little Lotus' tiny tear streaked face and said: “Little idiot, where are your lotus seeds? Don't tell me you have been slacking after leaving the Spirit World and you haven't even been able to produce any lotus seeds?”

“You! You let me go! ! Waaaah.....” Little Lotus continued to cry pitifully.

The red robed man was going to tease him further when unexpectedly, a small fair hand pressed on his arm, and rescued Little Lotus from his evil claws.

Jun Wu Xie pulled Little Lotus, who was crying so badly he was gasping to breathe between his sobs, to her side. She finally knew now, when Little Lotus had said that he did not have many of his lotus seeds left because they had been eaten up by “those guys”.

She guessed that this man before her, was one member among those who ate his lotus seeds.

“Mistress! !” Little Lotus looked at Jun Wu Xie with his eyes wet with tears and he fell into Jun Wu Xie’s arms to continue to bawl loudly, as if he had suffered some major injustice.

Little Lotus had never even in his dreams, ever thought that he would see the red robed man here. The Heavens knew, that his legs turn to jelly the moment he sees the man. Back in the Spirit World, that fellow was one of the scoundrels that loved to bully him the most.

He had thought with his Mistress to stick to now and having left the Spirit World, he would be able to avoid those scoundrels. Never had he expected.....

One had now come straight up to the door!

At that moment, Little Lotus felt as if his entire flowery existence had no more hope in front of him!

Chapter 1190: “Poppy Flower (2)”

Towards the chaotic situation in the room, Jun Qing and Long Qi was showing that they really did not understand what was really going on at all and they decided they might as well clamp their mouths shut and took it as they were watching a performance, worried that they might just be seen as being too dumb to comprehend anything out of it.

“Mistress is being showing favouritism. That little dolt is your ring spirit and so am I. Why do I not see Mistress comforting me as well?” The red robed man complained, crossing his arms in front of his chest, as he tilted his head slovenly to look at Jun Wu Xie.

Little Lotus heard that and was immediately unhappy. But banking on Jun Wu Xie having taken his side, he raised his teary eyes and looked at Jun Wu Xie to say: “Mistress, can you don’t want him? He is the worst..... Back in the Spirit World, you won’t be able to find any bad eggs worse than him.”

Having suffered endless bullying and was badly ravaged in the past, Little Lotus didn’t like it in the least that he had to share the same owner with the red robed man as that would mean that he would once again fall into the red robed man’s evil claws!

Little Lotus had just said those words when he could felt as if a fire burning was burning behind his back which frightened him so badly he did not even dare to turn his head to look behind.

“I see that this little idiot has learnt to be smarter, and you now know how to use the circumstances to avenge your personal agenda.” The red robed man said with an eyebrow arched up and he turned to say to Jun Wu Xie: “Whether Poppy stays or not, is entirely up to Mistress to decide.”

“Poppy?” Jun Wu Xie’s eyebrow lifted. The term was exactly the same as it was in her previous life.

Poppy flower, a type that had been discovered in very early times, a plant that could be extracted to be used to concoct various drugs and painkillers. In those years when Jun Wu Xie had been with the organization, she had seen poppy flowers before. Although the organization belonged to neither side of the law and treaded the thin line of grey in between, there were two things that they did not ever touch or get involved in and one was them was drugs.

Because of that, they had even once sent agents to bust up a kingpin drug lord's nest, torching large swathes of poppy flowers they had planted there.....

In many people's eyes, the poppy flower was intricately linked to endless crime, a flower of evil, and the drugs concocted from them, had claimed the lives of an immeasurable number of people, and destroyed a countless number of families.

That little flower that was filled with so much evil, was however bright red like blood, beautiful but deadly.

Jun Wu Xie had once cultivated a few poppy flowers in her own lab, but it was not used to make harmful drugs, but was extracted and used in medicine that induced paralysis of the nerves, but..... although the purpose of its use differed, whether it was used to harm people, or to save a person, it would cause the user to develop a high reliance on it, and an addiction hard to eradicate. After conducting some research on it for some time, Jun Wu Xie had not touched it anymore ever since.

Never having expected, that her second ring spirit, would turn out to be a poppy flower!

When she had smelt that familiar fragrance earlier, she had already had some guesses about it.

"That's right my Mistress, you can address me as such. I am willing to become a poppy flower that blooms only for you alone." Poppy said as he knelt on one knee at Jun Wu Xie's feet, his

languid manner disappeared, and was at that moment solemn as he gingerly lifted one hand of Jun Wu Xie's, and sealed his pledge with a light kiss on the back of her hand.

Jun Wu Xie's eyebrow furrowed up and the little black cat was looking at Poppy with a "you're so dead" gaze.

[Daring to kiss its Mistress' hand, if that demon lord ever catches you, it wouldn't matter if you're man or ghost, flower or spirit, it will only end in one word, death!]

Poppy was completely oblivious to the little black cat's inner thoughts and had already gotten up to take a step back. Little Lotus was still avoiding him like the plague as he hid behind Jun Wu Xie, a trembling little mass, his eyes red from crying, looking at Poppy accusingly for all the evil Poppy had once done upon him.

[He didn't want to share the same Mistress with Poppy! WAAAAHH!]

[Who can save him! ?]

[Hurry up and come drag this scoundrel away from here now! WAAH!]

Chapter 1191: “Poppy Flower (3)”

No one would understand Little Lotus’ sorrow. Poppy who had become Jun Wu Xie’s ring spirit had no way of returning back to the Spirit World, unless Jun Wu Xie died.....

That was one point that Little Lotus did not even dare think about.

Although Jun Wu Xie really wanted to determine her ring spirit Poppy’s abilities in the first instant possible, but when the fragrance of poppies had permeated throughout the room like it had earlier, the fragrance of such a flower had contained an element that affected a person’s nervous system. It was still fine for her, but Jun Qing and Long Qi would require a bit of treatment or Poppy’s fragrance would bring them a whole lot of trouble. Without mentioning anything else, if they developed a reliance towards poppies, it would be already be troublesome enough.

Jun Wu Xie had already noticed it, that Poppy’s flower fragrance was more intense than any poppy flower she had come across in her past life. If it was said that the poppy flowers in her past life needed to be specially treated before being extracted and refined to finally be produced as a drug with an effect that would affect a person’s nervous system, then the ring spirit Poppy before her eyes now, with just the fragrance that he was able to emit from his body, had an effect that was already comparable to those carefully refined drugs!

If the remnants of Poppy’s fragrance was left untended to remain within Jun Qing’s and Long Qi’s bodies, it was thought that they would suffer strong repercussions.

“All of you wait here.” Jun Wu Xie said while casting a glance at Poppy, and then she turned to say to Jun Qing and Long Qi: “Uncle and Long Qi come with me.”

Jun Qing and Long Qi were still in a daze, their minds completely

blank. Whatever Jun Wu Xie said, they acted accordingly.

But for Little Lotus, see that Jun Wu Xie was going to leave, immediately whined, wanting to follow. Even if you beat him to death, he did not dare to remain in the same room with Poppy, or the one that would end up suffering would surely be him!

Jun Qing followed Jun Wu Xie out of the room and they walked towards the herbs and medicine storehouse within her yard. It could be because the faint smell of herbs had diluted the effects of the remnants from Poppy's fragrance deep seated within his body and Jun Qing regained back his senses. His gaze then involuntarily fell upon that tiny figure who was shorter than his legs and it remained fixed upon Little Lotus.

Little Lotus had trotted quickly along on his two short tiny legs to follow behind Jun Wu Xie the entire way, deeply afraid that he would lose them. Looking at that shy and bashful demeanor on the boy, Jun Qing had subconsciously allowed a weird thought to sprout in his head.

If Jun Wu Xie were to have a child in the future, would the child be just as adorable and clingy like this one here?

In the instant that that thought manifested, it immediately made Jun Qing feel like he didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. Jun Wu Xie was merely fifteen and although she was nearing the age to even think about marriage, but looking at her, she would not be forming a family anytime soon, and a child was just too..... too far off to even think about!

After having arrived as they followed Jun Wu Xie to the pharmacy, Jun Qing and Long Qi sat on one side, watching Jun Wu Xie busying around while Little Lotus with nothing to do, just stood coyly in a corner, not daring to disturb Jun Wu Xie, and feeling too afraid to get too close to Jun Qing and Long Qi.

"My Lord." Long Qi said, his eyes on the little one, seemingly having thought of something in his mind.

“Hmm?” Jun Qing asked.

“Did you smell, the fragrance emanating out from the child?” After he left the room, along the way over here, Long Qi had detected the fragrant scent of lotus coming from Little Lotus. He did not find that scent unfamiliar, and he believed that Jun Qing would feel the same.

Having it being pointed out by Long Qi, Jun Qing’s eyes suddenly widened.

The scent coming from Little Lotus’ body, wasn’t that the same scent as the lotus seed that Jun Wu Xie had given to him at that time?

At that time, Jun Qing had only seen it as an ordinary lotus seed, but now, he did not dare to look at it in so simple a manner any longer!

.....

Lord Jue: You seek death.

Author Bei: Would you like to for the first time do something “shy shy” with Wu Xie?

Lord Jue:

Author Bei: If you do, then help me pull in some monthly votes! Take off that top! And reveal that V line! Get everyone to put in those votes! Once those votes are up there, I will let you and Wu Xie do “shy” things!

Lord Jue: That is enough! [With a cold arrogant front, while silently disrobing.]

Chapter 1192: “Post-War (1)”

Jun Wu Xie had mentioned to them about plant based ring spirits before which gave the two men some ideas to make a rough guess about it, but they they were sensitive enough to not probe her further on it. No matter what it was that Jun Wu Xie possessed, as long as it didn't harm her, they wouldn't mind it.

After Jun Wu Xie concocted the brews, she made the two of them drink it, and with a period of further nursing, all the remnants of poppies would be completely cleared.

In the end, Jun Wu Xie was in no hurry to leave, but went on to make some elixirs and emptied out her entire stock from her Cosmos Sack to hand them all to Jun Qing, for him to distribute them to the more severely injured soldiers.

Mu Chen and Mu Qian Fan came over to see Jun Xie as well. They did not know Jun Wu Xie's real identity but they were highly familiar with Jun Xie and they came and met with the disguised Jun Wu Xie.

The two men were highly moved by the people of the Qi Kingdom through this war and Mu Chen had even stated that he was willing to retract the conditions with his promise to Jun Xie and remain in the Qi Kingdom for good and reside in the Lin Palace. The scene on the day the city had fallen and the soldiers had died in selfless sacrifice had left a deep and indelible mark on his heart. The three words Rui Lin Army had shocked him in a way he had never experienced before and he was willing to give his life for an army like this.

Even Mu Qian Fan had initiated to volunteer himself to join the Rui Lin Army. He did not want to remain being a guest in the Lin Palace. He wanted to be a member of the Rui Lin Army and did not want to be protected by the Rui Lin Army soldiers in battle anymore!

In regards to the requests by the two people, Jun Wu Xie was grateful to them, but she did not agree immediately but instead told them to discuss the matters with Jun Xian.

The Rui Lin Army had lost more than half their numbers and to that army, it was a setback that was of an unprecedented level, but Jun Wu Xie believed, the Rui Lin Army's spirit had infected many people. As long as the three words Rui Lin Army had not been wiped out from the world, then it would never disappear, with the soldiers who died, would have their will inherited by the people whose lives they had saved.

Not mentioning anything else, but at present, with the war just ended and the people still recuperating, many youths from all parts of the Qi Kingdom had rushed to the Imperial City, with just one wish!

To become a member of the Rui Lin Army!

In the war, they had been shielded and protected by the Rui Lin Army. The soldiers who had died on the battlefield had ignited the hot blood in the hearts of the youths and they wished to be able to defend their country in the days to come, just like their benefactors had, to defend their lands!

More and more youths were pouring into the city but no one would have the time to bring them into the army at this point of time. Those youths had then on their own initiative gone to various areas, to reconstruct the Rui Lin Army's military camps that had been trampled and wrecked by the flames of war, bringing restoration to the torn and broken Imperial City.

[The Qi Kingdom, will never perish!]

Jun Wu Xie and Mu Chen joined hands to compound and produce elixirs, feeding the need for medicine just after the war. Immediately after the flames of war subside, there was a good possibility that a plague might spread, and in order to try to control the situation, the two of them had seemingly locked

themselves up within the pharmacy, sending out cartons and cartons of elixirs, to be distributed to various places.

The soldiers of the Fire Country had not given much of a reaction towards their Emperor staying put within the Imperial City for an extended period of time, as after having interacted with the people from the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City, they had grown to like this tenacious and indomitable little country, to the extent that many of the Fire Country's soldiers, had already grouped together and mingled amicably with the Rui Lin Army's soldiers, where they even asked for some instructions on the Rui Lin Army's battle tactics and the training they did.

Because of Jun Wu Xie's one word of alliance, it had drawn the two countries closely together, and with this one alliance, it had laid the first stone on a path of destiny where a tumultuous chance that would soon be seen, that would encompass the entire face of the Lower Realm in the near future!

Chapter 1193: “Post-War (2)”

After the war, reconstructions called for large amounts of finances and manpower to support the effort but the Qi Kingdom's treasury had already been depleted during the war. Expecting the country to take out an amount of money in a short period of time that was sufficient to restore their entire lands filled with desolation in the aftermath of war would pose quite a bit of difficulty.

Jun Wu Xie took out all the banknotes she had on her while Lei Chen and Lei Xi made donations in their personal capacities.

Very soon, the Thousand Beast City and the Zephyr Academy had also separately delivered large amounts of money and resources as well. The huge assistance from the two major powers had really shocked quite a large number of the population.

The people across the lands had not been aware that the Thousand Beast City and the Zephyr Academy had any ties with the Qi Kingdom.

Unknown to them all, all of that had been the effects that came from the relations that Jun Wu Xie had established in the past year. The help she had unconsciously rendered, the people she had saved without realizing, had been highly grateful, and they had now turned their gratitude into material goods, and sent them all to the Qi Kingdom.

The Qi Kingdom was finally freed from their predicament, and the entire country celebrated.

However, Jun Wu Xie's heart was still weighed down by another issue, and she gathered Qiao Chu and the others together.

“You said that there is a map in the Condor Country as well?” Qiao Chu had just received the news from Jun Wu Xie and he had come rushing in a hurry with the others from outside to the Lin

Palace. They had been helping out in various parts of the Imperial City in the past few days and they had not been idle for even a single moment.

Jun Wu Xie nodded her head, and she told them everything that Lin Xiao had said before he died.

Hua Yao's face was solemn as he said: "If we are able to get our hands on the map in the Condor Country, we will possess six pieces of the human skin map, and we will only be two pieces away from gathering the full and complete set of eight maps."

After they succeed in getting the map from the Condor Country, towards their unveiling the secrets of the Dark Emperor's tomb, they would only be two maps away.

They had thought that the map gathering process would be very long and endless and they would never have thought that they would after merely a year's time, have gathered more than half of them. They could almost begin to see, the Dark Emperor's tomb that was hidden at the bottom of the Heaven's End Cliff, revealing its true face gradually under that blinding white mist.

At that moment, the several youths found their hearts filling up with excitement. Opening the Dark Emperor's tomb, and acquiring the magical treasures of the Middle Realm, where they would then gain power to go against the Twelve Palaces, to finally be able to avenge the long held grudge for murdering all their parents!

"The Condor Country had mobilized a good half of their army in the recent campaign and they would have insufficient soldiers in the country now. Should we just bring our men and charge right into them?" Qiao Chu had become mesmerized with grand scale wars after this, the battlefield that belonged only to the brave, where the incited passion in the heart could be released and given vent in hot blood.

Fan Zhuo however, shook his head. "We can't. If we attack with the army, not only would time be delayed, we might highly

possibly push them too hard into a corner, and with the known collusion with the Twelve Palaces, we cannot be sure whether they would have established a constant form of contact with the All Dragons Palace. If we attacked them with troops, the moment we step past their borders, they would then be immediately alerted to react. If they did not have sufficient military strength to rely on, they would definitely seek help from the All Dragons Palace, which would only bring more trouble to us.”

Although the might of an army was great, but the target would inadvertently grow as well, unlike if they were to move on their own, they would be able to avoid some of the eyes and ears of the Condor Country, to gain direct entry into the Condor Country’s Imperial City, straight to their target.

Their gathering of the maps in secret must not be leaked as once the Twelve Palaces were alerted to it, the companions would immediately be thrown into a highly passive state to defend themselves.

“Then it will just be the few of us, which wouldn’t be the first time we are doing it.” Qiao Chu said with a guffaw, both his hands crossed behind his head.

Chapter 1194: “Post-War (3)”

“Before going to the Condor Country, I need to make a trip back to the Fire Country.” Jun Wu Xie told them.

“Go back? Why?” Hua Yao asked in puzzlement as he looked at Jun Wu Xie. On the way here, they had all prepared themselves to continue with the search for the next map after the war had ended, and have Lei Chen lead the army back. Why had Jun Wu Xie suddenly changed her mind?

“I need to go back and look for a person.” Jun Wu Xie said as her eyes narrowed.

“Who?”

“Wen Yu.”

Jun Wu Xie’s reply made several of the youth’s faces twist up in bewilderment. They had not interacted much with Wen Yu and even when Jun Wu Xie ascended to the throne, Wen Yu had only made one single appearance then.

“What are you looking for him for?” Qiao Chu asked, scratching his head in bafflement. Although it must be said that the Grand Adviser Wen Yu was indeed highly good looking, but..... he always made made feel rather distanced.

“When the Qi Kingdom was founded, there was a piece of jade called the Soul Jade.” Jun Wu Xie started to explain as she looked at her companions.

“This, I had heard of before. Isn’t it said that the jade piece has now been separated into two?” Fei Yan quipped.

Jun Wu Xie nodded. “In the beginning, the reason I had gone to the Qing Yun Clan had been because of this Soul Jade. At that time, the envoy from the Qing Yun Clan wanted to take the Soul Jade away from the Qi Kingdom, but one half of the piece had been buried together with my father. At first, in order to ensure the Qi

Kingdom's safety, my grandfather had dug up the grave to unseal the coffin, thinking to retrieve the half piece of jade. But when the coffin my father lay in was opened up, they discovered to their surprise that my father's body, who had been deceased for many years, was actually still preserved in perfect condition. That piece of Soul Jade..... Or to put it more accurately, is a magical treasure from the Spirit World, called the Soul Calming Jade."

"Soul Calming Jade! !" The eyes of Qiao Chu and the other companions flared wide. They had never in their minds ever thought that the highly symbolic jade piece of the Qi Kingdom could actually be linked to the Middle Realm.

"The Spirit World is somewhere within the Middle Realm but its exact location is not known to us. In actuality, what we know of the place is only about the Twelve Palaces and the Nine Temples while knowledge of the Dark Regions is limited only to what we heard from our elders before. People in the Middle Realm had told us in the past that the Middle Realm consists of One region, Four sides, Nine Temples and Twelve Palaces. But a pity the One Region and Four Sides was too remote for any of us then. If it is now said that the Soul Jade is truly the Soul Calming Jade from the Spirit World..... Then all that we have concluded with our reasoning would then be fully negated." Hua Yao said, his brows furrowing up tightly.

Back then, the Dark Emperor unified the Middle Realm and he seized all magical artifacts from the Four Sides, Nine Temples and Twelve Palaces and gathered them all within the Dark Regions, and the Soul Calming Jade as a prized magical treasure of the Spirit World would naturally be among them. But when the Dark Emperor fell, all his prized treasures were sent into the Dark Emperor's tomb, including every single magical artifact he had seized from the entire Middle Realm.

Based on reason, the Spirit World's Soul Calming Jade should have been buried together inside the tomb, hence..... how had it

come to end up in the hands of the Qi Kingdom?

Could it be, besides their respective parents, someone else had gone into the Dark Emperor's tomb in those years? And had even managed to bring out a portion of the magical artifacts buried in there? !

That line of reasoning made all the youths in that room suddenly fall silent.

If they were to reason it out based on the time it had happened, the Soul Calming Jade had fallen into Jun Xian's hands before the Qi Kingdom was founded, and at that time, their parents had yet to discover the location of the Dark Emperor's tomb which meant that artifacts couldn't possibly have been brought out by their parents.

“Could it be that someone had already discovered the Dark Emperor's tomb very much earlier? Wu Xie, you said you are going to look for Wen Yu, don't tell me.....”

A startling thought suddenly formed up within Fan Zhuo's head.

Chapter 1195: “Post-War (4)”

Jun Wu Xie added: “I asked my Grandfather how the Soul Calming Jade had come into his possession and had already gotten Lei Chen to show him a portrait of Wen Yu where it has been ascertained to be the correct person.”

“You are saying..... the Grand Adviser Wen Yu, had gone to the Dark Emperor’s tomb?” Qiao Chu asked with wide disbelieving eyes.

If Wen Yu had really gone there before, then wouldn’t that mean that he knew the exact location of the Dark Emperor’s tomb? Even if they did not possess the map, they would still be able to locate the place the Dark Emperor’s tomb was!

Although the maps gathered in their possession was almost about to be completed, but if they found a person alive who had been to the Dark Emperor’s tomb, that would be much better than anything they had achieved so far!

“I cannot be sure, and am just making a guess. Hence, I need to make a trip back to the Fire Country, and have a chat with Wen Yu.” Jun Wu Xie said calmly. At present, the clues she had on hand were inadequate for her to arrive at a definitive conclusion, but nevertheless, the possibility was very high.

If Wen Yu had truly been to the Dark Emperor’s tomb, the by hook or by crook, she would persuade Wen Yu to bring them to the location.

“If that is the case, you should then go back. As for the Condor Country, the few of us here will first go scout out the situation, and after you have asked Wen Yu, we can then plan the next step for us to take.” Hua Yao said in a prudent tone as he looked at Jun Wu Xie.

Wen Yu could possibly turn out to become another opportunity

for them, but they would still not give up on a map they already knew the location of. In order to avoid any unexpected circumstances, they would pursue both the two lines of information they had.

“This can work too. I am guessing the news of the Condor Country’s defeat still had not made it back to their country and we should take the opportunity to infiltrate into the place to catch them unawares. If it was dragged for too long and the Condor Country realises that their allied armies had been defeated in the Qi Kingdom and had even gotten themselves implicated with the Fire Country, they would definitely be frightened into taking action.” Qiao Chu said with a nonchalant shrug, showing his agreement to Hua Yao’s suggestion.

Jun Wu Xie was slightly concerned and her brows came together in a slight frown. All their missions before this had been carried out together and she had some misgivings about splitting themselves up like this.

“It will be alright, leave the things with the Condor Country to us. Don’t worry, we are going there to merely scout out the situation and without absolute confidence, we will not make any moves rashly. We will definitely wait till you come and you need not worry so much.” Fei Yan said reassuringly immediately upon seeing the furrowed brows on Jun Wu Xie’s face, knowing exactly what she would be thinking.

“All of you be careful.” Jun Wu Xie reminded, still feeling a little worried.

“Do not underestimate us.” Qiao Chu said with a laugh as he patted Jun Wu Xie on the shoulder.

After the discussion among the few of them, they decided that they would temporarily split two ways. Jun Wu Xie would return to the Fire Country with the army and find out from Wen Yu about the origins of the Soul Calming Jade, while the other five

consisting of Qiao Chu and the others would go to the Condor Country first to assess the situation.

The companions then dispersed after that. Qiao Chu and the rest immediately made preparations for them to make their way to the Condor Country.

Jun Wu Xie remained temporarily in the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City and after the situation in the Qi Kingdom stabilized a few days later, she set off leading the army back to the Imperial Court!

After the discussion with Qiao Chu and the others, Jun Wu Xie went back to her room.

She had just pushed the door open to enter, when she was met with a scene that immobilized her.

Little Lotus had tears streaking down his face as he was held face down by Poppy upon his leg. Poppy's hand with its long slender fingers was holding on to the end of the strap on Little Lotus' back for the bib that little toddler wore, the tip of Poppy's finger curled up in a hook, looking fully intent to undo the knot, his face contorted up in a wide and evil grin, completely oblivious to the trauma Little Lotus was under, seemingly finding it all highly amusing to him.

Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit had all their four limbs shaking, trembling by the side of Poppy's feet, with Lord Meh Meh's mouth even chewing on the hem of Poppy's pant leg!

Chapter 1196: “Drunk Lotus VS Poppy (1)”

“Noooooooooooo..... Boo hoooooooooooo.....” Little Lotus’ pitiful cry almost tore off the roof.

Poppy’s sinister looking eyes were narrowed, the corners of his mouth curled up in an evil hook, the finger hooked around the strap pulling upwards slowly. But just as the knot was about to come undone, his gaze suddenly turned to see Jun Wu Xie standing at the door.

“.....” Poppy’s head raised up, his face looking slightly surprised.

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes swept over the entire room, and the faint scent of poppy mixed with the fragrance of lotus wafted into her nostrils.

Looking at Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit lying upon the floor weakened without any strength in their limbs, Jun Wu Xie’s eyes then lifted up, to look straight into Poppy’s blood red eyes, and an eyebrow on her faces twitched.

That slightly chill gaze, made Poppy suddenly realize his new Mistress’ displeasure. He immediately raised his hand and with a wave, the faint scent of poppy that was mixed in together with the fragrance of lotus immediately disappeared without a trace. Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit lying upon the floor immediately discovered that the strength that they had lost had once again returned to their bodies and the two adorable beasts shot to their feet in an instant with a swoosh!

Lord Meh Meh rammed his head right into Poppy’s abdomen and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit watched for the right timing before it slipped its two paws around Little Lotus’ arms and tugged sharply downwards.

The two adorable beasts moved in perfect coordination, attempting to rescue Little Lotus from the evil claws of Poppy.

But.....

The strap of Little Lotus' bib was still hooked around Poppy's finger and with that sharp tug from the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit, as Little Lotus' tiny figure came tumbling off Poppy's leg, the knot came fully undone.....

“No.....”

With a splat, Little Lotus fell sitting on the floor, and the red bib he wore on his body came falling down through the air to finally fall onto his short legs.

With a noisy clatter, it could be seen under that red bib, a mess of different knick knacks had piled up to scatter widely all around, lying on the floor in all directions around Little Lotus.

Seeing the little bib fallen upon his fair and stubby leg, the only piece of garment affording Little Lotus that little bit of modesty, which at that moment made him.....

The little toddler upon feeling the chill upon his exposed chest, stared blankly as he sat on the floor, his large eyes brimming up with tears again, as he froze in that spot.

[He.....]

[He.....]

[He can't face anyone anymore! Waaaaaah!]

“WAAAAAH!!!” Little Lotus picked up the bib and climbed to his feet, sobbing as he ran to jump and bury himself under the blanket, to shake and shiver between his sobs.

[They've seen everything!]

[It is just too humiliating! !]

[Failed to rescue the flower, and had caused the flower to be exposed instead.....]

Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit blinked their

eyes, still in a slight daze.

Poppy raised up his hand rather sheepishly, his face highly earnest as he looked at Jun Wu Xie.

“You can’t blame me for that. I did not do it. It was those two little fellas who wanted to protect the little idiot that caused it.”

Although, truthfully..... He had had that intention in his mind, but Jun Wu Xie’s sudden appearance had given him no choice but to stop what he was doing, and it was those two dumb beasts who had wanted to protect the idiotic flower, but had ended up helping him do it instead.

“Meh.....” Lord Meh Meh climbed down slowly from Poppy’s legs looking highly sheepish as it trotted on its hooves tapping upon the floor to skulk into a corner, its head facing the wall and showing only its round fluffy behind to Jun Wu Xie.

It put on a “I don’t know anything, I didn’t do anything” demeanour.

The Sacrificial Blood Rabbit just hugged its big floppy ears and buried its face into them, a literal and classic case of covering one’s ears to steal the bell. (Translator’s Note: Chinese idiom. Thief covers his own ears while stealing a bell thinking no one will hear the bell ring when he doesn’t hear it)

Jun Wu Xie was speechless.....

She walked slowly to the cabinet at the side and took out a large urn of fine wine.

Chapter 1197: “Drunk Lotus VS Poppy (2)”

Poppy watched Jun Wu Xie’s actions carefully, an ominous feeling slowly creeping into his heart. He had wanted to say something but a frosty glance from Jun Wu Xie immediately made him clamp his mouth shut. He could do nothing but stare silently as Jun Wu Xie carried the urn of wine to walk over to the bed, and reached a hand out to drag Little Lotus, who was hiding too ashamed to see anyone, out from under the blanket.

“Boo hoo.....” Little Lotus’ face had turned red from crying, almost turning into a wilted flower.

“Mistress..... Boo..... Hoo..... Everything..... had been..... fully exposed..... Woo.....” Little Lotus wanted to continue to lament on his pitiful plant life but in the end, Jun Wu Xie raised his chin and lifted the urn of wine up.

The wild fragrance of the cool clear wine was poured continuously down Little Lotus’ throat. His short stubby arms flailed wildly and his already reddened face from crying took on a brighter flush under the influence of alcohol!

The eyes on Poppy that were staring at Little Lotus looked rather strange as he watched Little Lotus emptying the entire urn of fine wine. While the little one sat unsteadily upon the bed, Poppy silently stood up from his chair, his long slender legs striding straight towards the door.....

“Where do you think you’re going?” Suddenly, a voice filled with an explosive rage sounded from behind Poppy.

Poppy’s body stiffened and when he turned around, he saw a topless Drunk Lotus, sitting on the bed while staring at him through narrowed eyes, with a leg raised up that was stepping on the bed’s edge.

Jun Wu Xie carried the empty urn and moved to stand on one

side, casually dumping the wine urn aside and crossed her arms over her chest, to calmly observe through the brewing storm, where she saw Poppy's face beginning to turn an ugly shade.

"Haven't seen you for a long while." Poppy said with a smile as he looked at the highly drunken face of Drunk Lotus.

"Although it's been a long while, but we seem to somehow end up meeting each other." Drunk Lotus said as he clasped his hands together, casually cracking his finger joints, that made clear and crisp crackling noises.

"Hur....." Poppy gave a helpless laugh.

Drunk Lotus suddenly leapt up from the bed, his youthful slender body had from his drunkenness, caused his originally fair skin to take on a slightly pink tinge. His slender upper body of a youth, however did not give out the slightest feeling of frailty or weakness, as he rushed straight at Poppy, like a bolt of lightning!

The fiery red figure of Poppy immediately wanted to escape, but was firmly grabbed by Drunk Lotus!

Jun Wu Xie walked quietly along the side, and she scooped up the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit who had been frozen in its spot together with Lord Meh Meh who was still hiding in the corner to go outside. As she stepped over the threshold, she still lifted a foot to pull the door closed behind her.

Suddenly, a series of highly chaotic sounds of fighting came floating out in an incessant stream, a flowery fragrance tinged with the scent of wine wafting out through the narrow slit between the room doors. Jun Wu Xie sat leisurely upon the stone bench in the courtyard to watch the tightly shut doors, while Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit were pressed right against the doors highly curious, peeking through the tiny slit, in an attempt to see what was happening inside the room.

The little black cat lay calmly upon Jun Wu Xie's shoulder, not

showing the slightest interest in the petty quarrels between flowers or beasts, putting up a lofty front.

“Meow.”

[Poppy’s innate character isn’t too stable, you really want him to remain?]

Jun Wu Xie’s eyes lowered. [Poppy seems to be highly dangerous and his character evil. But it is exactly due to his unique characteristics that he will be of great use in many instances. Without mentioning others, just the fragrance of the poppy flower alone, would in the instance of a big scale battle, have an extremely big effect. The ability to numb and weaken the bodies and nerves of people just through his scent. Such a kind of poison, is truly a great ability that is almost impossible to defend against.]

Moreover, she really didn’t know of a ring spirit that could be chased back into the Spirit World by his owner.

Chapter 1198: “Drunk Lotus VS Poppy (3)”

After waiting it out for awhile, the room inside grew quiet. Jun Wu Xie estimated that the time was about right and she stood up to walk over, pushing the door open.

Upon opening the door, the scene that burned into her eyes, made her become speechless another time.

She saw the topless Drunk Lotus straddling over Poppy, one hand gripped upon Poppy's clothes collar. Pinned down upon the ground, Poppy was looking highly disheveled, pieces of his fiery red robe scattered around him, a stark contrast against his pale skin, and long black hair that lay strikingly upon the floor.

That scene, looked just too devilishly ambiguously shady.

“Huh? Drunk Lotus, this is just really..... Ahem.” Having been ravaged by Drunk Lotus before, the little black cat had upon witnessing that scene, showed a knowing look on its face that said “so it's that kind of relationship, I see”.

“No! ! Wait! Hear me explain!” Drunk Lotus suddenly realized the shady way they both must have looked with him locked in that position with Poppy and he immediately wanted to get up to rebut.

In the end, before he could even stand up, a attractive looking hand with long slender fingers suddenly held the top of Drunk Lotus' pants and pulled him back in position!

“What? Not going to continue? I am really looking forward to it.” Poppy said, smiling sinisterly at Drunk Lotus, the corners of his half narrowed eyes looking highly devilish, the lips curled up deliciously.

Drunk Lotus blew out a breath in exasperation as he fell back into a straddle over Poppy and he immediately exploded in rage.

“Great lord! Just stop it already!” As he spoke, a rage filled fist with its explosive power was immediately swung towards Poppy's

attractive looking face!

Poppy received the full brunt of that punch, his face suffering some scratches. His red tongue licked at his broken lip, and the smile on his face split wider.

“The taste of Drunk Lotus is still as brutal as ever! !”

“.....” Drunk Lotus lost his mind! !

[Sick pervert!]

Seeing that Drunk Lotus was about to grab at Poppy to give him another brutal thrashing, Jun Wu Xie finally spoke out.

“Enough.”

With one word from Jun Wu Xie, the two blooms immediately quietened down, Drunk Lotus was still in a rage as he stood up from Poppy, not forgetting to deliver a sharp and incisive kick into Poppy. However, Poppy seemed not to feel any pain as he climbed to his feet smilingly.

Jun Wu Xie realized the hierarchy of things here. Poppy was a scoundrel and bully before Little Lotus, and before Drunk Lotus, he became a masochistic scoundrel.....

“If you want to be my ring spirit, I have no objections. But I need to know how you can function, as I do not keep useless things with me.” Jun Wu Xie said, taking a seat on one side, as she glared coldly at Poppy.

Compared to the timid Little Lotus and the brutal Drunk Lotus, Poppy would be a highly thorny ring spirit to have.

Poppy asked with a smile: “I wonder what kind of functions does Mistress want to know about?”

“Your innate ability.” Jun Wu Xie answered.

Poppy spread his palms wide open and a green fruit roughly the size of a pigeon’s egg appeared within his hand. Completely different from the seeds of the Imperial Snow Lotus, the fruit that

Poppy brought out was green, and there seemed to be a thin layer of frost covering over its surface.

“This is the fruit of the poppy and if Mistress wishes to gain control over anyone, this will grant you your wish. But..... this thing must not be used on people Mistress cares about. Although it can control a person’s consciousness, but the toxicity contained within it is also highly lethal. By the time its effects fades away, that person’s life would likely come to an end as well.” Poppy said with a evil chuckle, as if death to him, was merely an interesting game to him.

“If it is said that the main use of the Imperial Snow Lotus is to save people, then my function would be to harm people.”

Chapter 1199: “Drunk Lotus VS Poppy (4)”

“If it is said that the main use of the Imperial Snow Lotus is to save people, then my function would be to harm people.”

Poppy’s entire being, including his fruit and the fragrance emanating out from him, were all lethal and deadly, to the point that his appearance anywhere heralded the arrival of death.

And he was able to control that fragrance, to specific targets, for his fragrance to take effect. That sort of selective control, made it a more domineering ability than the Imperial Snow Lotus’ fragrance.

If he wished, he could even make his fragrance overpower the Snow Lotus’.

The poppy flower that existed to destroy, could easily become a person’s nightmare.

That killed people with formless poison.

Poppy slowly expounded on his abilities and halfway through the presentation, he suddenly rolled up his sleeve, to expose his arm.

He stretched out his other hand, and with his sharp nails, he gave the skin on his arm a violent scratch.

The next moment, a white milky liquid spilled out from the wound, to drip upon the floor.

A sizzle sounded!

A small part of the hard marble stone at her feet corroded under that white liquid, a plume of faint smoke rising off the floor from the corrosion.

An eyebrow of Jun Wu Xie’s face lifted. Poppy was truly filled with pure deadly poison throughout his entire body. Poppy as a ring spirit was slightly different from the poppy flowers she had encountered in her past life, at least the sap from regular poppies

did not contain such highly corrosive properties!

“Is Mistress satisfied with your spirit’s abilities?” Poppy asked with a tilt of his head, as he looked at Jun Wu Xie.

Jun Wu Xie nodded slightly and stretched her hand out to pick up the fruit in Poppy’s hand.

Looking at the fruit, Jun Wu Xie suddenly seemed to remember something in her mind and she immediately pulled out the ancient texts within her Cosmos Sack. Those books had back in Ghost City, been purchased under Little Lotus’ prodding. It recorded several methods of cultivating plants and after Jun Wu Xie realized that those texts contained records on the way to cultivate the Imperial Snow Lotus, she had come to arrive at a rather accurate conclusion on the true purpose of those books.

It could very well be, that the plant varieties recorded in those texts, were all plant type ring spirits!

Jun Wu Xie remembered when she had been flipping through those books, although she had never seen how poppy flowers looked, there had been a picture that looked very much alike this fruit from Poppy.

As expected, after Jun Wu Xie flipped through those books to search for it, she found the part that spoke about the fruit from the poppy flower.

But it was different from the Imperial Snow Lotus. The planting and cultivation of the fruit of a poppy flower would not yield one a complete poppy bloom, but would cause the fruit of the poppy to become more toxic, to the extent that one would only need to bury it into the ground, and water with poison, it would then cause an entire piece of land to turn into a highly poisonous swamp!

The fruit of poppy was truly a killer.

Jun Wu Xie kept the fruit of poppy away carefully after having gained a basic understanding of Poppy. In regards to more of what

Poppy was capable off, she would find out about them slowly in the days to come.

Afterall, when Little Lotus introduced himself in the past, he did not mention that he had brought together with him, Drunk Lotus.

Who knew whether Poppy also had a hidden hand.

“That will do.” Jun Wu Xie raised her eyes to look at Poppy, and Poppy smiled back. Raising his arm up to press it against his mouth, the wound on his arm quickly closed.

“My wounds can only be healed by my own saliva and only I can touch. If any living thing touched it in the slightest, it would immediately lose its life, but for spirit bodies, they do not have to worry.” Poppy said smilingly.

Chapter 1200: “The Wind Kicks Up (1)”

Drunk Lotus was glaring at Poppy from the side as he bent to pick up the things that had fallen out in a scatter all over the floor from Little Lotus’ bib and put it all back. The little bib had morphed into his shirt which had fallen to the bed when he appeared and he reached out his hand to pick it up before draping it over his shoulders. He now sat down propping a leg over his other knee, an expression of disdain on his face as his eyes remain fixed upon Poppy.

With their bestial instincts, Lord Meh Meh and the Sacrificial Blood Rabbit knew to keep a respective distance away from Poppy. Compared to Little Lotus whom they felt would be highly delicious, Poppy was in their eyes, worthless. A type that they would not even be willing to go bite on. The fact that the two dumb beasts were so highly protective of Little Lotus, could very well be due to the fact they were just defending their source of food.

The Qi Kingdom was currently already undergoing restoration and it was time for Jun Wu Xie and the army to return to the Fire Country. But when Ye Sha came back, he brought back news of Jun Wu Yao’s temporary departure with him. That made Jun Wu Xie feel a little depressed, but she did not have much time to dwell more on it.

In that final period of time left, Jun Wu Xie spent all her time with her grandfather and uncle, three generations of the family gathered together in joy and harmony, none of them once mentioning a word of Jun Wu Xie’s departure although all of them knew in their hearts that this reunion was only temporary.

Mu Chen and Mu Qian Fan decided to remain in the Qi Kingdom and they both got Jun Xian’s agreement for them to join the Rui Lin Army together with Mu Chen’s disciples who all became the Rui Lin Army’s medics and military doctors.

After having experienced the war, their hearts and mind became more matured having undergone the forging through the flames of war, and they no longer saw the Qi Kingdom and the Lin Palace as a temporary abode, but sought to grow roots in this place.

When the Fire Country's great army moved out to return to Imperial Court, the citizens of the Qi Kingdom came out to see them off. It was not convenient for Mo Qian Yuan as the Emperor to appear there and he could only stand outside the Imperial Palace's main hall and look in the direction the army were departing at. He knew that she would be leaving with them and it was not known how long it would be before he would be able to see her again.

A sadness flashed in Mo Qian Yuan's eyes and his chest seemed to feel highly stuffed up, as an unspeakable depression washed over him.

Bai Yun Xian stood at his back, watching the young Emperor's tall and upright back, and a strange emotion fled over her heart.

Jun Wu Xie had stuffed quite a number of people into the Qi Kingdom and besides Mu Chen and Mu Qian Fan, there had still been Bai Yun Xian and Yin Yan.

In this past year, Bai Yun Xian had been sincere and guileless because of the poison Jun Wu Xie had fed into her body, and had even used her medical skills to become one of Chief Imperial Physicians in the Qi Kingdom's Imperial Medical Institution. Although she was no longer the person she was like back when she was in the Qing Yun Clan, she was now experiencing another kind of life.

She had initially thought, based on all the insidious deeds she had committed, even if Jun Wu Xie wanted to make use of her medical knowledge, Mo Qian Yuan would surely not treat her kindly.

But she had discovered that her movements had not been restricted in anyway and even the citizens and other Imperial

Physicians who had not known the truth of the matter treated her cordially and were very friendly to her. Having lost the position of being a direct disciple of the Qing Yun Clan's Sovereign, she had lost the halo she wore on her head in the past, but she found that she had gained a sort of peace in her heart instead.

In the Qi Kingdom's Imperial City, there were no elaborate plots and schemes for positions, and no suppressions or comparisons against each other. The place was so peaceful and tranquil that it made her feel it was completely different from her life of the past ten over years before this.

"Your Majesty, the wind is beginning to kick up." Bai Yun Xian said as she looked at Mo Qian Yuan's lonely back, lowering her eyes as she gave him a reminder.

Mo Qian Yuan raised his head distractedly and looked into the afternoon sky. It was so brilliantly bright, almost blinding, but for some unknown reason, he did not feel the slightest trace of warmth.

"That's right, the wind is kicking up."

He and she, were growing further apart. Like the biting chill from the wind that blew in the deep winter, no matter how brilliant the sun shone, it would not be able to drive off that chill.

Table of Contents

[Genius Doctor: Black Belly Miss](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1001: "Who Swallows Who \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1002: "Who Swallows Who \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1003: "The Devious Wyvern's Spirit Stone \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1004: "The Devious Wyvern's Spirit Stone \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1005: "The Devious Wyvern's Spirit Stone \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1006: "The Soaring Serpent \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1007: "The Soaring Serpent \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1008: "The Soaring Serpent \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1009: "Missing Someone is a Form of Sickness \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1010: "Missing Someone is a Form of Sickness \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1011: "Missing Someone is a Form of Sickness \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1012: "Treacherous Deceit \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1013: "Heavenly Cloud Chambers \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1014: "Heavenly Cloud Chambers \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1015: "Heavenly Cloud Chambers \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1016: "Heavenly Cloud Chambers \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1017: "Heavenly Cloud Chambers \(5\)"](#)

[Chapter 1018: "Victory without a Fight"](#)

[Chapter 1019: "A Young Girl's Heart"](#)

[Chapter 1020: "A Young Girl's Heart \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1021: "A Young Girl's Heart \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1022: "Dangerous Feast \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1023: "Dangerous Feast \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1024: "Dangerous Feast \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1025: "Dangerous Feast \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1026: "Birthday Banquet \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1027: "Birthday Banquet \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1028: "Birthday Banquet \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1029: "Birthday Banquet \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1030: "Birthday Banquet \(5\)"](#)

[Chapter 1031: "Birthday Banquet \(6\)"](#)

[Chapter 1032: "Birthday Banquet \(7\)"](#)

[Chapter 1033: "Birthday Banquet \(8\)"](#)

[Chapter 1034: "Birthday Banquet \(9\)"](#)
[Chapter 1035: "Birthday Banquet \(10\)"](#)
[Chapter 1036: "Cooperation \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1037: "Suffer Your Own Consequences \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1038: "Suffer Your Own Consequences \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1039: "Suffer Your Own Consequences \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1040: "Suffer Your Own Consequences \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1041: "Suffer Your Own Consequences \(5\)"](#)
[Chapter 1042: "I Don't Need To \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1043: "I Don't Need To \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1044: "I Don't Need To \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1045: "Invite \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1046: "Invite \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1047: "Invite \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1048: "Cradle Snatcher \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1049: "Cradle Snatcher \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1050: "Cradle Snatcher \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1051: "You're Not Cold? I Am \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1052: "You're Not Cold? I Am \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1053: "You're Not Cold? I Am \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1054: "You're Not Cold? I Am \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1055: "Apologies, Am Not In a Good Mood \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1056: "Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1057: "Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1058: "Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1059: "Sorry, Am Not In a Good Mood \(5\)"](#)
[Chapter 1060: "Jun Wu Xie's Persistence \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1061: "Jun Wu Xie's Persistence \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1062: "Jun Wu Xie's Persistence \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1063: "Exploit Its Worth \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1064: "Exploit Its Worth \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1065: "Exploit Its Worth \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1066: "You're Kidding \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1067: "You're Kidding \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1068: "Venomous Woman \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1069: "Venomous Woman \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1070: "Venomous Woman \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1071: "Venomous Woman \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1072: "Venomous Woman \(5\)"](#)

[Chapter 1073: "Lure the Tiger Away from the Mountain \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1074: "Lure the Tiger Away from the Mountain \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1075: "Lure the Tiger Away from the Mountain \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1076: "Spirit Taming Bone Flute \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1077: "Spirit Taming Bone Flute \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1078: "Spirit Taming Bone Flute \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1079: "Wails of Despair \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1080: "Wails of Despair \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1081: "Wails of Despair \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1082: "Wails of Despair \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1083: "Severing All Ties \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1084: "Severing All Ties \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1085: "Severing All Ties \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1086: "Severing All Ties \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1087: "Belief of a Spirit Beast \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1088: "Belief of a Spirit Beast \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1089: "Hell Hath No Fury Like a Woman Spurned \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1090: "Hell Hath No Fury Like a Woman Scorned \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1091: "The Despicable Got Their Way \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1092: "The Despicable Got Their Way \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1093: "The Despicable Got Their Way \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1094: "The Despicable Got Their Way \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1095: "The Despicable Got Their Way \(5\)"](#)
[Chapter 1096: "The Show is About to Start \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1097: "The Show is About to Start \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1098: "The Show is About to Start \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1099: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1100: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1101: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1102: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1103: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(5\)"](#)
[Chapter 1104: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(6\)"](#)
[Chapter 1105: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(7\)"](#)
[Chapter 1106: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(8\)"](#)
[Chapter 1107: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(9\)"](#)
[Chapter 1108: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(10\)"](#)
[Chapter 1109: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(11\)"](#)
[Chapter 1110: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(12\)"](#)
[Chapter 1111: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(12\)"](#)

[Chapter 1112: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(14\)"](#)

[Chapter 1113: "Face Slap – Eleventh Form \(15\)"](#)

[Chapter 1114: "I Came To Bring You Home \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1115: "I Came To Bring You Home \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1116: "I Came To Bring You Home \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1117: "I Came To Bring You Home \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1118: "I Came To Bring You Home \(5\)"](#)

[Chapter 1119: "I Came To Bring You Home \(6\)"](#)

[Chapter 1120: "Crumble and Fall \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1121: "Crumble and Fall \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1122: "Crumble and Fall \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1123: "Spirit Absorbing Pearl"](#)

[Chapter 1124: "Who Dares Say One More Word \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1125: "Who Dares Say One Word More \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1126: "Who Dares Say One Word More \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1127: "Jealous \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1128: "Jealous \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1129: "Jealous \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1130: "Jealous \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1131: "Getting a Wife \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1132: "Getting a Wife \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1133: "Getting a Wife \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1134: "Getting a Wife \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1135: "Getting a Wife \(5\)"](#)

[Chapter 1136: "Flames of War Rise \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1137: "Flames of War Rise \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1138: "Flames of War Rise \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1139: "Flames of War Rise \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1140: "Flames of War Rise \(5\)"](#)

[Chapter 1141: "Flames of War Rise \(6\)"](#)

[Chapter 1142: "Flames of War Rise \(7\)"](#)

[Chapter 1143: "Flames of War Rise \(8\)"](#)

[Chapter 1144: "A Soldier's Spirit Lives On \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1145: "A Soldier's Spirit Lives On \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1146: "A Soldier's Spirit Lives On \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1147: "A Soldier's Spirit Lives On \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1148: "A Soldier's Spirit Lives On \(5\)"](#)

[Chapter 1149: "Blood for Blood \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1150: "Blood for Blood \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1151: "Blood for Blood \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1152: "Mob Slap – First Form \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1153: "Mob Slap – First Form \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1154: "Mob Slap – First Form \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1155: "Mob Slap – First Form \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1156: "Imperial City In Crisis \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1157: "Imperial City In Crisis \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1158: "Imperial City In Crisis \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1159: "Imperial City In Crisis \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1160: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1161: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1162: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1163: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1164: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(5\)"](#)
[Chapter 1165: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(6\)"](#)
[Chapter 1166: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(7\)"](#)
[Chapter 1167: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(8\)"](#)
[Chapter 1168: "Mob Slap – Second Form \(9\)"](#)
[Chapter 1169: "Raging Purple Spirit \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1170: "Raging Purple Spirit \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1171: "Raging Purple Spirit \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1172: "Alliance \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1173: "Alliance \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1174: "Alliance \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1175: "Alliance \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1176: "Complicit in Crime \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1177: "Complicit in Crime \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1178: "Complicit in Crime \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1179: "Complicit in Crime \(4\)"](#)
[Chapter 1180: "Complicit in Crime \(5\)"](#)
[Chapter 1181: "Complicit in Crime \(6\)"](#)
[Chapter 1182: "Complicit in Crime \(7\)"](#)
[Chapter 1183: "Seeing the Soul Calming Jade Again \(1\)"](#)
[Chapter 1184: "Seeing the Soul Calming Jade Again \(2\)"](#)
[Chapter 1185: "Seeing the Soul Calming Jade Again \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1186](#)
[Chapter 1187](#)
[Chapter 1188: "Greetings, My Mistress \(3\)"](#)
[Chapter 1189: "Poppy Flower \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1190: "Poppy Flower \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1191: "Poppy Flower \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1192: "Post-War \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1193: "Post-War \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1194: "Post-War \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1195: "Post-War \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1196: "Drunk Lotus VS Poppy \(1\)"](#)

[Chapter 1197: "Drunk Lotus VS Poppy \(2\)"](#)

[Chapter 1198: "Drunk Lotus VS Poppy \(3\)"](#)

[Chapter 1199: "Drunk Lotus VS Poppy \(4\)"](#)

[Chapter 1200: "The Wind Kicks Up \(1\)"](#)